



1609

1609
4-6

1569

3.816

569



GRAMÁTICA INGLESA.



R. 27.297

GRAMÁTICA INGLESA.

MÉTODO TEÓRICO-PRÁCTICO,

CON UN

CATECISMO GRAMATICAL EN INGLÉS,

PARA APRENDER Á HABLAR ESTE IDIOMA.

POR

D. F. G. AYUSO.



MADRID,

ADMINISTRACION : CORREDERA BAJA, 6, 2.º

ACADEMIA DE LENGUAS.

Es propiedad del autor.



PRÓLOGO.



En esta *Gramática* seguimos el mismo sistema que en la francesa, que consiste en la combinacion metódica y ordenada de la teoría con la práctica; la primera es indispensable, dado que las personas que se consagran al estudio de idiomas extranjeros son capaces de discurrir y de ampliar notablemente los datos contenidos en los principios gramaticales; la segunda lo es igualmente, porque las lenguas son entidades que se concretan en el ejercicio práctico, sin el cual no tienen razon de ser. El niño *inconsciente* aprende la lengua nativa mediante un ejercicio exclusivamente, práctico de *muchos años*; aplicar semejante sistema con las personas que raciocinan y discurren es un absurdo palpable.

Pero la variedad de temas, ejemplos y ejercicios que hemos puesto en esta Gramática es tal, que el conocimiento de las reglas no puede ofrecer dificultad alguna, si se pone cuidado en el estudio de aquéllos.

Sin embargo, no hemos compuesto una Gramática para holgazanes; ofrecemos nuestra obra á la juventud laboriosa, que con el estudio aspira á poseer una de las lenguas más útiles y de más numerosas aplicaciones en los diversos esta-

dos de la vida. Las personas serias consideran como una pretension ridicula la de ciertos profesores, generalmente extranjeros, que no hallando medio de ocupar su talento en su patria, van á predicar utopias á otros países, y que prometen enseñar un idioma cualquiera sin estudio, sin libros, y aun sin la asistencia á clase, por *correspondencia*. Es muy singular que puedan aprenderse por tan extraños métodos lenguas tan difíciles como la alemana y la inglesa, y no se haya venido en aplicar análogos sistemas al estudio de la Geografía, la Historia Natural y otras ciencias, que seguramente no ofrecen más dificultades que los complicados idiomas de Göthe, de Homero ó de Virgilio. Con el estudio y la constancia se llega á ser un sabio; por el camino contrario se forman los charlatanes. Verdad es que á esto contribuyen tambien ciertos profesores, que usando una indulgencia extremada en los exámenes, fomentan la desaplicacion de los alumnos, con grave daño para el adelanto de las ciencias.

Las complicadas anomalías que ofrece la ortografía inglesa exigen un estudio especial y constantes ejercicios de escritura; hé aquí por qué hemos variado los ejercicios ó temas, y multiplicado los ejemplos, no sin consagrar algunas lecciones al estudio de la pronunciacion y de la lectura.

Hemos compuesto en inglés el *segundo curso*, dando, para mayor facilidad, la forma de *Catecismo gramaticál* á su primera parte, ya que todo alumno que haya estudiado con regular aplicacion la Etimología, en la que se han incluido las principales reglas sintáxicas, debe estar en disposicion de hablar, si no ha perdido lastimosamente el tiempo. Es inútil advertir que con un estudio serio y metódico puede obtenerse ese resultado en un curso de diez meses, con alumnos capaces.

Los temas para corregir deben escribirse *corregidos*, cuyo ejercicio ayudará no poco á fijar en la memoria los giros y

modismos peculiares de la lengua, y muy particularmente las irregularidades de los verbos. Hemos agrupado éstos según sus afinidades, porque de esta manera se hace más fácil su estudio, sin omitir por eso la lista alfabética de los mismos.

Hemos sustituido la *Clave*, que, por regla general, sólo sirve para fomentar la holgazanería, por un *Vocabulario de las voces que ocurren en los temas*.

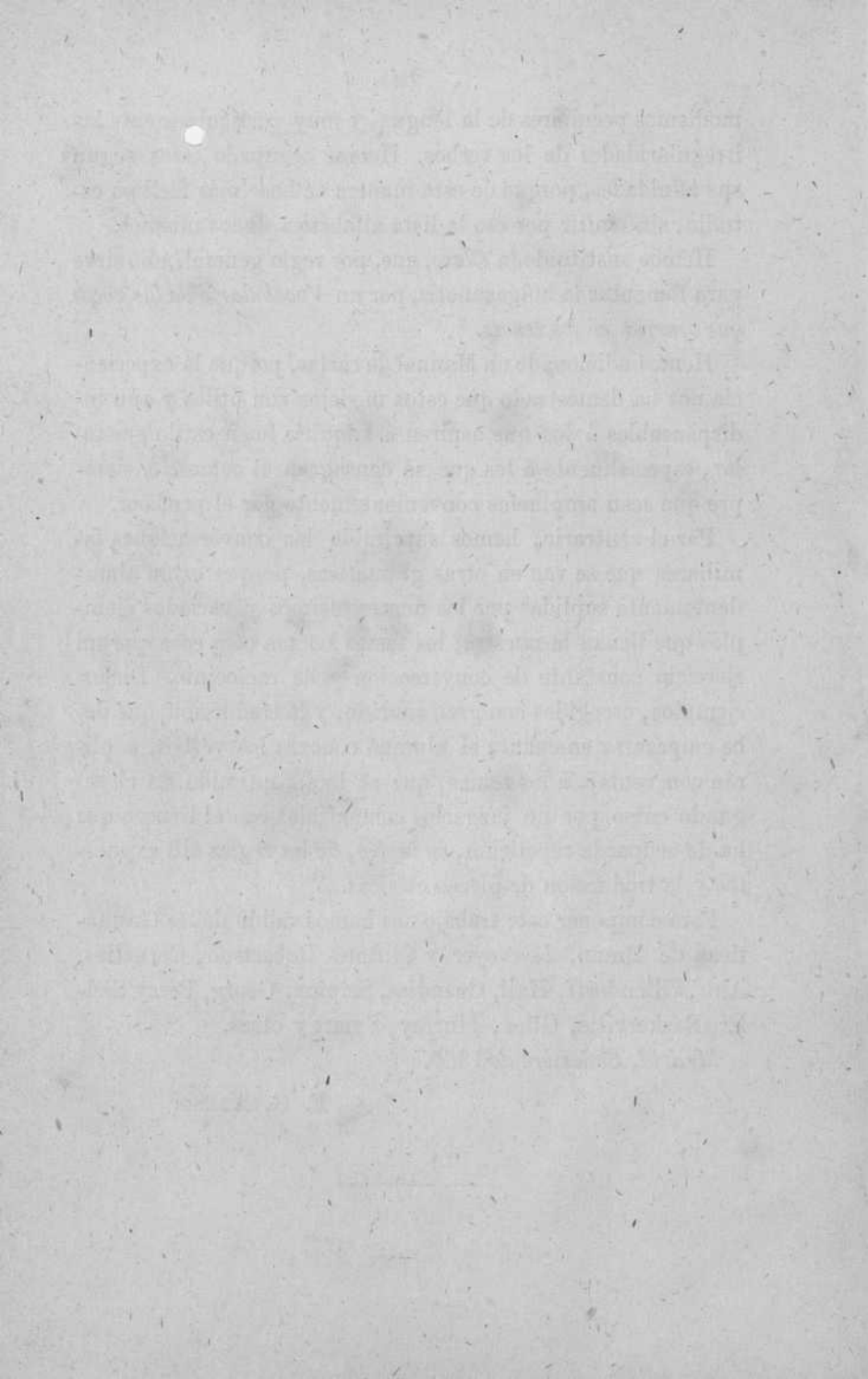
Hemos adicionado un Manual de cartas, porque la experiencia nos ha demostrado que estos modelos son útiles y aún indispensables á los que aspiren á adquirir buen estilo epistolar, especialmente á los que se consagran al comercio, siempre que sean ampliados convenientemente por el profesor.

Por el contrario, hemos suprimido las conversaciones familiares que se ven en otras gramáticas, porque están abundantemente suplidas por los numerosísimos y variados ejemplos que llenan la nuestra; los temas no son otra cosa que un ejercicio constante de conversacion y de raciocinio. Dichos ejemplos, escogidos con gran cuidado, y la traduccion, que debe empezarse en cuanto el alumno conozca los verbos, suplirán con ventaja á los temas, que se han suprimido en el segundo curso por no juzgarlos compatibles con el tiempo que ha de ocupar la repeticion, *en inglés*, de las reglas allí expuestas y la traduccion de piezas clásicas.

Para componer este trabajo nos hemos valido de las Gramáticas de Braun, Mervoyer y Clifton, Robertson, Cornellas, Ahn, Ollendorff, Hall, Cuendias, Scipion, Georg, Perzy Sadler, Baskerville, Giles, Murray, Smart y otras.

Madrid, Setiembre de 1880.

F. G. ARUSO.





GRAMÁTICA INGLESA.

PRIMERA PARTE.

PRONUNCIACION.

LECCION I.

VOCALES **a, e, i.**

1. Las veinte y seis letras del alfabeto inglés se nombran de la manera siguiente :

A.....	<i>è</i>	N.....	<i>en</i>
B.....	<i>bi</i>	O.....	<i>ó</i>
C.....	<i>si</i>	P.....	<i>pi</i>
D.....	<i>di</i>	Q.....	<i>kiu</i>
E.....	<i>i</i>	R.....	<i>ar</i>
F.....	<i>ef</i>	S.....	<i>es</i>
G.....	<i>dchi</i>	T.....	<i>ti</i>
H.....	<i>ech</i>	U.....	<i>iu</i>
I.....	<i>ai</i>	V.....	<i>vi</i>
J.....	<i>che</i>	W.....	<i>dæbliu</i>
K.....	<i>ke</i>	X.....	<i>eks</i>
L.....	<i>el</i>	Y.....	<i>uai</i>
M.....	<i>em</i>	Z.....	<i>zed</i>

OBSERVACION 1. El alumno debe aprender los diferentes

sonidos de las vocales por el orden en que van expuestos, entendiéndose que el primero es el propio de la lengua inglesa.

2. *A*. Tiene cinco sonidos :

1.º De *e* abierta, principalmente cuando va seguida de consonante con *e* muda, y cuando es final de sílaba en que recae el acento :

<i>hate</i>	odio	<i>hèt</i>		<i>baker</i>	panadero	<i>bèker</i>
<i>trade</i>	comercio	<i>trèd</i>		<i>lady</i>	señora	<i>lèdi</i>

2.º Como *a* española en principio de dición, en muchos monosílabos, y en general cuando forma sílaba con la consonante siguiente :

<i>abandon</i>	abandono	<i>abánden</i>		<i>admit</i>	admitir	<i>admit</i>
<i>glass</i>	vaso	<i>glas</i>		<i>card</i>	carta	<i>kàrd</i>

3.º De *ò* gruesa y abierta cuando precede á *l*, *ll*, *ld*, *lk*, *lt*, *lse*, formando sílaba con ellas, y cuando está precedida de *w* :

<i>all</i>	todo	<i>òl</i>		<i>war</i>	guerra	<i>uòr</i>
<i>salt</i>	sal	<i>sòlt</i>		<i>water</i>	agua	<i>uòtèr</i>
<i>false</i>	falso	<i>fòis</i>		<i>also</i>	tambien	<i>òlso</i>
<i>walk</i>	paseo	<i>uòk</i>		<i>was</i>	era	<i>uòs</i>

4.º Entre *a* y *e* ó de *e* muy abierta, que trascribimos por *æ*, en muchos monosílabos, aun con *e* muda final :

<i>hat</i>	sombrero	<i>hæt</i>		<i>bad</i>	male	<i>bæd</i>
<i>have</i>	tener	<i>hæv</i>		<i>cat</i>	gato	<i>kæt</i>
<i>nap</i>	siesta	<i>næp</i>		<i>am</i>	soy	<i>æm</i>

5.º Un sonido sordo, algo parecido al *eu* frances, en muy pocas palabras :

<i>stomach</i>	estómago	<i>stomæk</i>		<i>woman</i>	mujer	<i>uwmæn</i>
----------------	----------	---------------	--	--------------	-------	--------------

Obs. 2. Todas las vocales inglesas tienen un sonido análogo al *eu* frances, y aunque es diferente en todas ellas, le trascribiremos indistintamente por *æ*.

3. *E*. Tiene tres distintos sonidos :

1.º De *i*, cuando es final de sílaba y cuando va seguida de una consonante con *e* muda :

<i>he</i>	él	<i>hi</i>		<i>we</i>	nosotros	<i>ui</i>
<i>me</i>	me	<i>mi</i>		<i>England</i>	Inglaterra	<i>Ingland</i>
<i>be</i>	ser	<i>bi</i>		<i>complete</i>	completo	<i>complit</i>
<i>scene</i>	escena	<i>sin</i>		<i>she</i>	ella	<i>shi</i>
<i>enemy</i>	enemigo	<i>énimi</i>		<i>exterior</i>	exterior	<i>ekstrier</i>

2.º De *e* española, cuando forma sílaba con la consonante siguiente:

<i>bed</i>	cama	<i>bed</i>		<i>bell</i>	campana	<i>bel</i>
------------	------	------------	--	-------------	---------	------------

3.º Un sonido sordo, algo semejante al *eu* francés, pero más débil, cuando va seguida de *r*:

<i>her</i>	su, de ella	<i>her</i>		<i>butter</i>	manteca	<i>beter</i>
------------	-------------	------------	--	---------------	---------	--------------

Pero *clerk* clérigo y *sergeant* alguacil se pronuncian vulgarmente *clark* y *sardchent*, aunque su verdadera pronunciación es *clærk* y *særdechent*.

Obs. 3. La *e* final de vocablo polisílabo y la de la desinencia *ed* del pretérito y participio pasado es muda, ménos cuando á esta sílaba *ed* precede *d* ó *t*:

<i>time</i>	tiempo	<i>taim</i>		<i>place</i>	lugar	<i>plès</i>
<i>called</i>	llamado	<i>còld</i>		<i>I acted</i>	obré	<i>acted</i>

Obs. 4. En algunos vocablos derivados del griego, la *e* final suena como *i*; y en las sílabas finales *ble*, *ple*, *tle*, es decir, *le* precedida de consonante, tiene un sonido muy débil, que se deja oír ántes de la *l*:

<i>people</i>	gente	<i>pip^l</i>		<i>epitome</i>	compendio	<i>épitómi</i>
<i>amiable</i>	amable	<i>émiab^l</i>		<i>apostrophe</i>	apóstrofe	<i>apóstrófi</i>
<i>little</i>	pequeño	<i>lit^l</i>		<i>catastrophe</i>	catástrofe	<i>catastrófi</i>

4. I. Tiene tres sonidos: de *ai*, *i*, *æ*.

De *ai*: 1.º En los monosílabos acabados en *e* muda ó en *ld*, *nd*, *gh*, *ght*, *gn* y sus derivados; ménos en los vocablos que van indicados en la segunda columna de los ejemplos:

<i>time</i>	tiempo	<i>taim</i>		<i>gild</i>	dorar	<i>guild</i>
<i>lie</i>	mentir	<i>lai</i>		<i>guild</i>	gremio	<i>guild</i>
<i>child</i>	niño	<i>chaild</i>		<i>wind</i>	viento	<i>wind</i>
<i>high</i>	alto	<i>hai</i>		<i>sennight</i>	8 dias	<i>semit</i>
<i>sign</i>	señal	<i>sain</i>		<i>live</i>	vivir	<i>liv</i>
<i>life</i>	vida	<i>laif</i>		<i>give</i>	dar	<i>guix</i>

2.º Tiene también el sonido de *ai*: en palabras polisílabas, cuando es final de sílaba sobre la que recae el acento; en la sílaba final *ise*, y en varios vocablos sin terminación fija:

<i>combine</i>	combinar	<i>combáin</i>		<i>criticise</i>	criticar	<i>crítisais</i>
<i>requite</i>	pagar	<i>rikudáit</i>		<i>precise</i>	preciso	<i>prísáis</i>
<i>trial</i>	ensayo	<i>tráial</i>		<i>Christ</i>	Cristo	<i>Craíst</i>
<i>libel</i>	libelo	<i>láib'l</i>		<i>title</i>	título	<i>táit'l</i>
<i>likewise</i>	igualmente	<i>láikuais</i>		<i>empire</i>	imperio	<i>émpair</i>

De *i*: 1.º En la mayor parte de los monosílabos acabados en *ing*, *im*, *in*, *id*, *it* y otras sílabas que no sean de las nombradas en el párrafo anterior, y en un gran número de polisílabos que llevan acentuada la penúltima:

<i>sing</i>	cantar	<i>sing</i>		<i>motive</i>	motivo	<i>motiv</i>
<i>king</i>	rey	<i>king</i>		<i>promise</i>	promesa	<i>prómis</i>
<i>kiss</i>	beso	<i>kis</i>		<i>examine</i>	examinar	<i>egzámin</i>
<i>him</i>	le	<i>him</i>		<i>imagine</i>	imaginar	<i>inádchin</i>

2.º En las sílabas *li*, *mi*, *phi*, *pi*, *pli*, *ri*, *si*, *ti*, *tri*, *vi* suena casi siempre *i* en vocablos de origen latino ó griego, y *ai* en los de origen sajón ó germano, por ser la *i* final de sílaba, como se dijo en el párrafo anterior:

<i>abominable</i>	idem	<i>abóminabl</i>
<i>liberty</i>	libertad	<i>liberti</i>
<i>continual</i>	continuo	<i>continual</i>
<i>sinister</i>	sinistro	<i>sinístær</i>
<i>timidity</i>	timidez	<i>timíditi</i>
<i>philology</i>	filología	<i>filólóchi</i>
<i>vivacity</i>	vivacidad	<i>vivásiti</i>
<i>pilgrimage</i>	peregrinación	<i>pilgrimédch</i>
<i>mineral</i>	mineral	<i>mínæral</i>
<i>tribute</i>	tributo	<i>tribiut</i>

OBS. 5. Pero se dice también *vavásiti*, *library*, pronúnciese *laibrari*, y otros.

3.º Toma un sonido algo semejante al *eu* francés cuando va seguida de *r*, á veces aunque vaya ésta seguida de *e* muda, como sucede en el vocablo *shire* condado:

<i>bird</i>	pájaro	<i>bærd</i>		<i>sir</i>	señor	<i>sær</i>
<i>third</i>	tercero	<i>zærd</i>		<i>fir</i>	abeto	<i>fær</i>
<i>birth</i>	nacimiento	<i>bærz</i>		<i>Yorkshire</i>	C. de York	<i>yorkshær</i>
<i>first</i>	primero	<i>færst</i>		<i>Devonshire</i>	C. de D.	<i>dévonshær</i>

OBS. 6. En el estilo vulgar se pronuncia muy débil la *i* de *devil* diablo, *evil* mal, *medicine* medicina, *venison* venado y *Salisbury*, n. pr.

I.—Ejercicio de lectura.

I am he. He is in. He is a man. It is I. His pen is bad. I met a man. He has a net and a bell, and we had a glass. Let me get a nap. We are all bad people. She has a child, and the baker had a card. His pen has no ink in it. I met a man and a pig. Sir, bid him get her hat. The cat bit the bird and the rat bit the cat. He is very kind.

LECCION II.

VOCALES *o, u, y, w.*

5. *O*. Tiene cinco sonidos perfectamente distintos.

1.º De *ó* larga y gruesa, cuando le sigue sílaba con *e* muda; cuando va seguida de *l* con otra consonante, en varios monosílabos y en algunos vocablos que no pueden sujetarse á regla fija:

<i>note</i>	nota	<i>nôt</i>		<i>go</i>	ir	<i>gó</i>
<i>over</i>	sobre	<i>ôver</i>		<i>no</i>	no	<i>nó</i>
<i>ore</i>	mineral	<i>ôr</i>		<i>so</i>	así	<i>só</i>
<i>cold</i>	frio	<i>côld</i>		<i>polar</i>	polar	<i>pólar</i>
<i>bold</i>	atrevido	<i>bôld</i>		<i>obedient</i>	obediente	<i>óbident</i>

2.º De *o* muy breve, principalmente cuando va seguida de *t*. Si le sigue *r* tiene un sonido tambien breve, pero más claro:

<i>not</i>	no	<i>not</i>		<i>for</i>	pues	<i>fôr</i>
<i>got</i>	adquirido	<i>got</i>		<i>order</i>	órden	<i>ôrder</i>
<i>frost</i>	helada	<i>frost</i>		<i>form</i>	forma	<i>fôr</i>

3.º Tiene un sonido parecido al de *eu* frances, principalmente cuando va seguida de *m, n, r, v, z, th*, y en las termi-

naciones finales *ock, od, ol, om, on, op, or, ot*, y *some*; siempre que no recaiga sobre ellas el acento:

<i>glove</i>	guante	<i>glæv</i>		<i>dozen</i>	docena	<i>dæz'n</i>
<i>nothing</i>	nada	<i>næzɪŋ</i>		<i>kingdom</i>	reino	<i>kiŋdəm</i>
<i>method</i>	método	<i>mézæd</i>		<i>handsome</i>	bello	<i>hænsəm</i>
<i>month</i>	mes	<i>mænz</i>		<i>cassock</i>	sotana	<i>casək</i>
<i>son</i>	hijo	<i>sæn</i>		<i>world</i>	mundo	<i>uə:ld</i>

4.º De *u* larga unas veces, como en los vocablos que van en la columna izquierda, y breve otras, como en los ejemplos de la columna derecha:

<i>prove</i>	probar	<i>pruv</i>		<i>woman</i>	mujer	<i>úwə:n</i>
<i>do</i>	hacer	<i>du</i>		<i>bosom</i>	seno	<i>búzəm</i>
<i>to</i>	á, para	<i>tu</i>		<i>wolf</i>	lobo	<i>uulf</i>
<i>who</i>	quien	<i>hu</i>		<i>worsted</i>	estambre	<i>úursted'</i>

OBS. 7. *Women* mujeres, se pr. *úwimen*; *one* uno, *uən*, y *once* una vez, *uəns*.

OBS. 8. Es muda la *o* de las sílabas *con, kon, pon, son, ton* cuando no recae sobre ellas el acento:

<i>bacon</i>	tocino	<i>bèk'n</i>		<i>person</i>	persona	<i>pérs'n</i>
<i>reckon</i>	contar	<i>rék'n</i>		<i>cotton</i>	algodón	<i>cótt'n</i>
<i>weapon</i>	arma	<i>uép'n</i>		<i>capon</i>	capon	<i>kép'n</i>

6. *U*. Tiene tres distintos sonidos:

1.º De *iu* cuando es final de sílaba, y especialmente cuando va seguida de consonante con *e* muda:

<i>mute</i>	mudo	<i>miut</i>		<i>funeral</i>	ídem	<i>fiúneral</i>
<i>mule</i>	mulo	<i>miul</i>		<i>useful</i>	útil	<i>úúsful</i>
<i>pupil</i>	discípulo	<i>piúpil</i>		<i>cubic</i>	cúbico	<i>kiúbic</i>

2.º Toma un sonido parecido al de *eu* francesa, principalmente cuando forma sílaba con la consonante siguiente:

<i>but</i>	pero	<i>bæt</i>		<i>much</i>	mucho	<i>mœch</i>
<i>shut</i>	cerrar	<i>shœt</i>		<i>cut</i>	cortar	<i>kœt</i>
<i>purse</i>	bolsa	<i>pœrs</i>		<i>number</i>	número	<i>nœmber</i>
<i>run</i>	correr	<i>rœn</i>		<i>rupture</i>	rotura	<i>rœptœr</i>

3.º De *u* en muchas palabras en que va precedida de *r*, y

en un gran número de vocablos que no pueden ser clasificados:

<i>rule</i>	regla	<i>rule</i>	<i>bull</i>	toro	<i>bul</i>
<i>rumour</i>	rumor	<i>rumour</i>	<i>full</i>	lleno	<i>ful</i>
<i>frugal</i>	idem	<i>frúgeel</i>	<i>pull</i>	arrancar	<i>pul</i>
<i>fruit</i>	fruto	<i>frut</i>	<i>bush</i>	matorral	<i>bush</i>
<i>true</i>	verdadero	<i>tru</i>	<i>put</i>	poner	<i>put</i>
<i>truth</i>	verdad	<i>truz</i>	<i>sugar</i>	azúcar	<i>shúger</i>

Obs. 9. Tiene el sonido en *e*: en *bury* enterrar, pr. *béri*; *burial* entierro, pr. *béricael*; *burying* exequias, pr. *bériing*; y de *i* en *busy* ocupar, ocupado, pr. *bixi*; *busiless* ocioso, pr. *biziles*; *business* negocio, pr. *biznes*.

7. *Y*. Tiene los dos primeros sonidos de la *i* y próximamente en idénticos casos:

1.º De *ai* en monosílabos, cuando es final de verbos, seguida de consonante con *e* muda, y en algunos vocablos derivados del griego:

<i>fly</i>	mosca	<i>flai</i>	<i>type</i>	tipo	<i>taip</i>
<i>my</i>	mi	<i>mai</i>	<i>tyrant</i>	tirano	<i>táirant</i>
<i>cry</i>	gritar	<i>crai</i>	<i>hydrography</i>	hidrogr.	<i>haidrógrafi</i>
<i>why?</i>	porqué?	<i>huai</i>	<i>hydropic</i>	hidrópico	<i>haidrópic</i>
<i>deny</i>	negar	<i>dinái</i>	<i>hymen</i>	himeneo	<i>haimen</i>
<i>modify</i>	modificar	<i>modifái</i>	<i>hyperbole</i>	hipérbole	<i>haiperbóli</i>
<i>reply</i>	respuesta	<i>riplái</i>	<i>typhon</i>	tifon	<i>taifon</i>
<i>cyder</i>	sidra	<i>sáider</i>	<i>typius</i>	tifus	<i>taifos</i>
<i>rhyme</i>	rima	<i>raim</i>	<i>tyro</i>	aprendiz	<i>tairó</i>

2.º De *i*, cuando forma sílaba con la consonante siguiente y siendo final de sustantivo, adjetivo ó adverbio polisílabo, aunque en este caso toma un sonido oscuro que se aproxima al de la *e* breve:

<i>mystery</i>	misterio	<i>misteri</i>	<i>liberty</i>	libertad	<i>liberti</i>
<i>syntax</i>	sintaxis	<i>sintaks</i>	<i>army</i>	ejército	<i>ármí</i>
<i>system</i>	sistema	<i>sistem</i>	<i>many</i>	muchos	<i>mèni</i>
<i>pyramid</i>	pirámide	<i>piramid</i>	<i>wisely</i>	sábiamente	<i>uáisli</i>

8. *W*. 1.º Tiene el sonido de *u* cuando no es muda:

<i>wall</i>	pared	<i>uol</i>	<i>now</i>	ahora	<i>nau</i>
<i>war</i>	guerra	<i>uor</i>	<i>town</i>	ciudad	<i>taun</i>
<i>week</i>	semana	<i>uik</i>	<i>few</i>	pocos	<i>fu</i>
<i>with</i>	con	<i>uiz</i>	<i>inward</i>	interior	<i>inuord</i>

2.º *r* muda la *w* inicial seguida de *r*, y en *sword* espada, pr. *sórd*, *answer* contestacion y *to answer*, pr. *anscer*:

<i>write</i>	escribir	<i>rait</i>		<i>wrong</i>	sin razon	<i>rong</i>
<i>wreck</i>	naufragio	<i>rek</i>		<i>wring</i>	torcer	<i>ring</i>

3.º Cuando va seguida de *h* suena detras de la *h*, y ésta es aspirada:

<i>whale</i>	ballena	<i>huèl</i>		<i>while</i>	momento	<i>huail</i>
<i>what</i>	que	<i>huòt</i>		<i>which</i>	cual	<i>huich</i>
<i>when</i>	cuando	<i>huen</i>		<i>whip</i>	látigo	<i>huip</i>
<i>where</i>	donde	<i>huèr</i>		<i>whisky</i>	aguardiente	<i>huiski</i>
<i>why?</i>	porqué?	<i>huai</i>		<i>wheel</i>	rueda	<i>huil</i>

II.—Ejercicio de lectura.

Let the cat be put in a bag. The dog bit my toe. The cat and dog are oft at war. You are a bad boy if you nip off the leg of a fly. A fox got my old hen and ate her, but my dog got also the fox. Do not let the cat lie on the bed; but you may pat her and let her lie by you; see how glad she is now I pat her. Why does she cry mew. Let her run out. Do you love me? I love my mother and my son. Here is a pin to point with. The sun shines. Get up girl, come and dress Jane. See what a fine bird this is! You must not hurt live things. Give me a capon. Here is one.

LECCION III.

DE LOS DIPTONGOS PROPIOS.

9. Los diptongos ingleses son propios é impropios.

Llamamos diptongos propios aquellos en cuya pronunciacion se percibe el sonido de dos vocales, é impropios, aquellos en cuya pronunciacion sólo se percibe el sonido de una vocal, por cuya razon deberían llamarse con más propiedad *vocales compuestas*.

Algunos diptongos propios se componen de tres vocales.

Debe advertirse que, si bien las reglas sobre la pronunciación de los diptongos no son del todo fijas, pueden considerarse como tales para los que en el cuadro siguiente van marcados con un asterisco.

Respecto á los demas, merecen un detenido estudio las observaciones que á continuacion exponemos:

DIPTONGOS PROPIOS.

* <i>aye</i>	pr. <i>ei</i>	<i>aye</i>	sí, siempre	pr. <i>ei</i>
* <i>eau</i>	» <i>iu</i>	<i>beauty</i>	hermosura	» <i>biuti</i>
* <i>cou</i>	» <i>ioe</i>	<i>righteous</i>	justo	» <i>raiticos</i>
* <i>eu</i>	» <i>iu</i>	<i>feud</i>	discordia	» <i>fiud</i>
* <i>ew</i>	» <i>iu</i>	<i>few</i>	pocos	» <i>fiu</i>
* <i>ewe</i>	» <i>iu</i>	<i>ewe</i>	oveja.	» <i>iu</i>
* <i>eye</i>	» <i>ai</i>	<i>eye</i>	ojo	» <i>ai</i>
<i>ia</i>	» <i>ia</i>	<i>christian</i>	cristiano	» <i>cristian</i>
<i>ia</i>	» <i>iae</i>	<i>champion</i>	campeon	» <i>champion</i>
* <i>ieu</i>	» <i>iu</i>	<i>adieu</i>	adios	» <i>adiu</i>
* <i>iew</i>	» <i>iu</i>	<i>view</i>	vista	» <i>viu</i>
* <i>oi</i>	» <i>oi</i>	<i>voice</i>	voz	» <i>ois</i>
<i>ou</i>	» <i>au</i>	<i>cloud</i>	nube	» <i>claud</i>
<i>ow</i>	» <i>au</i>	<i>town</i>	ciudad	» <i>taun</i>
* <i>oy</i>	» <i>oi</i>	<i>boy</i>	muchacho	» <i>boi</i>
<i>ua</i>	» <i>ue</i>	<i>antiquated</i>	anticuado	» <i>antikuat'd</i>
	» <i>ua</i>	<i>antiquary</i>	anticuario	» <i>antikuari</i>
<i>ue</i>	» <i>ue</i>	<i>conquest</i>	conquista	» <i>conkuest</i>
<i>ui</i>	» <i>ui</i>	<i>languid</i>	lánguido	» <i>languid</i>
* <i>uo</i>	» <i>uo</i>	<i>quotidian</i>	cotidiano	» <i>kuótidian</i>
<i>uy</i>	» <i>ui</i>	<i>obloquy</i>	murmuración	» <i>oblokui</i>

DIPTONGOS IMPROPIOS.

* <i>ae</i>	» <i>i</i>	<i>Caesar</i>	César	» <i>Sizer</i>
<i>ai</i>	» <i>e</i>	<i>aim</i>	mira	» <i>em</i>
* <i>ao</i>	» <i>e</i>	<i>gaol ó jail</i>	cárcel	» <i>dchël</i>
<i>au</i>	» <i>ò</i>	<i>taught</i>	enseñado	» <i>tòt</i>
* <i>aw</i>	» <i>ò</i>	<i>law</i>	ley	» <i>lò</i>
* <i>ay</i>	» <i>e</i>	<i>to say</i>	decir	» <i>tu sè</i>
<i>ea</i>	» <i>i</i>	<i>to leave</i>	dejar	» <i>tu liv</i>
* <i>ee</i>	» <i>i</i>	<i>to meet</i>	encontrar	» <i>tu mit</i>
<i>ei</i>	» <i>e</i>	<i>rein</i>	rienda	» <i>rèn</i>
<i>eo</i>	» <i>i</i>	<i>people</i>	pueblo	» <i>pip'el</i>
<i>ey</i>	» <i>e</i>	<i>they</i>	ellos	» <i>dzè</i>
<i>ie</i>	» <i>i</i>	<i>to believe</i>	creer	» <i>tu biliv</i>
* <i>oa</i>	» <i>ò</i>	<i>boat</i>	barco	» <i>bòt</i>
<i>oe</i>	» <i>i</i>	<i>economy</i>	economía	» <i>iconomi</i>
<i>oo</i>	» <i>u</i>	<i>moon</i>	luna	» <i>mun</i>
* <i>wo</i>	» <i>u</i>	<i>two</i>	dos	» <i>tu</i>

10. Ew. Cuando va precedida de *r* se pronuncia *u*: *shrewd* maligno, pr. *shrud*; *crew* cuadrilla, pr. *cru*; y como *ó* suena en *to shew* demostrar, pr. *shô*; *to sew* coser, pr. *sô*; *shewt* enfermedad de la boca, pr. *shôt*.

11. Ia. 1.º Suena *iaë*, principalmente cuando la *a* va seguida de *n*, *l*, *r*:

poniard puñal *póniard* | *burial* entierro *beriel*

2.º Tiene el sonido de *i* en:

carriage porte *carridch* | *parliament* parlamento *parliment*
marriage casamiento *marridch* | *miniature* miniatura *minitchur*

Miniature suena más comunmente *minitchur*.

12. Io. 1.º Se pronuncia *aio*, especialmente cuando recae el acento sobre la *i*: *prior* prior, pr. *praïor*; *priority* prioridad, pr. *praïority*; *violent* violento, pr. *vaiolent*.

2.º Las terminaciones *tion*, *sion*, se pronuncian *shæn*: *nation* nación, pr. *nèshæn*; *occasion* ocasion, pr. *okèshæn*. Si á la *t* precede *x* ó *s* se pr. *tshæn*; *question* pregunta, pr. *huestchæn*.

13. Ou. Tiene los siguientes sonidos:

1.º De *au*, que es el más frecuente: *found* encontrado, pr. *faund*; *out* fuera, pr. *aut*; *house* casa, pr. *haus*; *mouth* boca, pr. *mauz*.

2.º De *u* en *croup* rabadilla, *group* grupo, *through* á traves de, *you* vosotros, V., *youth* juventud, *soup* sopa, *wound* herida, y algun otro. Es más breve en *would* queria, pr. *uud*; *could* podia, pr. *cud*, y *should* debia, pr. *shud*.

3.º De *æ* en: *country* país, *cousin* primo, *courage* valor, pronúnciese *kæredch*; *double* doble, *enough* bastante, pr. *inæf*; *favour* favor, *honour* honor, *journey* viaje, *nourish* alimentar, *parlour* recibimiento, *rough* rudo, pr. *ræf*; *tough* tieso, pr. *tæf*; *trouble* molestia, *young* jóven, y algun otro, así como tambien en los adjetivos acabados en *ous*: *courageous* animoso, pronúnciese *kæredchices*.

4.º De ó en : *though* y *although* aunque, *court* córte, *course* carrera, *discourse* discurso, *dough* masa, *four* cuatro, *fourteen* catorce, *mould* moho, *cough* tos, pr. *kóf*; *trough* artesa, pronúnciese *tróf*.

5.º De ò muy abierta ó clara, en los acabados en *ought*, como *ought* deber, *bought* comprado, *brought* traído, *thought* pensado, que suenan *bòt*, *bròt*, etc.

14. Ow. 1.º Su sonido más frecuente es también *au*: *down* abajo, *how* cómo? *brown* moreno, *gown* bata, que se pronuncian *dáun*, *háu*, etc.

2.º Se pronuncia ó en : *blow* golpe, *to grow* crecer, *to know* conocer, *below* abajo, pr. *biló*; *to bestow* conceder, pr. *bistó*; *towards* hácia, pr. *tôards*; *snow* nieve, *to throw* arrojar, *fellow* compañero y otros, que suenan *bló*, *gró*, etc.

3.º Cuando el acento recae sobre la sílaba anterior, pronuncian algunos el diptongo *ow* como *o* breve, otros, y es lo más general, como *ó*: *to-morrow* mañana, *sorrow* tristeza, *window* ventana, que se pr. *uindo* ó *uindó*, etc.

15. UA. 1.º Se pronuncia *ua* y *uè*: en *language* suena *ui*: *antiquary* anticuario, pr. *antikuari*; *equal* igual, pr. *ikual*; *to persuade* persuadir, pr. *persuèd*; *language* idioma, pronúnciese *lángüidch*.

2.º Se apartan de esta regla las siguientes palabras:

<i>guard</i>	guarda	<i>gard</i>		<i>Mantua</i>	Mántua	<i>Mantiua</i>
<i>guardian</i>	tutor	<i>gardian</i>		<i>victuals</i>	viveres	<i>vitch^{ls}</i>
<i>guarantee</i>	garantía	<i>garanti</i>		<i>victualing</i>	idem	<i>vitch^{ling}</i>
<i>piquant</i>	picante	<i>pikant</i>		<i>victualer</i>	proveedor	<i>vitch^{ler}</i>

16. UE. 1.º En medio de dición suena *ui*, *ue*:

<i>mansuete</i>	benigno	<i>mansuit</i>		<i>conquest</i>	conquista	<i>conkuest</i>
<i>desuetude</i>	desuso	<i>désuitiud</i>		<i>request</i>	petición	<i>rikuést</i>

2.º Cuando está en fin de dición es muda la *e*, y la *u* se pronuncia *iu*, ménos cuando va precedida de *r*, que suena *u*. Lo mismo suena en *tuesday*.

Pero son mudas las dos letras *ue* en las sílabas *que*, *que*, y la *u* en *guess* y *guest*:

<i>cue</i>	taco	<i>kiu</i>		<i>true</i>	verdadero	<i>tru</i>
<i>due</i>	debido	<i>diu</i>		<i>imbrue</i>	manchas	<i>imbrú</i>
<i>hue</i>	color	<i>hiu</i>		<i>tuesday</i>	mártes	<i>tusdê</i>
<i>pursue</i>	perseguir	<i>parsiu</i>		<i>fatigue</i>	fatiga	<i>fatig</i>
<i>sue</i>	acusar	<i>siu</i>		<i>tongue</i>	lengua	<i>tang</i>
<i>retinue</i>	séquito	<i>retiniu</i>		<i>antique</i>	antiguo	<i>antik</i>
<i>revenue</i>	renta	<i>réviniu</i>		<i>guess</i>	adivinar	<i>gues</i>
<i>conquer</i>	conquistar	<i>conker</i>		<i>guest</i>	huésped	<i>guest</i>

17. Uⁱ. Tiene varios sonidos:

1.º Unas veces suenan las dos vocales, como:

<i>anguish</i>	angustia	<i>angüish</i>		<i>gluish</i>	pegajoso	<i>gliuish</i>
<i>linguist</i>	lingüista	<i>lingüist</i>		<i>quite</i>	enteramente	<i>kuait</i>
<i>tuition</i>	inspeccion	<i>tiuishæn</i>		<i>require</i>	exigir	<i>rikuáicer</i>

2.º Otras es muda la *u*, y la *i* se pronuncia *ai* ó *i*:

<i>guide</i>	guia	<i>gaid</i>		<i>guilt</i>	crimen	<i>guilt</i>
<i>disguise</i>	disfraz	<i>disgaiz</i>		<i>build</i>	edificar	<i>bild</i>
<i>guile</i>	fraude	<i>gail</i>		<i>guild</i>	gremio	<i>guild</i>
<i>beguile</i>	engañar	<i>bigail</i>		<i>biscuit</i>	galleta	<i>biskit</i>

3.º Es muda la *i* en las palabras que á continuacion se indican, dándose á la *u* el sonido *iu*. Precedida de *r* es tambien muda la *i*, y la *u* se pronuncia como en castellano:

<i>juice</i>	jugo	<i>chius</i>		<i>suitor</i>	pretendiente	<i>siutor</i>
<i>suit</i>	serie	<i>siut</i>		<i>pursuit</i>	prosecucion	<i>parsiut</i>
<i>sluise</i>	esclusa	<i>slius</i>		<i>fruit</i>	fruto	<i>frut</i>
<i>suitable</i>	conveniente	<i>siutabl</i>		<i>recruit</i>	recluta	<i>rikrút</i>

18. U^y. En las pocas palabras en que ocurre este diptongo se pronuncia *ui* ó *i*, y áun *iii*:

<i>colloquy</i>	coloquio	<i>collókui</i>		<i>plaguy</i>	apestado	<i>plègui</i>
<i>gluy</i>	pegajoso	<i>gliui</i>		<i>roguy</i>	pilluelo	<i>rògui</i>

III.—Ejercicio de lectura.

Come, James, now read your book. What are eyes for? To see with. I knew a nice girl, but she was not good; one day she went out to take a walk and tore her frok in a bush. Look at Jane, her hand is bound up in a cloth: she had a mind to try if she could poke

the fire, though she had been told she must not do it, and she fell with her hand on the bar of the grate. Gold is of a deep yellow colour: men dig it out of the ground. The noblest employment for the mind of a man, is to study the works of the Creator. His mind is lifted up to heaven and his life shews what idea he entertains of eternal wisdom. While the planets pursue their courses; while the comet wandereth through space; behold how awfull their splendour.

LECCION IV.

DE LOS DIPTONGOS IMPROPIOS.

19. AI. 1.º Su sonido ordinario es de *e* abierta:

<i>claim</i>	pretension	<i>clèm</i>		<i>hair</i>	cabello	<i>hèr</i>
<i>fair</i>	hermoso	<i>fèr</i>		<i>brain</i>	cerebro	<i>brèn</i>
<i>plain</i>	llano	<i>plèn</i>		<i>pair</i>	par	<i>pèr</i>

2.º En la mayor parte de los polisílabos en *ain* es muda la *a*:

<i>captain</i>	capitan	<i>cáptin</i>		<i>fountain</i>	fuentes	<i>fáuntin</i>
<i>curtain</i>	cortina	<i>kaertin</i>		<i>certain</i>	cierto	<i>sértin</i>

3.º *Plaid* capa, tartan, se pronuncia comunmente *plad*, y *aisle* nave de iglesia, *ail*.

20. AU. 1.º Suena generalmente *ò* abierta:

<i>daughter</i>	hija	<i>dòtør</i>		<i>taught</i>	enseñado	<i>tòt</i>
<i>caught</i>	cogido	<i>còt</i>		<i>cause</i>	causa	<i>kòz</i>

2.º Seguido de *n* y á veces de *gh*, suena *a*:

<i>aunt</i>	tia	<i>ant</i>		<i>launder</i>	lavandera	<i>landør</i>
<i>haunt</i>	frecuentar	<i>hant</i>		<i>laugh</i>	reir	<i>laf</i>
<i>haunch</i>	nalga	<i>hanch</i>		<i>draught</i>	trago	<i>draft</i>

21. EA. No habiendo regla fija para determinar la pronunciacion de esta vocal compuesta, damos á continuacion una lista de palabras con los cinco distintos sonidos que el uso le atribuye, que, nombrados por el órden de su importancia, son: *i*, *e* breve ó *e* muy abierta, *á* y *æ*.

Proróncianse las dos vocales en las últimas palabras de la lista :

<i>to appease</i>	apaciguar	<i>ap-piz</i>	<i>heard</i>	oido	<i>herd</i>
<i>to increase</i>	acrecentar	<i>incriz</i>	<i>heaven</i>	el cielo	<i>hev'n</i>
<i>to speak</i>	hablar	<i>spik</i>	<i>jealous</i>	celoso	<i>chielas</i>
<i>to eat</i>	comer	<i>it</i>	<i>lead</i>	plomo	<i>led</i>
<i>head</i>	cabeza	<i>hed</i>	<i>to learn</i>	aprender	<i>lern</i>
<i>breast</i>	pecho	<i>brest</i>	<i>treasure</i>	tesoro	<i>trézhoer</i>
<i>already</i>	ya	<i>òlrédi</i>	<i>leaven</i>	levadura	<i>lèven</i>
<i>bedstead</i>	catre	<i>bedsted</i>	<i>meadow</i>	pradera	<i>mèdò</i>
<i>bread</i>	pan	<i>bred</i>	<i>measure</i>	medida	<i>mezhoer</i>
<i>death</i>	muerte	<i>dez</i>	<i>pearl</i>	perla	<i>perl</i>
<i>deaf</i>	sordo	<i>def</i>	<i>peasant</i>	aldeano	<i>pèzant</i>
<i>earl</i>	conde	<i>erl</i>	<i>breath</i>	respiracion	<i>brez</i>
<i>to earn</i>	ganar	<i>ern</i>	<i>zealot</i>	apasionado	<i>zèlot</i>
<i>endeavour</i>	esfuerzo	<i>endévoer</i>	<i>zealous</i>		<i>zelos</i>
<i>breadth</i>	longitud	<i>bredz</i>	<i>bear</i>	oso	<i>bèr</i>
<i>breakfast</i>	desayuno	<i>brekfast</i>	<i>to bear</i>	llevar	<i>bèr</i>
<i>to cleanse</i>	limpiar	<i>clenz</i>	<i>to forbear</i>	dejar de	<i>forbèr</i>
<i>pleasant</i>	agradable	<i>plèzant</i>	<i>to swear</i>	jurar	<i>suèr</i>
<i>pleasure</i>	placer	<i>plèzhoer</i>	<i>to tear</i>	rasgar	<i>tèr</i>
<i>read</i>	leído, lei	<i>red</i>	<i>to wear</i>	llevar	<i>uèr</i>
<i>stead</i>	lugar	<i>sted</i>	<i>great</i>	grande	<i>grèt</i>
<i>ready</i>	pronto	<i>rèdi</i>	<i>heart</i>	corazon	<i>hart</i>
<i>realm</i>	reino	<i>relm</i>	<i>to hearten</i>	animar	<i>hart'n</i>
<i>leather</i>	cuero	<i>lédzoer</i>	<i>hearth</i>	hogar	<i>haz</i>
<i>to spread</i>	extender	<i>spređ</i>	<i>to hearken</i>	escuchar	<i>hark'n</i>
<i>to sweat</i>	sudar	<i>suét</i>	<i>vengeance</i>	venganza	<i>vénchans</i>
<i>to threaten</i>	amenazar	<i>zret</i>	<i>sergeant</i>	sargento	<i>sarchant</i>
<i>to tread</i>	pisar	<i>tred</i>	<i>pageant</i>	apariencia	<i>pèchant</i>
<i>to search</i>	buscar	<i>serch</i>	<i>pageantry</i>	ostentacion	<i>pèchantri</i>
<i>wealth</i>	riqueza	<i>uelz</i>	<i>to create</i>	crear	<i>crièt</i>
<i>weather</i>	temporal	<i>uédzoer</i>	<i>beatitude</i>	beatitud	<i>biàtitiud</i>
<i>feather</i>	pluma	<i>fédzoer</i>	<i>theatre</i>	teatro	<i>ziater</i>
<i>health</i>	salud	<i>helz</i>	<i>genealogy</i>	genealogia	<i>chiniàlochí</i>

22. *Er.* 1.º El sonido más general de este grupo es *e*. Sin embargo, suena *i* en las palabras que se indican en la siguiente lista y algunas más, debiendo advertirse que la *i* es breve cuando el acento no está sobre *ei*:

<i>vein</i>	vena	<i>vèn</i>	<i>conçèit</i>	concepto	<i>conçit</i>
<i>to reign</i>	reinar	<i>rèn</i>	<i>to conceive</i>	concebir	<i>conçiv</i>
<i>to feign</i>	fingir	<i>fèn</i>	<i>to perceive</i>	percibir	<i>perçiv</i>
<i>veil</i>	velo	<i>vel</i>	<i>to deceive</i>	engañar	<i>distv</i>
<i>eight</i>	ocho	<i>èt</i>	<i>to receive</i>	recibir	<i>riçiv</i>
<i>sleigh</i>	trineo	<i>slè</i>	<i>to seize</i>	asir	<i>siz</i>
<i>to ceil</i>	techar	<i>sil</i>	<i>seignior</i>	señor	<i>siñiør</i>
<i>ceiling</i>	techo	<i>siling</i>	<i>seigniory</i>	señorío	<i>siñiørí</i>

<i>sein</i> 6 <i>seine</i>	red (pesca)	<i>sin</i>		<i>leisure</i>	ocio	<i>lizhov</i>
<i>plebeian</i>	plebeyo	<i>plibian</i>		<i>either</i>	uno de dos	<i>iazar</i>

2.º Se pronuncia *ai* en *height* altura, y sus derivados *to heighten* levantar, etc., y en *sleight* habilidad, pr. *slait* y derivados.

23. Eo. Aunque no es muy usado este grupo, tiene, sin embargo, los sonidos de *i* larga ó breve, de *e*, *iu*, *æ* y *ó*:

<i>people</i>	pueblo	<i>pip'l</i>		<i>curmudgeon</i>	avaro	<i>kærmæchon</i>
<i>to enfeoff</i>	dar en feudo	<i>enfif</i>		<i>dungeon</i>	calabozo	<i>dændcheen</i>
<i>leopard</i>	leopardo	<i>lepærd</i>		<i>luncheon</i>	merienda	<i>læmcheen</i>
<i>feoffee</i>	feudatario	<i>fëfi</i>		<i>to burgeon</i>	brotar	<i>bærdcheen</i>
<i>jeopardy</i>	peligro	<i>chëpærdi</i>		<i>truncheon</i>	baston	<i>træncheen</i>
<i>feoffer</i>	donatario	<i>fëfær</i>		<i>scutcheon</i>	escudo	} <i>skætchin</i>
<i>feod</i>	feudo	<i>fiud</i>		<i>escutcheon</i>		
<i>feodal</i>	feudal	<i>fiudal</i>		<i>pigeon</i>	pichon	<i>pichin</i>
<i>surgeon</i>	cirujano	<i>særchon</i>		<i>widjeon</i>	fulga (ave)	<i>uidchin</i>
<i>sturgeon</i>	sollo	<i>stærchon</i>		<i>yeoman</i>	labrador	<i>yóman</i>
<i>bludjeon</i>	cachiporra	<i>blæd-cheen</i>		<i>yeomanry</i>	cl. labrad.	<i>yómanry</i>

Obs. 10. *Galleon* galeon, suena *gallion*, y vulgarmente *galún*:

24. Ey. 1.º Se pronuncia como *è* cuando lleva el acento:

<i>convey</i>	trasportar	<i>convè</i>		<i>prey</i>	presa	<i>prè</i>
<i>obey</i>	obedecer	<i>òbè</i>		<i>survey</i>	vigilar	<i>særvè</i>

2.º En *key*, *quay*, y cuando no recae sobre él el acento, se pronuncia *i*. Recuérdese que ésta tiene cierta tendéncia á *e* cuando es final:

<i>valley</i>	valle	<i>vælli</i>		<i>galley</i>	galera	<i>gælli</i>
<i>alley</i>	alameda	<i>ælli</i>		<i>key</i>	llave	<i>ki</i>
<i>barley</i>	cebada	<i>bærlí</i>		<i>quay</i>	muelle	<i>ki</i>

25. Ie. 1.º Su sonido más general es *i*:

<i>chief</i>	jefe	<i>chif</i>		<i>grief</i>	pesar	<i>grif</i>
<i>thief</i>	ladron	<i>zif</i>		<i>fiend</i>	diablo	<i>find</i>

2.º Suena *ai* cuando es final de monosílabo y cuando procede de la conversión de *y* en *ie*, si aquélla se pronuncia *ai* en la forma primitiva:

<i>die</i>	dado	<i>dai</i>	<i>hie</i>	apresurado	<i>hai</i>
<i>cries</i>	gritos	<i>crais</i>	<i>flies</i>	moscas	<i>flais</i>
<i>he denies</i>	niega	<i>dináis</i>	<i>I denied</i>	negué	<i>dinaid</i>
<i>I replied</i>	contesté	<i>ai riplaid</i>	<i>replied</i>	contestado	<i>riplaid</i>

3.º Suena *æ* cuando va seguida de *r* en fin de diccion; pero en la terminacion ordinal *ieth*, en *orient* y *spaniel* suenan las dos letras :

<i>brázier</i>	calderero	<i>brézœr</i>	<i>fiftieth</i>	50.º	<i>fiftiez</i>
<i>glazier</i>	vidriero	<i>glézœr</i>	<i>orient</i>	oriente	<i>ôrient</i>
<i>fortieth</i>	40.º	<i>fortiez</i>	<i>spaniel</i>	sabueso	<i>spaniel</i>

26. Oe. Suena comunmente *i*, en algunas palabras *ó*, en muy pocas *u* y *æ* en *does* hace :

<i>oeconomical</i>	económico	<i>iconómical</i>
<i>oeconomics</i>	economía	<i>iconómiks</i>
<i>oedipus</i>	edipo	<i>idipæs</i>
<i>oecumenical</i>	ecuménico	<i>ikiuménical</i>
<i>doe</i>	gamo hembra	<i>dô</i>
<i>foe</i>	enemigo	<i>fô</i>
<i>toe</i>	dedo del pié	<i>tô</i>
<i>hoe</i>	azadon	<i>hó</i>
<i>sloe</i>	endrina	<i>slô</i>
<i>throe</i>	agonías	<i>zró</i>
<i>shoe</i>	zapato	<i>shu</i>
<i>canoe</i>	canoa	<i>canú</i>

27. Oo. Este grupo se pronuncia siempre *u*, ménos en los vocablos que se expresan en la columna derecha :

<i>moon</i>	luna	<i>mun</i>	<i>door</i>	puerta	<i>dor</i>
<i>soon</i>	pronto	<i>sun</i>	<i>floor</i>	piso	<i>flor</i>
<i>food</i>	alimento	<i>fud</i>	<i>blood</i>	sangre	<i>blœd</i>
<i>wool</i>	lana	<i>wul</i>	<i>flood</i>	rio	<i>flœd</i>

IV.—Ejercicio de lectura.

Now go and play till I call you in. A cat has soft fur and a long tail; if she finds a rat or a mouse she will kill him soon. Do not throw the bread on the ground. Try to learn fast; do not bawl, nor yet speak in too low a voice; speak so that all in the room may hear you. Miss May makes all her friends laugh at her; if a poor mouse runs by her she creams for an hour. John was a good boy; he went to school and took pains to learn as he ought. But his sister was not good; her aunt gave her a cake, and she thought if John saw it,

he would want to have a bit, and she did not choose he should. She had a new doll and her good aunt, who bought it, gave her a coat, and a pair of stays, and a yard of twist, for a lace; a pair of red shoes, and a piece of blue silk to make Doll a slip; some gauze for a frock, and a broad white sash.

Miss Rose was a good child; she did at all times what she was bid. She got all her tasks by heart and did her work quite well. One day she had learnt a long task in her book; so her aunt said; you are a good girl, my dear, and I will take you with me to see my daughter. Pitt was a great boy, who would sit and eat all day long. First he would have a great mess of rice milk, in an hour's time he would ask for bread and cheese, then he would eat loads of fruit and cakes.

LECCION V.

DE LAS CONSONANTES.

NOTA. Para evitar repeticiones inútiles, sólo hablaremos de los casos en que las consonantes se apartan de la pronunciación castellana.

Cuando otra cosa no se advierta, la consonante recibe la pronunciación española, como sucede con casi todas.

28. B. Es muda la *b* final precedida de *m* y seguida de *t*:

<i>limb</i>	miembro	<i>lim</i>		<i>redoubt</i>	reducto	<i>ridaut</i>
<i>dumb</i>	mudo	<i>dœm</i>		<i>lamb</i>	cordero	<i>lam</i>
<i>debt</i>	deuda	<i>dœt</i>		<i>doubt</i>	duda	<i>daut</i>
<i>debtor</i>	deudor	<i>dœtœr</i>		<i>subtle</i>	sutil	<i>sœt'l</i>

29. C. 1.º Delante de *e*, *i*, se pronuncia como *s* castellana:

<i>cat</i>	gato	<i>kœt</i>		<i>cell</i>	celda	<i>sel</i>
<i>comb</i>	peine	<i>kôm</i>		<i>city</i>	ciudad	<i>siti</i>
<i>cup</i>	copa	<i>kœp</i>		<i>circle</i>	círculo	<i>sirk'el</i>

2.º Seguida de *ea*, *ia*, *ie*, *io*, *eous* suena como *sh*, con un sonido parecido a nuestra *ch* cuando va precedida de consonante.



Es muda en las siete últimas palabras de la siguiente lista de ejemplos :

<i>ocean</i>	océano	<i>óshæn</i>
<i>physician</i>	médico	<i>fizishæn</i>
<i>musician</i>	músico	<i>míusishæn</i>
<i>precious</i>	precioso	<i>préshæs</i>
<i>vicious</i>	vicioso	<i>vishæs</i>
<i>ancient</i>	antiguo	<i>anshent</i>
<i>marcionist</i>	marcion.	<i>márshænist</i>
<i>to indict</i>	encausar	<i>indáit</i>
<i>muscle</i>	músculo	<i>mæsl</i>
<i>arbuscle</i>	arbusto	<i>ærbæsl</i>
<i>corpuscle</i>	corpúsculo	<i>kærpæsl</i>
<i>victual</i>	viveres	<i>vítl</i>
<i>victualing</i>	aprovisionamiento	<i>vítling</i>
<i>czar</i>	czar	<i>zar</i>

30. CH. Se pronuncia como en castellano, ménos en las palabras tomadas del frances en que suena *ch* francesa (tr. *sh*), y en las del griego, como *k*.

Este último sonido tiene cuando va seguida de *r* ó *l*.

Es muda en un corto número de voces.

<i>chain</i>	cadena	<i>chèn</i>	<i>scholar</i>	estudiante	<i>skolær</i>
<i>cheese</i>	queso	<i>chíz</i>	<i>scheme</i>	plan	<i>skim</i>
<i>chaise</i>	calesa	<i>shéz</i>	<i>chlorate</i>	clorato	<i>klórèt</i>
<i>chamois</i>	gamuza	<i>shamoi</i>	<i>chronicle</i>	crónica	<i>kronik^l</i>
<i>monarch</i>	mónarca	<i>monark</i>	<i>drachm</i>	dracma	<i>dræm</i>
<i>architect</i>	arquitecto	<i>árkitekt</i>	<i>schism</i>	cisma	<i>sizm</i>
<i>archives</i>	archivo	<i>árkaiivz</i>	<i>yacht</i>	yacht	<i>yætt</i>

31. D. Toma un sonido fuerte, semejante al de nuestra *t*, en la terminacion *ed* de los pretéritos y participios, y cuando está precedida de *c*, *ch*, *f*, *k*, *p*, *s*, *x*, siendo muda en algunos vocablos.

<i>called</i>	llamado	<i>còll'd</i>	<i>to handsel</i>	estrenar	<i>hánsel</i>
<i>guessed</i>	adivinado	<i>gues'd</i>	<i>handsome</i>	hermoso	<i>hánsæm</i>
<i>I guessed</i>	adiviné	<i>ai gues'd</i>	<i>handkerchief</i>	pañuelo	<i>hánkerc'hif</i>
<i>I loved</i>	amé	<i>ai lov'd</i>	<i>wednesday</i>	miércoles	<i>uén'sdè</i>

OBS. 11. *Soldier* soldado, se pr. *soldshær*, *soldiery* soldadesca, *soldshæri*, etc.

32. F. Nada hay que observar sobre esta letra, sino que la preposicion *of* de, se pr. *ov* cuando va seguida de consonante.

33. G. 1.º Delante de *e*, *i*, tiene el sonido de *gue* en voces derivadas de monosílabos, en casi todas las palabras derivadas del alemán, así como también en fin de diccion :

<i>dog</i>	perro	<i>dog</i>	<i>gibbous</i>	giboso	<i>guib-bæs</i>
<i>thing</i>	cosa	<i>zing</i>	<i>giddy</i>	atolondrado	<i>guid-di</i>
<i>king</i>	rey	<i>king</i>	<i>to gild</i>	dorar	<i>guild</i>
<i>belong</i>	pertenecer	<i>bilong</i>	<i>girl</i>	niña	<i>guírl</i>
<i>baggage</i>	equipaje	<i>bágguedch</i>	<i>hunger</i>	hambre	<i>hænguær</i>
<i>bigger</i>	más gordo	<i>biggær</i>	<i>gear</i>	atavío	<i>guir</i>
<i>beggar</i>	mendigo	<i>béggær</i>	<i>to get</i>	ganar	<i>tu guet</i>
<i>to gelt</i>	castrar	<i>guelt</i>	<i>to gibber</i>	chapurrar	<i>guib-bær</i>
<i>to give</i>	dar	<i>guiv</i>	<i>monger</i>	vendedor	<i>mænguær</i>
<i>anger</i>	cólera	<i>ænguær</i>	<i>finger</i>	dedo	<i>finguær</i>
<i>to begin</i>	empezar	<i>biguin</i>	<i>tiger</i>	tigre	<i>táiguær</i>

2.º Delante de dichas vocales *e*, *i*, tiene el sonido *dch* en las voces no germánicas, es decir, en las derivadas del griego, latin ó frances :

<i>generous</i>	generoso	<i>dcheneræs</i>	<i>gender</i>	género	<i>dchéndær</i>
<i>genius</i>	genio	<i>dchinias</i>	<i>general</i>	general	<i>dchéneral</i>
<i>apology</i>	apología	<i>apólódchi</i>	<i>giant</i>	gigante	<i>dcháiant</i>
<i>gem</i>	joya	<i>dchem</i>	<i>gibbet</i>	patíbulo	<i>dchib-bit</i>

3.º Cuando hay dos *g* delante de *e*, *i*, la primera suena *gue* y la segunda *dch*, ménos en los derivados de monosílabos á que se refiere el núm. 1.º

<i>suggest</i>	sugerir	<i>sægdchest</i>	<i>suggil</i>	calumniar	<i>sægdchil</i>
----------------	---------	------------------	---------------	-----------	-----------------

4.º Es muda delante de *m* ó *n* en la misma sílaba, y delante de *l* en voces extranjeras :

<i>phlegm</i>	flema	<i>flem</i>	<i>sign</i>	señal	<i>sain</i>
<i>apothegm</i>	apotema	<i>apözem</i>	<i>seraglio</i>	serrallo	<i>sirálio</i>

34. GH. 1.º Suena siempre *gue* en principio de diccion :

<i>ghastly</i>	horrible	<i>gæstly</i>	<i>Ghent</i>	Gante	<i>guent</i>
<i>ghost</i>	fantasma	<i>gost</i>	<i>gherkin</i>	pepinillo	<i>guérkin</i>

2.º Es muda la *gh* final y delante de *t*, á excepcion de los vocablos de la segunda columna de ejemplos en que se pronuncia *f* ó *k*:

<i>though</i>	aunque	<i>dzó</i>		<i>draught</i>	trago	<i>draft</i>
<i>through</i>	al traves	<i>zru</i>		<i>cough</i>	tos	<i>kóf</i>
<i>high</i>	alto	<i>ñai</i>		<i>trough</i>	artesa	<i>tróf</i>
<i>to sigh</i>	suspirar	<i>tu sai</i>		<i>tough</i>	duro	<i>tef</i>
<i>bought</i>	comprado	<i>bòt</i>		<i>rough</i>	áspero	<i>rof</i>
<i>bright</i>	brillante	<i>brait</i>		<i>enough</i>	bastante	<i>inof</i>
<i>to fight</i>	pelear	<i>tu fait</i>		<i>lough</i>	lago	<i>lok</i>
<i>night</i>	noche	<i>nait</i>		<i>shough</i>	perro lan.º	<i>chok</i>
<i>sight</i>	vista	<i>sait</i>		<i>hough</i>	jarrete	<i>hok</i>
<i>thought</i>	pensado	<i>zòt</i>		<i>laugh</i>	risa	<i>laf</i>

35. H. Se pronuncia generalmente aspirada.

Es muda en *heir* heredero, *heiress* heredera, *honest* honesto, *honesty* honestidad, *honour* honor, *honourable* honroso, *herb* hierba, *herbage* hierbas (pasto), *hospital* hospital, *hostler* mozo de cuadra, *hour* hora.

36. K. Es muda delante de *n*: *to know* conocer, saber, pr. *nó*; *knee* rodilla, pr. *ni*.

37. L. Es muda cuando está entre *a* y las consonantes *k*, *f*, *m*, *v* en la misma sílaba, y en los vocablos que en los ejemplos se indican:

<i>realm</i>	reino, pr.	<i>relm</i>		<i>folk</i>	gente	<i>fòk</i>
<i>psalm</i>	salmo	<i>sam</i>		<i>yolk</i>	yema	<i>yòk</i>
<i>talk</i>	hablar	<i>tòk</i>		<i>would</i>	quise	<i>wud</i>
<i>calf</i>	ternero	<i>caf</i>		<i>could</i>	pude	<i>cuđ</i>
<i>calves</i>	terneras	<i>cavz</i>		<i>should</i>	debí	<i>shud</i>

38. N. Recibe un sonido algo nasal cuando va seguida de *g*, *k*, *q*, *x*, y es muda despues de *m* si está en la misma sílaba que ésta:

<i>something</i>	algo	<i>səmzing</i>		<i>solemn</i>	solemne	<i>sólem</i>
<i>sing</i>	cantar	<i>sing</i>		<i>to condemn</i>	condenar	<i>tu condem</i>
<i>drink</i>	beber	<i>dringk</i>		<i>autumn</i>	otoño	<i>òtem</i>
<i>banquet</i>	bánquete	<i>bəngkuet</i>		<i>to contemn</i>	despreciar	<i>contém</i>

39. P. La inicial seguida de *s* ó *t* es muda, y lo mismo sucede entre *m* y *t*, y en *receipt* y *corps* cuerpo de ejército :

<i>psalmist</i>	salmista	<i>salmist</i>		<i>empty</i>	vacío	<i>émti</i>
<i>psaltery</i>	salterio	<i>sòlteri</i>		<i>sumptuous</i>	suntuoso	<i>sentshiuces</i>
<i>psyche</i>	psiche	<i>saiki</i>		<i>attempt</i>	ensayo	<i>áttem</i>
<i>psychology</i>	psicol.	<i>saicolódchi</i>		<i>receipt</i>	recibo	<i>risit</i>
<i>ptisan</i>	tisana	<i>tizæn</i>		<i>corps</i>	(sing.)	<i>kór</i>
<i>pshaw!</i>	quita!	<i>shó</i>		<i>corps</i>	(plur.)	<i>kórs</i>

40. PH. 1.º Suena como *f*, ménos én los ejemplos que á continuacion se expresan :

<i>physics</i>	física	<i>fiziks</i>		<i>Stephen</i>	Estéban	<i>stívn</i>
<i>phrase</i>	frase	<i>fréz</i>		<i>diphthong</i>	diptongo	<i>díptong</i>
<i>phthisical</i>	tísico	<i>tizicæl</i>		<i>triphthong</i>	triptongo	<i>tríptong</i>
<i>phthisis</i>	tísis	<i>tizis</i>		<i>naphtha</i>	nafta	<i>napta</i>
<i>nephew</i>	sobrino	<i>néviu</i>		<i>ophthalmy</i>	oftálmia	<i>opzalmi</i>

41. Q. La *u* que sigue á esta letra se pronuncia, ménos en las voces terminadas en *que* y en un corto número de vocablos :

<i>question</i>	cuestion	<i>kuéschæn</i>		<i>to quicken</i>	animar	<i>tu kuick'n</i>
-----------------	----------	-----------------	--	-------------------	--------	-------------------

V.—Ejercicio de lectura.

Iron is very hard; it is not pretty, but I do not know what we should do without it. Go and ask Dobbin if he can plough without the plough-share. Come, let us go to the smith's shop. He has a forge; he blows the fire with a great pair of bellows. The hog appears to have a divided hoof like the peaceable animal which we call cattle. The cat has sharp claws; cats have less sense than dogs; their attachment is chiefly to the house. The elephant is not only the largest but the strongest of all quadrupeds; in a state of nature it is neither fierce nor mischievous. When the elephant is once tamed, it is the most gentle and obedient of animals. When once you profess yourself a friend, endeavour to be always such: he can never have any

true friends, who is often changing them. Commerce is the art of exchanging one commodity for another, by buying or selling with a view to gain. Though private emolument is its origin, it is the bond of nations and by it one country participates in the productions of all others.

LECCION VI.

CONTINUACION DE LAS CONSONANTES.

42. R. La medial y final se pronuncia con el sonido gutural, gangoso, que le dan los parisienses.

La sílaba *re* suele pronunciarse *ær*, siendo digno de notar que todas las vocales delante de *r* pueden tomar el sonido de *æ*, aunque no es muy comun. La trasposicion de la *r* se verifica tambien en algunas voces acabadas en *ron*:

<i>reader</i>	lector	<i>ridær</i>	<i>metre</i>	metro	<i>mitær</i>
<i>bird</i>	pájaro	<i>bærd</i>	<i>fibre</i>	fibra	<i>faibær</i>
<i>cellar</i>	bodega	<i>sèllær</i>	<i>mitre</i>	mitra	<i>maiter</i>
<i>better</i>	mejor	<i>bettær</i>	<i>theatre</i>	teatro	<i>ziatær</i>
<i>sir</i>	señor	<i>sær</i>	<i>sceptre</i>	cetno	<i>septær</i>
<i>actor</i>	actor	<i>actær</i>	<i>apron</i>	delantal	<i>èpærn</i>
<i>labour</i>	trabajo	<i>læbær</i>	<i>iron</i>	hierro	<i>aiærn</i>

43. S. 1.º Entre dos vocales, ántes de *d, g, j, m, n*, ó precedida de *b, d, e, i, g, l, m, n, v, y*, siendo final de vocablo, suele pronunciarse como *z* francesa:

<i>disease</i>	enfermedad	<i>diziz</i>	<i>heads</i>	cabezas	<i>hedz</i>
<i>dishonour</i>	deshonra	<i>dizòncær</i>	<i>Frances</i>	Francisca	<i>frænsæz</i>
<i>disdain</i>	desden	<i>dizdæn</i>	<i>Francis</i>	Francisco	<i>frænsiz</i>
<i>disguise</i>	disfraz	<i>dizgáiz</i>	<i>morals</i>	la moral	<i>mòrælz</i>
<i>disjoint</i>	desunir	<i>dischoint</i>	<i>customs</i>	derechos	<i>kæstòmz</i>
<i>dismal</i>	triste	<i>dizmal</i>	<i>means</i>	medios	<i>minz</i>
<i>disorder</i>	desórden	<i>dizórdær</i>	<i>dregs</i>	heces	<i>dregz</i>
<i>ribs</i>	costillas	<i>ribz</i>			

2.º En las terminaciones *sion* y *sure* suena como *sh* inglesa

si va precedida de consonante, y toma un sonido más vibrante, algo parecido al de la *j* francesa (trascr. *zh*) cuando va precedida de vocal:

<i>occasion</i>	ocasion	<i>okèzhæn</i>		<i>mansion</i>	mansion	<i>mænschæn</i>
<i>division</i>	division	<i>divizhæn</i>		<i>expansion</i>	idem	<i>ekspanshæn</i>
<i>pleasure</i>	placer	<i>plezhær</i>		<i>censure</i>	censura	<i>senzchær</i>

3.º Cuando es inicial ó doble suena como *s* española: *sister* hermana, pr. *sistær*; *essence* esencia, pr. *ésens*.

Se exceptúan *sugar* azúcar, pr. *shugær*; *sure* seguro, pronúnciese *shur*; *dessert* postre, pr. *dezért* y algun otro.

4.º *Sh* tiene el sonido de *ch* francesa: *ship* buque, *spanish* español, *shop* tienda.

5.º *Sc* se pronuncian como *s* española cuando van seguidas de *e*, *i*, y *sk* delante de *a*, *o*, *u*:

<i>scene</i>	escena	<i>sin</i>		<i>scale</i>	escalera	<i>skèl</i>
<i>scent</i>	olor	<i>sent</i>		<i>scope</i>	objeto	<i>skóp</i>
<i>sciencè</i>	ciencia	<i>sáiens</i>		<i>scREW</i>	tornillo	<i>skriú</i>
<i>scissors</i>	tijeras	<i>sizærz</i>		<i>scull</i>	cráneo	<i>skæl</i>

44. T. 1.º En medio de dición se pronuncia *sh* cuando va seguida de *ia*, *ie*, *io*, *iu*, ménos en los casos que se indican en el núm. 2.º

Si la precede *s* se pronuncia *ch* española:

<i>patient</i>	paciente	<i>pèchent</i>		<i>bestial</i>	bestial	<i>beschal</i>
<i>action</i>	accion	<i>ækshæn</i>		<i>question</i>	cuestion	<i>kueschæn</i>
<i>portion</i>	porcion	<i>porshæn</i>		<i>digestion</i>	idem	<i>didcheschæn</i>

2.º Conserva su sonido si la *i* lleva el acento, y en los derivados de palabras que acaban en *ty*:

<i>satiety</i>	saciedad	<i>satáiti</i>		<i>pitiable</i>	lastimoso	<i>pítiabl</i>
<i>mighty</i>	poderoso	<i>máiti</i>		<i>mightier</i>	más p.	<i>maitiær</i>

3.º Delante de *u*, sin acento, puede pronunciarse también *ch*:

<i>nature</i>	naturaleza	<i>nèchær</i>		<i>virtue</i>	virtud	<i>verchiu</i>
---------------	------------	---------------	--	---------------	--------	----------------

4.º Es muda en las sílabas *ten* y *tle* cuando va precedida de *s* y en el vocable *often*; pero se pronuncia en *bursten*:

<i>listen</i>	escuchar	<i>lis^{en}</i>	<i>castle</i>	castillo	<i>cas^{el}</i>
<i>moisten</i>	humedecer	<i>mois^{en}</i>	<i>thistle</i>	cardo	<i>zis^{el}</i>
<i>fasten</i>	atar	<i>fas^{en}</i>	<i>often</i>	á mentudo	<i>ðfⁿ</i>
<i>hasten</i>	apresurarse	<i>hèsⁿ</i>	<i>bursten</i>	quebrado	<i>bœrsten</i>

45. TH. Tiene dos sonidos: de *z* española, que es el más general, y *dz* suave, ó sea un sonido semejante al de la última *d* de *Madrid*:

1.º Se pronuncia *z* en principio y fin de dición; en medio de dición, si va precedida ó seguida de consonante, y cuando está entre dos vocales en palabras derivadas del griego. Se exceptúan las de la columna derecha de ejemplos y sus derivados, en que suena *dz*:

<i>thin</i>	delgado	<i>zin</i>	<i>this</i>	este-a-o	<i>dzis</i>
<i>philanthropy</i>	filantr.	<i>filánzropi</i>	<i>that</i>	aquél	<i>dzæt</i>
<i>three</i>	tres	<i>zri</i>	<i>than</i>	que	<i>dzæn</i>
<i>theme</i>	tema	<i>zim</i>	<i>the</i>	él, la, etc.	<i>dzi</i>
<i>thick</i>	grueso	<i>zik</i>	<i>thou</i>	tu	<i>dzau</i>
<i>thunder</i>	trueno	<i>zændær</i>	<i>they</i>	ellos-as	<i>dzè</i>
<i>death</i>	muerte	<i>dez</i>	<i>then</i>	pues	<i>dzen</i>
<i>hearth</i>	hogar	<i>harz</i>	<i>there</i>	allí	<i>dzèr</i>
<i>both</i>	ambos	<i>bòz</i>	<i>thither</i>	allí	<i>dzidzær</i>
<i>panther</i>	pantera	<i>pænzær</i>	<i>though</i>	aunque	<i>dzò</i>
<i>orthodox</i>	ortodoxo	<i>orzódoks</i>	<i>thus</i>	así	<i>dzæs</i>
<i>apathy</i>	apatía	<i>æpazi</i>	<i>brethren</i>	hermanos	<i>bredzren</i>
<i>simpathy</i>	simpatía	<i>simpazi</i>	<i>northern</i>	setentr.	<i>nordzærn</i>
<i>orthography</i>	ortógr.	<i>orzógrafi</i>	<i>worthy</i>	digno	<i>uærdzi</i>
<i>author</i>	autor	<i>òzær</i>	<i>farther</i>	más léjos	<i>fardzær</i>

2.º Entre dos vocales, en palabras de origen germano, se pronuncia *dz*, y como *t* en los vocablos que se expresan en la columna derecha:

<i>father</i>	padre	<i>fadzær</i>	<i>Thomas</i>	Tomás	<i>Tomez</i>
<i>mother</i>	madre	<i>mædzær</i>	<i>thyme</i>	tomillo	<i>taim</i>
<i>neither</i>	ni	<i>nidzær</i>	<i>Thames</i>	Támesis	<i>Temz</i>
<i>whither</i>	á dónde?	<i>huidzær</i>	<i>asthma</i>	asma	<i>æstma</i>
<i>heathen</i>	pagano	<i>híd^{en}</i>	<i>phthisis</i>	tisis	<i>táisis</i>
<i>weather</i>	tiempo	<i>uedzær</i>	<i>twelfthtide</i>	reyes	<i>tuelftaid</i>

46. V. Debe procurarse no confundirla con la *b* en la pronunciación.

Es muda en *twelvemonth* un año, pr. *tuelmænz*.

47. X. 1.º Se pronuncia *ks* cuando termina una sílaba que lleva el acento, y cuando el acento recae sobre la sílaba siguiente siempre que empiece por consonante :

<i>execute</i>	ejecutar	<i>éksikiut</i>		<i>exheredate</i>	exheredar	<i>ekshéridèt</i>
<i>exercisè</i>	ejercicio	<i>éksersaiz</i>		<i>expense</i>	gasto	<i>ekspéns</i>
<i>excel</i>	aventajar	<i>eksél</i>		<i>exterior</i>	exterior	<i>ekstíriør</i>

2.º Se pronuncia *gz* cuando no recae el acento sobre su misma sílaba y le sigue vocal ó *h* muda. En principio de dicción suena como *z* francesa :

<i>exact</i>	exacto	<i>egzækt</i>		<i>Xeres</i>	Jerez	<i>Zeres</i>
<i>example</i>	ejemplo	<i>egzámp^{el}</i>		<i>Xanthippe</i>	n. pr.	<i>zænzíppi</i>
<i>exhibit</i>	presentar	<i>egzíbit</i>		<i>xylography</i>	xilograf.	<i>zailografí</i>

48. Z. Tiene siempre el sonido suave de *z* francesa, ménos cuando va seguida de *ie*, *ure*, si el acento recae sobre la vocal anterior, en cuyo caso toma el sonido que ántes hemos transcrito por *zh* (Regla 43, 2.º):

<i>zeal</i>	celo	<i>zil</i>		<i>azure</i>	lapislázuli	<i>èzhør</i>
<i>zero</i>	cero	<i>ziró</i>		<i>glazier</i>	vidriero	<i>glèzhør</i>
<i>zone</i>	zona	<i>zon</i>		<i>grazier</i>	ganadero	<i>grèzhør</i>
<i>razor</i>	navaja de afeitar	<i>rèzør</i>		<i>razure</i>	raspadura	<i>rèzhør</i>

VI.—Ejercicio de lectura.

Beware of thinking all your own that you possess and of living accordingly: if you take the pains at first to enumerate particulars, you will discover how wonderfully small trifling expenses mount up to large sums, and will discern what might have been and may for the future be saved, without occasioning any great inconvenience. May I have some meat? You shall have something nicer. Thomas; What a clever thing it is to read! A little while ago you were forced to

spell words; now you can read pretty stories. I will tell you a story about a lamb. There was once a shep-herd, who had a great many sheep. He took a great deal of care of them, and if they were sick, he was very good to them. Now they were very happy, except one foolish little lamb. When the rest of the lambs were in the fold, she got out of the field and a very fierce wolf came rushing out of a cave and seized her. Silver is white and shining: spoons are made of silver, and crowns, and shillings and six-pences. Ox is the general name for horned cattle and of all these the cow is the most useful to us: the young animal is a calf; its flesh is veal; vellum and covers of books are made of the skin. Kittens have their eyes closed several days after their birth. The lion has a large head, short round ears, a shaggy mane and a long tail tufted at the extremity: from the nose to the tail a full-grown lion will measure eight feet.

LECCION VII.

DEL ACENTO Y DE LA LECTURA.

49. En voces puramente inglesas ó de origen germánico recae el acento sobre la radical, sin que la hagan variar las alteraciones ó desinencias que puedan agregarse á la palabra: de *beauty* belleza, *beautiful* bello; de *grace* gracia, *graceful* gracioso y *disgrace* desgracia; de *kind* cortés, *unkind* descortés; de *easy* fácil, *uneasy* difícil.

50. En vocablos derivados del griego ó latin, el acento se corre generalmente una sílaba hácia la terminacion cuando se agrega algun aumento: de *geography* geografía, pr. *dchiógrafi*, *geographical* geográfico (1).

51. Vocablos que tienen una sola forma para nombre y ver-

(1) Empleamos en esta leccion el acento ' para indicar la sílaba sobre que recae en la pronunciacion; pero debemos advertir que en inglés no se expresan gráficamente los acentos.

bo llevan generalmente el acento en la primera sílaba cuando son nombres, y en la segunda cuando son verbos: *augment* aumento, *to augment* aumentar.

Hay algunas excepciones, como *delight* encanto, *to delight*, pr. *dilaít*, encantar.

Tambien conservan el acento primitivo los verbos derivados de nombres: *to water* regar, de *water* agua, pr. *wòter*.

52. Las voces disílabas acabadas en *age*, *c*, *ed*, *el*, *en*, *et*, *id*, *ish*, *le*, *on* (no *oon*), *er*, *or*, *our*, *ow*, *y*, llevan el acento en la primera sílaba: *cottage* cabaña, *public* público, pr. *pòblik*, *wicked* malvado, *hónour* honor, *sórror* pesar, *wínter* invierno.

Pero *to allow* permitir, *to avow* confesar, *below* debajo, *to bestow* dispensar, y *to endow* dotar, le tienen en la última.

53. Si en una palabra disílaba hay dos vocales seguidas y que se pronuncian separadamente, debe acentuarse la primera: *giant* gigante, pr. *dchaíent*; *diet* dieta, pr. *dáiet*; ménos *créate* crear, pr. *krièt*.

54. Llevan el acento en la última los verbos disílabos que terminan en una consonante con *e* muda, en dos consonantes ó una consonante precedida de dos vocales que no sean *ai*: *to arise* levantarse; *to suspect*, sospechar, pr. *sæspékt*: *to repeat* repetir, pr. *ripít*; pero *foúntain* fuente, pr. *fáuntin*.

55. Los trisílabos terminados en *al*, *ion*, *le*, *ous*, *re*, *ude*, *y*, llevan el acento en la primera; lo mismo que los en *ate*, *ce*, *ent*, á no ser que procedan de vocablos acentuados en la segunda ó que la vocal de esta sílaba vaya seguida de dos consonantes; *radical* radical, *portion* porcion, *glórious* glorioso, pronúnciese *glóriæ*s, *cóntrary* contrario, *vánity* vanidad, *accident* accidente; pero *adhérence* adhesion, pr. *ædhérens*.

56. Lleva el acento la segunda sílaba cuando contiene dip-tongo ó vocal seguida de dos consonantes, lo mismo que los acabados en *ator*: *to confiscate* confiscar, *hydráulic* hidráulico,

pr. *haidròlik*; *dictátor* dictador, pr. *diktètær*; pero *órator* orador, pr. *orætær*.

57. Los polisílabos terminados en *al*, *eist*, *ent*, *ia*, *ial*, *ian*, *ien*, *ion*, *le*, *ous*, *y*, tienen generalmente el acento en la antepenúltima: *religion* religion, *political* político, *impártial* imparcial, *cóntinent* continente, *général* general, *univérsity* universidad, pr. *iuniversiti*; *amiable* amable, pr. *èmiabel*; *demócracy* democracia, pr. *dimokrasi*; *diágonal* diagonal, *carnívorous* carnívoro, *thermómeter* termómetro.

58. Los polisílabos acabados en *ator*, *ic*, *ctive*, llevan de ordinario el acento en la penúltima: *mediátor* mediador, pronúnciese *mididètær*; *pathétic* patético, pr. *pazétik*; *vindictive* vengativo.

59. Algunas palabras varían de significación cargando en distinta sílaba el acento: *to accént* acentuar, *áccent* acento, *augúst* agosto, pr. *ògæst*, y *augúst* agosto.

60. Para dividir las sílabas inglesas hay que tener presentes las siguientes reglas:

1.^a Una consonante entre dos vocales debe unirse á la última: *to be-gin* empezar, *re-source* recurso.

Exceptúase la *x* y las voces compuestas que deben dividirse en sus sílabas ó palabras componentes: *to ex-ist* existir, *up-on* sobre, *ice-house* nevera, *never-the-less* sin embargo.

2.^a Consonantes capaces de empezar una palabra no se separan, y si están entre dos vocales deben acompañar á la última: *amia-ble*, *to de-stroy* destruir, *to de-throne* destronar.

Pero si no pueden empezar palabra se dividen juntando á la segunda vocal las que sean susceptibles de empezar vocablo: *un-der* debajo, *cof-fin* ataud, *ab-stain* abstenerse, *hand-some* hermoso.

Cuando son tres las consonantes, se junta una con la primera vocal si ésta es breve: *to dis-tract* distraer.

3.^a Dos vocales seguidas, que se pronuncian separadamente, constituyen tambien dos sílabas: *cru-el* cruel, *so-ci-e-ty* sociedad, pr. *sósaí-iti*.

4.^a Sepáranse tambien las terminaciones gramaticales ó afijos de derivacion: *tall-er* más alto, *teach-ing* enseñando, *teach-er* profesor, *good-ness* bondad.

VII.—Ejercicio de lectura.

Prosperity gains friends and adversity tries them. Truth and error, virtue and vice, are things of an immutable nature. Industry is the parent of every excellence. The finest talents would be lost in obscurity, if they were not called forth by study and cultivation. The acquisition of knowledge is one of the most honourable occupations of youth. Complaisance renders a superior amiable, an equal agreeable, and an inferior acceptable. Excess of ceremony shows want of breeding. That politeness is best which excludes all superfluous formality. Ingratitude is a crime so shameful, that no man was ever found who would acknowledge himself guilty of it. The character of the person who commends you, is to be considered before you set a value on his esteem. Nothing more engages the affections of men, than a handsome address, and graceful conversation. Philosophy is then only valuable, when it serves as the law of life, and not as the ostentation of science. The temperate man's pleasures are durable, because they are regular, and all his life is calm and serene because it is innocent. It is the infirmity of little minds to be captivated by every appearance, and dazzled with every thing that sparkles; but great minds have seldom admiration, because few things appear new to them.

SEGUNDA PARTE.

ANALOGIA Y SINTÁXIS.

LECCION VIII.

ARTÍCULOS DEFINIDO É INDEFINIDO.

61. El artículo definido tiene en inglés una sola forma invariable: *the*, el, la, lo, los, las:

el padre	<i>the father</i>	los padres	<i>the fathers</i>
la madre	<i>the mother</i>	las madres	<i>the mothers</i>
la hermana	<i>the sister</i>	las hermanas	<i>the sisters</i>
la flor	<i>the flower</i>	las flores	<i>the flowers</i>
Lo más hermoso			<i>the most beautiful (beautiful)</i>

62. La declinacion de los nombres se efectúa en inglés anteponiéndoles preposiciones como en castellano; así: de *of*; á, para *to*; por, para *for*; con *with*.

El libro del padre	<i>the book of the father.</i>
Los sombreros de la señora	<i>the hats of the lady.</i>
Yo doy el papel á los muchachos	<i>I give the paper to the boys.</i>

PRESENTE DE INDICATIVO DE **to be**, SER Ó ESTAR.

Yo soy ó estoy	<i>I am</i>	nosotros somos	<i>we are</i>
tú eres ó estás	<i>thou art</i>	vosotros sois, V. es	<i>you are</i>
él, ella es, etc.	<i>he, she is</i>	ellos, ellas son	<i>they are</i>

OBS. 12. El pronombre *I* (*ai*) yo, se escribe siempre con letra mayúscula.

63. El artículo *indefinido* es invariable en inglés y tiene dos formas: *a*, *an*, uno, una, sin plural.

Se usa *a* delante de nombres que empiezan por consonante, *h* aspirada, *u* larga ó que tiene el sonido *iu*, *w* é *y*; delante de los demas nombres se pone *an*:

Un hermano *a brother* | Una rosa *a rose*

64. IMPORTANTE. Los ingleses emplean el artículo indefinido delante de todo nombre que expresa título, rango, profesion, nacionalidad, secta y oficio, si en español no lleva ningun vocablo determinativo, como el, la, mi, etc.

Yo soy español.	<i>I am A Spaniard.</i>
Es V. inglés?	<i>are you AN Englishman?</i>
Él es protestante.	<i>he is A protestant.</i>
El Conde es coronel.	<i>the Count is A colonel</i>
Usted es judío.	<i>you are a jew (chii).</i>

PRESENTE INDICATIVO DEL VERBO **to have**, TENER.

Yo he ó tengo	<i>I have</i>
tú has ó tienes	<i>thou hast</i>
él ha ó tiene	<i>he has</i>
nosotros hemos ó tenemos	<i>we have</i>
vosotros habeis ó teneis	<i>you have</i>
ellos han ó tienen	<i>they have</i>

tiene V.?	<i>have you?</i>	Tiene él?	<i>has he?</i>
<i>good</i>	bueno, buena	alfiler	<i>pin</i>
<i>garden</i>	jardin	un pan	<i>a loaf</i>
<i>and</i>	y	pluma	<i>pen</i>
<i>scholar</i>	estudiante	Frances	<i>Frenchman</i>
<i>tailor</i>	sastre	católico	<i>catholic</i>
<i>baker</i>	panadero	yo doy	<i>I give</i>
<i>my</i>	mi	su (de V.)	<i>your</i>
<i>charming</i>	encantador-a	primo	<i>cousin</i>

Tema 8.

Have you the hat of the brother? I have the rose of the garden, and they have the book of the sisters. Has he the paper of the scholar? She has the paper of the mother. Are you a tailor? I am a baker and my brother is a tailor. Is he a protestant? He is a jew. I am an Englishman and my father is a Spaniard. Have you a sister? I have a brother and he has a sister. They have a book and the lady has a rose. Art thou a good father? I have a good father and a good mother. We have a large garden. The rose is a charming flower. Is your brother a baker? He is a tailor.

Tiene él la rosa de la hermana? Él tiene la rosa del jardín. El sastre tiene un alfiler y el panadero tiene un pan. Teneis vosotros el libro? El estudiante tiene el libro y nosotros tenemos la pluma y el papel. Mi hermano es un buen muchacho y mi padre es un buen sastre. Tienen ellos la pluma? Ellos tienen el papel de mi hermana. Es V. español? Yo soy inglés y mi padre es frances. Es él judío? Él es protestante y yo soy católico. Mi hermano es coronel y mi padre es sastre. Es V. panadero? Yo soy sastre y el hermano de mi padre es panadero. Yo doy la pluma al muchacho y el papel al hermano del estudiante. La rosa es una hermosa flor. Su hermano de V. es español y mi primo es frances.

LECCION IX.

FORMACION DEL PLURAL.

65. Los adjetivos son invariables respecto al género y al número. Van delante del sustantivo.

pobre	<i>poor</i>	pobres	<i>poor</i>
nuestro-a	<i>our</i>	nuestros-as	<i>our</i>
pequeño-a	<i>small</i>	pequeños-as	<i>small</i>
vuestro-a	<i>your</i>	vuestros-as	<i>your</i>

66. El plural de los sustantivos se forma, por regla general, añadiendo al singular *s*:

amigo	<i>friend</i>	amigos	<i>friends</i>
flor	<i>flower</i>	flores	<i>flowers</i>
muchacho	<i>boy</i>	muchachos	<i>boys</i>

67. Exceptúanse los siguientes:

1.º Los acabados en *y* cambian la *y* en *ies*, siempre que va precedida de consonante:

señora	<i>lady</i>	señoras	<i>ladies</i>
mosca	<i>fly</i>	moscas	<i>flies</i>

2.º Los acabados en *ch*, *sh*, *s*, *x* y *o*, agregan *es* para formar el plural:

iglesia	<i>church</i>	iglesias	<i>churches</i>
latigazo	<i>lash</i>	latigazos	<i>lashes</i>
vaso	<i>glass</i>	vasos	<i>glasses</i>
caja	<i>box</i>	cajas	<i>boxes</i>
héroe	<i>hero</i>	héroes	<i>heroes</i>

OBS. 13. Algunos sustantivos en *o* toman solamente *s*, con especialidad los que se derivan del italiano, y lo mismo los en *ch* cuando ésta se pronuncia *k*:

<i>bagnio</i>	baño	<i>oligarch</i>	oligarca
<i>canto</i>	canto	<i>solo</i>	solo
<i>monarch</i>	monarca	<i>seraglio</i>	serrallo
<i>nuncio</i>	nuncio	<i>octavo</i>	octavo
<i>portico</i>	pórtico		

que hacen *bagnios*, *cantos*, *monarchs*, etc.

3.º Los que acaban en *f* ó *fe* cambian estas terminaciones en *ves*:

pan	<i>loaf</i>	panes	<i>loaves</i>
hoja	<i>leaf</i>	hojas	<i>leaves</i>
lobo	<i>wolf</i>	lobos	<i>wolves</i>
cuchillo	<i>knife</i>	cuchillos	<i>knives</i>
vida	<i>life</i>	vidas	<i>lives</i>



OBS. 14. Los acabados en dos *ff*, *oof*, *ief*, *rf*, siguen la regla general: *handkerchief* pañuelo, *grief* pesar, *roof* techo, *dwarf* enano, hacen *dwarfs*, *roofs*, etc.

Sin embargo, *staff* baston, *mastiff* mastin y *thief* ladron, tienen los dos plurales *staves* ó *staves*, etc.

68. Todo verbo necesita en inglés un sujeto expresado, no pudiendo decirse *tengo*, *soy*, etc., sino: yo tengo *I have*, yo amo *I love*, damos *we give*.

69. La forma interrogativa de los verbos auxiliares haber, tener, ser, etc., se hace en inglés poniendo el sujeto detras del verbo, como en castellano.

tienen VV.?	<i>have you?</i>	están ellos?	<i>are they?</i>
puede V.?	<i>can you?</i>	tiene el hombre?	<i>has the man?</i>

<i>English</i> (adj.)	inglés-es	esposa	<i>wife</i>
<i>parents</i>	padres	cocina	<i>kitchen</i>
<i>also</i>	tambien	ojo	<i>eye</i>
<i>tree</i>	árbol	sombrero	<i>hat</i>
<i>seen</i>	visto	feroz	<i>ferocious</i>
<i>black</i>	negro-a-os-as	zorra	<i>fox</i>
<i>money</i>	dinero	sagaz	<i>sly</i>
<i>food</i>	alimento	muchos-as	<i>many</i>
<i>pen</i>	pluma	turco	<i>turk</i>
comerciante	<i>merchant</i>	muy	<i>very</i>
dos	<i>two (tu)</i>		

Tema 9.

Have the ladies my knives? The ladies have the handkerchiefs of the boys. I have read (*leído*) the lives of the English heroes. Your parents are good; have you also a good sister? We have a good brother. The churches of Madrid are small. Has he the loaves of the baker? He has the leaves and the flowers of the trees. Have they seen the gardens of the king? They have seen the seraglios of the negroes. The flies are black. Has she the boxes of the frenchman? She has the glasses of the lady and the staves of the boys. The thieves

have the money of your parents. The potatoes are the principal food of the poor. The dwarfs have also their (*sus*) griefs. What have your boys? They have our beautiful knives. Have the turks many wives? They have many beautiful wives. Has the baker many loaves? He has much money. The Englishman has many wolves and the Spaniard has two foxes. Has she a pen? She has two pens. Have they seen the trees of our garden? They have seen the leaves of the trees.

Tiene V. muchos hermanos? Tengo dos hermanos. Las señoras tienen muchas hermanas y muchos amigos. Nosotros tenemos dos bonitos pañuelos. Los sombreros de los ladrones son negros. Ha visto V. los enanos? He visto (*á*) las señoras de los enanos; son muy bonitas. Los padres de este muchacho son buenos amigos. Tienen los muchachos el papel y las cajas del comerciante? Tienen las cajas de los negros y las cajas de las señoras. Las esposas de los negros son negras. Teneis vosotros los panes de los hermanos? Tenemos los vasos de la cocina. Yo doy las flores á las hermanas de las señoras. Las moscas tienen muchos ojos y los árboles tienen muchas hojas. Los lobos son feroces y las zorras son muy sagaces. Tienen las señoras una caja? Tienen muchas cajas y muchos pañuelos. Los serrillos de los turcos son muy bonitos, pero los pórticos de nuestras iglesias son tambien muy hermosos. Cuántos panes tienen las señoras? Las esposas de nuestros amigos tienen dos panes.

LECCION X.

PLURALES IRREGULARES.

70. Los sustantivos que acaban en *man* cambian esta terminacion en *men*, y los en *woman* cambian esta terminacion en *women* (*uimen*) para hacer el plural.

hombre	<i>man</i>		mujer	<i>woman</i>
regidor	<i>alderman</i>		Irlandes	<i>Irishman</i>

plural *men*, *aldermen*, etc.

Se exceptúan *german* alemán y *mussulman* musulmán, que hacen *germans*, *mussulmans*.

OBS. 15. Los sustantivos de esta clase que expresan una nación pierden el *man* cuando designan toda la nacionalidad:

Los irlandeses son buenos católicos. *The Irish are good catholic.*

Los escoceses son buenos cazadores. *The Scotch are good hunters.*

Pero algunos irlandeses: *some Irishmen*.

71. Algunos sustantivos tomados de lenguas extranjeras conservan la forma plural que tienen en estos idiomas:

escribiente	<i>amanuensis</i>	plural	<i>amanuenses</i>
análisis	<i>analysis</i>	»	<i>analyses</i>
apéndice	<i>appendix</i>	»	<i>appendices</i>
arcano	<i>arcantum</i>	»	<i>arcana</i>
autómata	<i>automaton</i>	»	<i>automata</i>
eje	<i>axis</i>	»	<i>axes</i>
bandido	<i>banditto</i>	»	<i>banditti</i>
cáliz	<i>calix</i>	»	<i>calices</i>
querubín	<i>cherub</i>	»	<i>cherubim</i>
coloso	<i>colossus</i>	»	<i>colossi</i>
crisis	<i>crisis</i>	»	<i>crises</i>
criterio	<i>criterion</i>	»	<i>criteria</i>
dato	<i>datum</i>	»	<i>data</i>
emanación	<i>effluvium</i>	»	<i>effluvia</i>
emporio	<i>emporium</i>	»	<i>emporia</i>
errata	<i>erratum</i>	»	<i>errata</i>
foco	<i>focus</i>	»	<i>foci</i>
fórmula	<i>formula</i>	»	<i>formulae</i>
foro	<i>forum</i>	»	<i>fora</i>
hongo	<i>fungus</i>	»	<i>fungi</i>
genio	<i>genius</i>	»	<i>genii</i>
género	<i>genus</i>	»	<i>genera</i>
gimnasio	<i>gymnasium</i>	»	<i>gymnasia</i>
hipótesis	<i>hypothesis</i>	»	<i>hypotheses</i>
índice	<i>index</i>	»	<i>indices</i>
mausoleo	<i>mausoleum</i>	»	<i>mausolea</i>
medio	<i>medium</i>	»	<i>media</i>
nota	<i>memorandum</i>	»	<i>memoranda</i>
motor, ímpetu	<i>momentum</i>	»	<i>momenta</i>
nautilo	<i>nautilus</i>	»	<i>nautili</i>
oásis	<i>oasis</i>	»	<i>oases</i>
falange	<i>phalanx</i>	»	<i>phalanges</i>
fase	<i>phasis</i>	»	<i>phases</i>

fenómeno	<i>phenomenon</i>	»	<i>phenomena</i>
premio, prima	<i>premium</i>	»	<i> premia</i>
rádío	<i>radius</i>	»	<i>radii</i>
raíz	<i>radix</i>	»	<i>radices</i>
sarcófago	<i>sarcophagus</i>	»	<i>sarcophagi</i>
serafín	<i>seraph</i>	»	<i>seraphim</i>
estímulo	<i>stimulus</i>	»	<i>stimuli</i>
capa ó veta	<i>stratum</i>	»	<i>strata</i>
túmulo	<i>tumulus</i>	»	<i>tumuli</i>
vértice	<i>vertex</i>	»	<i>vertices</i>
vórtice	<i>vortex</i>	»	<i>vortices</i>

72. Los siguientes son completamente irregulares :

niño	<i>child</i>	plural	<i>children</i>
hermano	<i>brother</i>	»	<i>brethren</i> , estilo bíblico
calzones	<i>hose</i>	»	<i>hosen</i>
dado (para jugar)	<i>die</i>	»	<i>dice</i>
pie	<i>foot</i>	»	<i>feet</i>
ganso	<i>goose</i>	»	<i>geese</i>
piojo	<i>louse</i>	»	<i>lice</i>
ratón	<i>mouse</i>	»	<i>mice</i>
hombre	<i>man</i>	»	<i>men</i>
mujer	<i>woman</i>	»	<i>women</i>
buey	<i>ox</i>	»	<i>oxen</i>
penique (moneda)	<i>penny</i>	»	<i>pence</i>
diente	<i>tooth</i>	»	<i>teeth</i>

73. Algunos tienen la misma forma en plural que en singular :

reparación	<i>amends</i>	medio	<i>means (mins)</i>
cuerpo de ejército	<i>corps</i>	gente	<i>people</i>
disparidad	<i>odds</i>	serie	<i>series (siriiz)</i>
cuidados	<i>pains</i>	gallina silv.	<i>grouse</i>
ciervo	<i>deer</i>	portugues	<i>portuguese</i>
cerdo	<i>swine</i>	chino	<i>chinese (chainiz)</i>
noticia	<i>news</i>	carnero	<i>sheep</i>

74. Otros sólo se emplean en singular :

espárrago	<i>asparagus</i>	pelo	<i>hair (hèr)</i>
negocios	<i>business (bíznes)</i>	conocimiento	<i>knowledge (noledch)</i>
bálsamo	<i>balm (bam)</i>	saber	<i>learning</i>
encaje	<i>lace</i>	remordimiento	<i>remorse</i>
insensatez	<i>nonsense</i>	escombros	<i>rubbish</i>
progreso	<i>progress</i>	espinaca	<i>spinage</i>
cebada	<i>barley</i>	fuerza	<i>strength</i>
oscuridad	<i>darkness</i>	trigo	<i>wheat</i>
pila bautismal	<i>font</i>	riquezas	<i>wealth</i>

Él tiene muchos conocimientos. *He has much knowledge.*
 Usted ha dicho muchas insensateces. *You have told much nonsense.*

75. Hay otros que sólo se emplean en plural, como son principalmente los que designan objetos que se componen de dos ó tres partes:

acústica	<i>acoustics</i>	física	<i>physics</i>
limosna	<i>alms (amz)</i>	calenda	<i>calends</i>
ambajes	<i>ambages</i>	bandera	<i>colours</i>
ceniza	<i>ashes (ashiz)</i>	calzones	<i>drawers (dròærs)</i>
fuelle	<i>bellows</i>	heces	<i>dregs</i>
billar	<i>billiards</i>	riqueza	<i>riches (richiz)</i>
calzones	<i>breeches</i>	tijeras	<i>scissors</i>
entrañas	<i>entrails</i>	despabiladeras	<i>snuffers</i>
pulmones	<i>lungs</i>	corsé	<i>stays</i>
matemáticas	<i>mathematics</i>	tenazas	<i>tongs</i>
metafísica	<i>metaphysics</i>	pantalones	} <i>trousers</i> <i>pantaloons</i>
avena	<i>oats</i>		
óptica	<i>optics</i>		

<i>some</i>	algunos-as	bonito	<i>beautiful</i>
<i>bad</i>	malo-a-os-as	pais	<i>country</i>
<i>but (bæt)</i>	pero	caballo	<i>horse</i>
<i>because (bicòz)</i>	porque	aldea	<i>village</i>
<i>diligent</i>	aplicado	estudia	<i>(he) studies</i>
<i>how many?</i>	cuántos-as?	ganado	<i>gained</i>
<i>studied</i>	estudiado	caballería ó solda- dos de á caballo	} <i>horse (invar.)</i>
<i>What is the news?</i>	qué noticias hay?		
<i>this, este-a</i>	plur. <i>these</i>	juegan á los	<i>play at</i>
<i>head</i>	cabeza	producidos	<i>occasioned</i>
<i>christ</i>	Christo		

Tema 10.

Have the men my pence? They have some pence. The chinese have many oxen and the germans have many sheep. The Irish are good people, but the English are very bad people. Have the women many geese? They have many sheep and I have much pains. Your children have many pains, because they are very diligent. How

many children has your sister? She has two children. The business of the merchant is good. My brothers have studied mathematics. Have you seen the Scotchmen? I have seen the Spaniards and the Frenchmen. What is this? It is a louse; there are (*hay*) many lice in the head of the child. What animals are these? These are geese and mice. We are all (*todos*) children of the same (*mismo*) father, and we are all brethren in Christ. Have you the scissors? We have the snuffers and the tongs of the kitchen. Have they studied physics? They have studied optics, but they say much nonsense. These Englishmen have much wealth.

(Para corregir.)

These ladys have black hairs. Have you seen the swines of the Englishmans? I have seen the oxes of the portugueses and the sheeps of the germen. How many grouses has this woman? She have two grouses and my friends have many deers. We has made (*hecho*) many progress, but we say (*decimos*) many nonsense. Have the lady black tooths? She have small (*pequeños*) foots. The chinese womans have small foots and black hairs. Have the Englishmans many pennies? They has two pennies. Are you Spaniard? I am Frenchman. My brother is colonel and my cousin is merchant.

El fuelle de la cocina es bonito. La avena de este país es un buen alimento para los caballos. Tiene V. muchos cerdos? Tengo muchos bueyes, y las mujeres de la aldea tienen muchos gansos y algunas gallinas silvestres. Mi hermano estudia metafísica y hace (*makes*) muchos progresos. Los amanuenses han escrito una carta á las mujeres de la aldea. Son los carneros del comerciante buenos? Los carneros son buenos, pero los gamos son tambien buenos. Qué noticias hay? Los ingleses han ganado la batalla: tienen mucha infantería y mucha caballería, porque tienen muchas riquezas. Los niños juegan á los dados, y los amanuenses estudian matemáticas. Estos fenómenos son producidos por el poder llamado electricidad

(*by the power called electricity*). Son los portugueses buena gente? Los chinos son muy aplicados, pero los portugueses son mala gente. Tienen los portugueses muchos cerdos? Tienen muchos bueyes y nosotros tenemos muchos negocios.

LECCION XI.

GÉNERO DE LOS NOMBRES.

76. Son del género masculino los nombres que designan varon, animal macho, la especie entera de una clase de animales, y las ocupaciones ú oficios propios del hombre: hijo *son*, caballo *horse*, gallo *cock*, carpintero *carpenter*.

77. Son femeninos los que designan hembras y ocupaciones ú oficios de mujer: hija *daughter*, modista *milliner*, tia *aunt*, yegua *mare*, muchacha *girl*.

78. Son neutros los que designan cosas inanimadas, y los de animales cuyo sexo no se conoce ó no se determina: casa *house*, calle *street*, niño (en general) *child*.

79. El uso ha hecho masculinos ó femeninos un gran número de sustantivos de cosas inanimadas, con especialidad cuando están personificados ó tomados en sentido figurado: sol *sun*, m.; sueño *sleep*, m.; amor *love*, m.; luna *moon*, f.; tierra *earth*, f.; buque *ship*, f.; barco *boat*, f.; muerte *death*, masculino.

80. Muchos sustantivos que expresan oficios, dignidades y animales, forman el femenino agregándoles la terminacion *ess*:

<i>abbot</i>	abad	<i>abbess</i>	abadesa
<i>actor</i>	actor	<i>actress</i>	actriz
<i>adulterer</i>	adúltero	<i>adulteress</i>	adúltera
<i>ambassador</i>	embajador	<i>ambadressess</i>	embajadora
<i>arbiter</i>	árbitro	<i>arbitress</i>	arbitradora
<i>baron</i>	baron	<i>baroness</i>	baronesa

<i>benefactor</i>	bienhechor	<i>benefactress</i>	bienhechora
<i>cateler</i>	proveedor	<i>caterness</i>	proveedora
<i>conductor</i>	conductor	<i>conductress</i>	conductora
<i>count</i>	conde	<i>countess</i>	condesa
<i>duke</i>	duque	<i>duchess</i>	duquesa
<i>emperor</i>	emperador	<i>empress</i>	emperatriz
<i>enchanter</i>	encantador	<i>enchantress</i>	encantadora
<i>God</i>	Dios	<i>goddess</i>	diosa
<i>governor</i>	gobernador	<i>governess</i>	gobernadora
<i>heir</i>	heredero	<i>heiress</i>	heredera
<i>hunter</i>	cazador	<i>huntress</i>	cazadora
<i>host</i>	huésped	<i>hostess</i>	huésped
<i>jew</i>	judío	<i>jewess</i>	judía
<i>lion</i>	leon	<i>lioness</i>	leona
<i>mayor</i>	corregidor	<i>mayoress</i>	corregidora
<i>mediator</i>	mediador	<i>mediatress</i>	mediadora
<i>peer</i>	par (del reino)	<i>peeress</i>	esposa del par
<i>poet</i>	poeta	<i>poetess</i>	poetisa
<i>priest (prist)</i>	sacerdote	<i>priestess</i>	sacerdotisa
<i>prior (praier)</i>	prior	<i>prioress</i>	priora
<i>prince</i>	príncipe	<i>princess</i>	princesa
<i>protector</i>	protector	<i>protectress</i>	protectora
<i>shepherd</i>	pastor	<i>shepherdess</i>	pastora
<i>sorcerer</i>	hechicero	<i>sorceress</i>	hechicera
<i>sultan (saltan)</i>	sultan	<i>sultanness</i>	sultana
<i>tiger (taiger)</i>	tigre	<i>tigress</i>	tigre
<i>traitor (trèter)</i>	traidor	<i>traitress</i>	traidora
<i>tutor (tiüter)</i>	tutor	<i>tutress</i>	tutora
<i>viscount (vaicaunt)</i>	vizconde	<i>viscountess</i>	vizecondesa
<i>volary</i>	secretario	<i>votaress</i>	secretaria

81. Otros por la adición de la terminación *ix* y algunos designan el femenino con un vocablo enteramente distinto:

<i>testator</i>	testador	<i>testatrix</i>	testadora
<i>buck</i>	gamo	<i>doe</i>	gama
<i>bridegroom</i>	novio	<i>bride</i>	novia
<i>bull</i>	toro	<i>cow</i>	vaca
<i>cock</i>	gallo	<i>hen</i>	gallina
<i>king</i>	rey	<i>queen</i>	reina
<i>master</i>	amo, señorito	<i>mistress, miss</i>	ama, señorita
<i>widower</i>	viudo	<i>widow</i>	viuda
<i>wizard</i>	brujo	<i>witch</i>	bruja
<i>nephew</i>	sobrino	<i>niece</i>	sobrina
<i>son</i>	hijo	<i>daughter</i>	hija
<i>father-in-law</i>	suegro	<i>mother-in-law</i>	suegra
<i>uncle</i>	tio	<i>aunt</i>	tia

82. En muchos sustantivos se distingue el género antepo-

niendo, en algunos posponiendo, al nombre comun los siguientes vocablos distintivos :

1.º Para indicar nacionalidades, oficios ú ocupaciones, etc., de personas, *man* ó *male* macho, para el masculino, y *woman*, *female* ó *maid* hembra, para el femenino :

francés	<i>frenchman</i>	francesa	<i>frenchwoman</i>
criado	<i>man-servant</i>	criada	<i>maid-servant</i>
niño	<i>male-child</i>	niña	<i>female-child</i>
primo	<i>male-cousin</i>	prima	<i>female-cousin</i>

2.º Para los cuadrúpedos se usan los pronombres *he* él y *she* ella, y para las aves *cock* y *hen* respectivamente :

lobo	<i>he-wolf</i>	loba	<i>she-wolf</i>
canario	<i>cock-canary</i>	canaria	<i>hen-canary</i>
pavo real	<i>peacock</i>	pava real	<i>peahen</i>
pavo	<i>cock-turkey</i>	pava	<i>hen-turkey</i>

OBS. 16. En algunos nombres patronímicos se hace la distincion de género únicamente en el femenino :

húngaro	<i>hungarian</i>	fem.	<i>hungarian-woman</i>
americano	<i>american</i>	»	<i>american-woman</i>

OBS. 17. El nombre *female* se usa como distintivo del femenino en *female screw* tuerca, de *screw* tornillo.

OBS. 18. El uso no admite que se empleen en inglés los nombres de títulos en plural para designar los cónyuges que llevan el título ; así se dirá : los condes *the count and (the) countess*, los emperadores *the emperor and empress*.

83. La negacion *no* es en inglés *no* cuando precede á los sustantivos señor, etc., y *not* cuando acompaña á verbo :

No tiene V. mi sombrero?	<i>Have you not my hat?</i>
No, señor, no le tengo.	<i>No sir, I have it not.</i>

84. La negacion *not* se pone detras del objeto ó comple-

mento si es un pronombre personal, y delante si es sustantivo, *pero siempre detras* del verbo :

Yo no tengo el reloj.
Tiene V. mi cortaplumas?
No, señor, no le tengo.

*I have not the watch.
Have you my penknife?
No sir, I have it not.*

85. El acusativo va siempre detras del verbo, aunque sea pronombre :

Tienen VV. los cortaplumas?
No los tengo; ella los tiene.
Puede V entenderme?

*Have you the penknives?
I have them not, she has them.
Can you understand me?*

<i>bought</i>	comprado	quién?	<i>who?</i>
<i>orchard</i>	huerto	donde	<i>where</i>
<i>three</i>	tres	aquí	<i>here</i>
<i>excellent</i>	excelente	recibido	<i>received</i>
<i>sparrow</i>	gorrion	carta	<i>letter</i>
<i>went</i>	fueron	de su (de ella)	<i>from her</i>
<i>last night</i>	anoche	amable	<i>amiable</i>
<i>sold</i>	vendido	escrito	<i>written</i>
<i>theatre (ziater)</i>	teatro	silbado-s	<i>hissed</i>
<i>cook</i>	cocinero	cantan	<i>they sing</i>
<i>ugly</i>	feo	aplaudido-s	<i>applauded</i>
		mas..... que	<i>more..... than</i>

Tema 11.

Have you bought the dogs of the prince? The princess has bought the dogs and bitches. The he-cat and dogs are in the garden, but the she-cat and bitches are in the orchard. Our man-servant has many children. Have the merchants a she-goat? They have a he-goat, two hens and a cock-canary. My uncle has three sons and two daughters. This lady is a baroness. Have you seen the jew and the jewess? I have seen the count and the countess. He is an excellent actor, but she is also a great actress. My female-cousin has a buck-rabbit and the abbess has a cock-sparrow. Have you a man-servant? The countess has two maid-servants. Where has this man bought the dog and bitch-foxes? He has bought them in Paris. The emperor and empress went to the theatre last-night. Have you sold a horse? I have sold a mare and my cousin has sold two cows. The lion is more beautiful than the lioness.

(Para corregir.)

Who has the male canary? The cookess it has. Has your he-cousin my watch? My she-cousin has a beautiful watch. The male-peacock is beautiful, but the female turkey is ugly. Have the childs seen the male-ljon and the female-lion? Not, sir; they have seen the she-horse of the countes. Is this lady a barones? She is sorceres. Have you seen the kings? I have seen the barons; they are in ours gardens. Have the childs a she-dog? Not, sir, they has a she-cock. The she-buck is more beautiful than the he-buck. The american-man has many he-servants and a she-servant.

Tiene ella un criado? Nosotros tenemos un criado y dos criadas. Quién ha comprado la leona? Nosotros hemos comprado un pollino y una pollina y los ingleses han comprado una cabra. Los señores tienen muchas canarias y dos canarios. El príncipe y la princesa están aquí. Los niños han visto al duque y (á) la duquesa. La hija de mi tia es buena, pero la abadesa es tambien buena. Cuántos canarios tienen las señoras? Tienen dos canarios y tres canarias, y la americana tiene un pavo real. El baron y la baronesa son muy amables, pero los duques son tambien amables. Tiene V. gorriones hembras? Tengo algunas canarias. La princesa ha recibido una carta de su madre y yo he escrito una buena carta á mi prima. Los actores son silbados porque cantan muy mal (*bad*), y las actrices son aplaudidas porque son bonitas muchachas. ¿Cuántos criados tiene usted? Tengo dos criados y tres criadas. La condesa de York es nuestra protectora y el conde de Paris es mi protector. El tigre es más hermoso que la tigre.

LECCION XII.

EL GENITIVO DE POSESION.—NOMBRES COMPUESTOS.

86. La relacion de genitivo posesivo se puede expresar en inglés de dos maneras:

1.º Traduciendo nuestra preposicion *de* por *of*: esta forma es preferible cuando el nombre poseedor está en plural:

La casa de mi padre es grande.	<i>The house of my father is large.</i>
El rey respetó los derechos de la nacion.	<i>The king respected the rights of the nation.</i>

2.º Poniendo el poseedor delante de la cosa poseida con una *'s* apostrofada, si es singular, y apóstrofo solo si es plural ó el sustantivo acaba en *ss*, *s*, *ce*. Esta es la verdadera forma del genitivo posesivo en inglés, en la cual se suprime el artículo del objeto poseido. Le llamaremos genitivo de *inversion*.

Tiene V. el libro del vecino?	<i>Have you the neighbour's book?</i>
Tengo el de nuestro amigo.	<i>I have our friend's.</i>
Las túnicas de los frailes son negras.	<i>The monks' froks are black.</i>
Este hombre ha comprado las tierras del clero.	<i>This man has bought the clergy's lands.</i>
Por bondad; por conciencia.	<i>For goodnèss' sake; for conscience's sake.</i>
En el trascurso de una semana.	<i>In a week's time.</i>

Obs. 19. Esta forma se usa tambien para expresar la posesion de un objeto entre varios: uno de los palacios del rey, *a palace of the king's*—un palacio de los del rey.

87. No puede usarse el genitivo de inversion:

1.º Con los adjetivos empleados sustantivamente:

La felicidad del malvado es sólo pasajera.	<i>The happiness of the wicked is but transitory.</i>
--	---

2.º Con los sustantivos que acaban en *sh* ó *ch*:

Hemos visto los jardines de los ingleses.	<i>We have seen the gardens of the English.</i>
---	---

Y no puede decirse: *the wicked's happiness...* ni *the English's gardens*.

3.º Es tambien preferible la forma española cuando hay

varios genitivos seguidos que dependen el uno del otro: la hermana de la mujer de mi hermano, *my brother's wife's sister*, ó mejor *the sister of my brother's wife*, y áun mejor *my brother's sister-in-law*, la cuñada de mi hermano:

El caballo del amigo de mi hermano. *My brother's friend's horse*, ó mejor *the horse of my brother's friend*.

OBS. 20. Cuando el poseedor no es un sér personal ó capaz de verdadera posesion, es mejor emplear la forma española, y en muchos casos necesario, como cuando á un genitivo de esta clase se junta otro verdadero posesivo:

El pié de la mesa. *The leg of the table.*
El aceite de la lámpara de Juan. *The oil of John's lamp.*

OBS. 21. Cuando el poseedor está designado por un vocablo compuesto ó son varios los poseedores, debe ponerse el apóstrofo al último:

El heredero del rey Luis XIV. *The king Lewis the fourteenth's heir.*
El barco de Guillermo, de Juan y Enrique es grande. *William, John and Henry's boat is great.*

88. El genitivo que designa la materia de que una cosa está hecha se expresa poniendo primero el sustantivo de materia sin preposicion, como si fuese adjetivo. (Véase R. 65.)

Tiene V. la cuchara de plata? *Have you the silver spoon?*
Tengo los tenedores de plata. *I have the silver forks.*
Los muchachos tienen unas plumas de acero. *The boys have some steel pens.*

OBS. 22. Algunos nombres de materia toman la terminacion *en*. (V. R. 65.)

Mi hermano ha comprado una mesa de madera. *My brother has bought a wooden table.*

89. Una forma análoga, ó que más bien tiene el carácter

de *nombre compuesto*, se usa para expresar nuestra relacion de genitivo en los casos siguientes :

1.º Cuando el segundo nombre designa el empleo, oficio ó la clase del objeto significado por el otro, como *nightcap* gorro de noche ó de dormir, *schoolmaster* maestro de escuela, *chambermaid* doncella (muchacha de cámara), *sea-fish* pescado de mar, *river-fish* pescado de rio, *book-binder* encuadernador, *watch-maker* relojero.

La doncella ha comprado seda para coser. *The chambermaid has bought some sewing-silk.*

2.º Cuando el segundo nombre designa una parte ó es el continente ó contenido del primero : *house-door* puerta de la casa :

Cierra la puerta de la casa. *Shut the house-door.*
 He cerrado la ventana de mi cuarto. *I have shut my chamber-window.*
 Ha visto V. los bancos de la iglesia? *Have you seen the church-benches?*
 Dame ese vaso para vino. *Give me that wine-glass.*
 Tiene V. una taza para té? *Have you a tea-cup?*
 El vinatero tiene tazas para té. *The wine-seller has some tea-cups.*

90. Cuando en la expresion entra la vasija con el contenido, se emplea la forma española con *of*: un vaso de vino *a glass of wine*, una taza de té *a cup of tea*.

91. En el genitivo de inversion puede suprimirse el nombre del objeto poseido si se sobreentiende fácilmente : la casa de mi padre *my father's*, por *my father's house*; voy á casa de Juan *I go to John's*, por *I go to John's house*; estaba en la iglesia de San Pablo *he was at Saint Paul's*.

OBS. 23. En vez de nuestro *de* puede usarse en inglés *to* para designar el parentesco :

Es hermano del rey. *He is a brother to the king.*
 Ella es hermana del jardinero. *She is a sister to the gardener.*

<i>other</i>	otro	máquina	<i>machine</i>
<i>any</i>	unos-as	para coser	<i>sewing</i>
<i>from</i>	desde, de	piedra	<i>stone</i>
<i>ribbon</i>	cinta	para afilar	<i>grinding</i>
<i>her</i>	su (de ella)	paja	<i>straw (strò)</i>
<i>cat</i>	gato	cordon	<i>string</i>
<i>that</i>	ese-a	collar	<i>collar</i>
<i>who (hu)</i>	el cual	cadena	<i>chain</i>
<i>to exist</i>	existir	generosidad	<i>generosity</i>
<i>without</i>	sin	en el colegio	<i>at boarding-school</i>
<i>one</i>	uno-s	cómo hoy	<i>I dine to-day</i>
<i>duty (diuti)</i>	deber	en (casa de) at, si	<i>yes</i>

Tema 12.

Have you any good thread stockings? I have some pretty leather shoes, my father has some fine silver forks, and my mother has beautiful gold ribbons. I see from my chamber-window our friend's house. Are the church-benches beautiful? They are very ugly. Has our schoolmaster a nightcap? He has a penknife. The gardener's wife's son has seen the female neighbour's she-cat and her bitch also. Has that man's cousin sold his horse? He has sold his garden and orchard. This letter is from this woman's husband (*marido*), who is in Malaga. Your brother has bought a large kitchen-garden (*huerta*). I come from the queen's and I go to the minister's. The rights of a man cannot (*no pueden*) exist without the rights of the others; for (*pues*) the rights of the one constitute (*constituyen*) the duties of the others. In a month's time we shall have grapes (*tendremos uvas*). Have you bought the History of Alexander the Great? I have bought a gold watch for my schoolmaster.

(Para corregir.)

Have you bought a hat black? I have bought shoes of leather and spoons of silver. Has the chamber-maid bought a machine for sewing? She has bought a beautiful hat of straw. This man is a merchant very rich and he has two horses very beautiful. Has you my knives of silver? I have your mother's knives. Who has the History of England? I it have. Have you seen the house of the neighbour's? I have seen the palace of the baron's. The baroness's palace is very beautiful but the goddess's temple (*templo*) is more beautiful.

Tengo una excelente máquina para coser, y mi primo tiene una gran piedra de afilar. Tiene V. unas plumas de acero? Tengo algunos vasos de plata y algunas cintas de oro. Mi hermana ha comprado un bonito sombrero de paja, y yo he comprado un reloj de oro. El cortaplumas de mi padre es muy bonito; lo ha visto V.? No señor. Ha visto V. al amigo de mi padre? He visto (á) la amiga de su madre de V. y al padre de este pobre niño. Ha visto V. los jardines de los franceses? Sí; son muy bonitos, pero los jardines de Valencia son tambien muy hermosos. El cordon del collar del perro del vecino es una cadena de plata. La generosidad de la Reina de España es grande. Quién tiene un reloj de plata? El relojero tiene muchos relojes de plata. Los niños de mi hermana están en el colegio y yo como hoy en casa de mi tío. El marido de la hija del vecino es frances y el padre de esta Señora es inglés.

LECCION XIII.

DEL ADJETIVO.—EL PARTITIVO.

92. En inglés el adjetivo no varía en género ni número, y se coloca generalmente delante del nombre:

Vuestro amigo tiene un sombrero muy feo.	<i>Your friend has a very ugly hat.</i>
Su vecino de V. es un hombre muy honrado.	<i>Your neighbour is a very honest man.</i>
Conozco unas señoras ricas.	<i>I know some rich ladies.</i>

93. Cuando hay varios adjetivos seguidos, se puede suprimir la conjuncion y, *and*, que usamos en castellano:

Un libro largo y fastidioso.	<i>A long tedious (ó and tedious) book.</i>
------------------------------	---

94. El adjetivo se coloca detras del sustantivo en los casos siguientes:

1.º Cuando va seguido de un régimen que depende de él:

Un hombre cortés para con todo el mundo.	<i>A man polite to every body.</i>
Es un jóven fiel á su religion.	<i>He is a youth true to his religion.</i>



2.º Cuando el adjetivo es un título ó sobrenombre :

Alejandro Magno.
Luis el Atrevido.

Alexander the Great.
Lewis the Bold.

3.º Cuando califica á un sustantivo que es régimen inmediato de un verbo ; ó hablando con más propiedad, cuando es atributo del verbo *ser* que se sobreentiende :

El vicio hace al hombre (ser) desgraciado.

Vice makes man unhappy.

No hay nada (que sea) perfecto.

There is nothing perfect.

4.º Cuando varios adjetivos califican á un solo sustantivo, debiendo advertirse que hasta tres pueden ir delante :

Un hombre justo, sabio y caritativo.

A man just, wise and charitable.

OBS. 24. Los adjetivos *alone* solo, *alike* semejante, *enough* bastante, *afloat* flotante, *worth* digno, *alive* vivo, *afraid* asustado, *asleep* dormido y algun otro, se colocan detras del sustantivo :

Tengo bastantes uvas.
Mi amigo solo.

I have grapes enough.
My friend alone.

OBS. 25. Tambien en poesía y en el estilo elevado se pone el adjetivo detras del sustantivo para dar más fuerza á su significado: Bondad infinita! *Goodness infinite!*

95. Algunos adjetivos indefinidos tienen plural, pero irregular ; los demas son invariables ;

Mucho-a, *much* ó *a great deal*; plur., *many* ó *a great many*.
Muchísimo, *a great deal* (*very much*); plur., *a great many*.
Poco-a, *little*; plur., *few* ó *a few*, unos pocos.
Cuánto-a?, *how much?*; plur., *how many?*
Demasiado-a, *too much*; plur., *too many*.

OBS. 26. *Demasiado* delante de adjetivo es *too*:

Demasiado difícil.
Demasiado sincero.

Too difficult (*difficult*).
Too sincere (*sincere*).

96. Un adjetivo puede calificar á varios sustantivos sin que sea necesario repetirlo :

Un hombre y una mujer pequeños. *A little man and woman.*

97. PARTITIVO. En inglés hay un artículo partitivo semejante al francés *du, de la, des*, que se usa cuando el nombre no lleva en español ningun determinativo y está tomado en sentido general ó partitivo. Sus formas son : *SOME*, que se usa en la oracion afirmativa, y *ANY* en la negativa é interrogativa, aunque en ésta se usa á veces *some* :

Tienen VV. vino?	<i>Have you any wine?</i>
Tenemos cerveza.	<i>We have some ale.</i>
Mis hermanos tienen libros.	<i>My brothers have some books.</i>

Obs. 27. Como adjetivos ó pronombres indefinidos *some* y *any* significan unos-as, alguno-a-os-as :

Tengo unos zapatos y ella tiene algunos pañuelos. *I have some shoes and she has some handkerchiefs.*

A veces se sobreentiende este artículo :

Tiene V. tambien amigos? *Have you also friends?*

Obs. 28. El infinitivo inglés va precedido siempre de la partícula *to*.

PRESENTE DE INDICATIVO DE **to love**, AMAR.

amo	<i>I love</i>	amamos	<i>we love</i>
amas	<i>thou lovest</i>	amais	<i>you love</i>
ama	<i>he loves</i>	aman	<i>they love</i>

<i>leather</i>	cuero	<i>called</i>	llamado
<i>stocking</i>	media	<i>money</i>	dinero
<i>pretty</i>	lindo	<i>naughty</i>	malc
<i>second-hand</i>	de lance	<i>learned</i>	erudito
<i>mister, Mr.</i>	señor	<i>affable</i>	afable

<i>worthy</i>	digno-a	generoso	<i>generous</i>
<i>reward</i>	recompensa	inclinado	<i>inclined</i>
<i>to write</i>	escribir	estudio	<i>study</i>
<i>proud</i>	orgullosa	dedicado	<i>addicted</i>
<i>praise</i>	alabanza	desinteresado	<i>desinterested</i>
<i>nature</i>	naturaleza	pan	<i>bread</i>
qué?	<i>what?</i>	ahí tiene V.	<i>there you have</i>
tema	<i>task, theme.</i>	raro-os	<i>scarce</i>
fiel	<i>true, faithful</i>	gobierno domés.	<i>household</i>

Tema 13.

Have you any good thread stockings? I have some good thread stockings and some pretty leather shoes. Has mister King much business? He works a great deal. Has your cousin many books? He has not any books. Have you bought some flowers? I have bought some. Your sister is a very good child, and your brother is a man generous to his enemies, but your cousin is a naughty boy. This woman is a good mother; she has a very good son called Lewis. Have you many friends? A good many. Have you sold a great deal? A good deal. My neighbour is a man virtuous, learned and affable. Have you bought any second-hand books? A great deal. The queen gives money to the poor. She has done (*hecho*) an action worthy of reward. Our friend writes some letters to your father. We love our good mother and sister.

(Para corregir.)

Who is this lady? She is a woman proud, but her sister is an amiable to every body (*todo el mundo*) woman, and her husband is a worthy of praise man. Have you seen my blacks pencils? No, sir. There are (*hay*) not two alike things in nature. Our gardener has much flowers. How much dogs have you? I have much dogs. My father has drunk (*bebido*) a few wine. Have you enough bread? There you have any pretty books. What have you seen? We have seen our afraid brother. My aunt has given (*dado*) any bread to the sparrows. What have they good? They have any goods oxen and some bread excellent.

Mi padre tiene muchos carneros, pero pocos caballos. Cuántos caballos tiene su hermano de V.? Mi hermano no tiene caballos, pero tiene muchísimo vino. Cuánto dinero tiene su primo de V.? No tiene demasiado, pero tiene bastante. Tiene V. papel? Tengo papel y plumas. Mi primo ha comprado bonitos canarios, y mi prima tiene lindas canarias. Qué tiene la niña? Tiene un bonito sombrero de paja. Quién es ese hombre? Es un hombre generoso para con sus enemigos y fiel á sus amigos. Quién es ese niño? Es (*it is*) un niño inclinado al (*to*) estudio, y su hermana es una mujer dedicada al (*to*) gobierno doméstico. Un amigo fiel, sincero y desinteresado es un precioso tesoro. Tiene el niño bastante pan? Sí, señor; pero no tiene bastante vino. Ahí tiene V. buen papel, bonitas plumas y buena tinta. Estos temas son demasiado difíciles. Tiene V. buenos amigos? Tengo solo (*only*) algunos, porque los buenos amigos son raros.

LECCION XIV.

EMPLERO DE LOS ARTÍCULOS.

98. Debe ponerse el artículo *THE* delante de todo nombre que tenga una significacion determinada; es decir: 1.º Cuando va seguido de preposicion ó relativo; como

La reina de Inglaterra.	<i>The queen of England.</i>
El hombre con quien hablo.	<i>The man with whom I speak.</i>
Los pájaros que V. tiene son muy hermosos.	<i>The birds that you have are very handsome.</i>

2.º Delante de nombres que designan toda una nacion, una secta, una comunidad, ó toda una especie de animales: Los españoles son generosos, los italianos buenos músicos y los ingleses comerciantes, *the Spaniards are generous, the Italians are good musicians and the English merchants*. El buey es útil, el caballo ligero y el perro fiel, *the ox is useful, the horse light and the dog faithful*.

3.º Delante de adjetivos, principalmente en plural, usados

en lugar de un nombre, y de nombres propios empleados apelativamente ó para designar un sujeto análogo á otro: Murillo fué el Rafael de España, *Murillo was the Raphael of Spain*; los sabios son dichosos, *the wise are happy*; *the poor are sometimes as happy as the rich*, los pobres son algunas veces tan felices como los ricos.

4.º Los nombres de naciones siguientes: *The Havanna*, *the East-Indies* Indias Orientales, *the Philippine Islands*, *the Molucca Islands*, *the Antilles*, *the Palatinate*, *the Netherlands* ó *the Low Countries* Países-Bajos, *the Canary Islands* Canarias, *the Crimea* y algun otro. Pero nunca puede decirse *the England*, *the Spain*, etc.

99. No se usa el artículo: 1.º Con los nombres propios de personas, ciudades, países y provincias, ni con los títulos de personas, cuando acompañan al nombre propio, á no ser que vayan calificados ó determinados por un genitivo: la Magdalena *Magdalen*, la María *Mary*; *King James* el rey Jaime, *Doctor Gall* el Doctor Gall, *general Wellington* el general W. Pero se dirá:

El valiente general Blucher.
El sabio doctor Johnson.
El Ciceron de España.
Juan, tío de Isabel.

The valiant general Blucher.
The learned doctor Johnson.
The Cicero of Spain.
John, the uncle of Elisabeth.

The Emperor el Emperador, *the Czar*, *the Archduke* Archiduque, *the Princess* la Princesa, *the Marquis* Marqués, *the Dauphin* Delfin y sus femeninos, admiten siempre el artículo.

2.º Con los nombres tomados en sentido general, especialmente con los que designan virtudes, vicios, cualidades, ciencias, artes, metales y colores; se entiende, siempre que no vayan calificados por un adjetivo ó determinados por un genitivo: *sleep* el sueño, *indolence* la indolencia, *mankind* el género humano, *wealth* la riqueza:

La discordia es la ruina de los Estados.	<i>Discord is the ruin of States.</i>
La humildad es una noble virtud.	<i>Humility is a noble virtue.</i>
Prefiero el negro al verde.	<i>I prefer black to green.</i>
El hierro es más precioso que la plata.	<i>Iron is more precious than silver.</i>

3.º Con los nombres *church*, *school*, *college* colegio, *heaven* cielo, *earth* tierra, *paradise* paraíso, *hell* infierno, ni con *man*, *woman*, cuando designan la especie humana :

Hay mucha gente en la iglesia.	<i>There are many people at church.</i>
Tiene V. muchos alumnos en la escuela?	<i>Have you many pupils at school?</i>
Envío á mi hijo al colegio.	<i>I send my boy to college.</i>
Nuestro Señor está en el cielo.	<i>Our Lord is in heaven.</i>

100. No es necesario repetir el artículo delante de muchos nombres :

El padre, la madre y los hijos están aquí.	<i>The father, mother and children are here.</i>
Un niño, una mujer y un hombre han perecido.	<i>A child, woman and man have perished.</i>

101. INDEFINIDO. Detras del exclamativo qué *what*, se usa el indefinido *a* cuando le sigue sustantivo singular, y á veces se pone *a* delante del sustantivo y del adjetivo que le califica. Tambien suele usarse detras de *such* tal, semejante, *half* medio y *many*, poniendo el nombre en singular :

Qué bribon de criado!	<i>What a rogue of a servant!</i>
Qué magnífico fenómeno!	<i>What a magnificent phenomenon!</i>
Semejante conducta es insoponible.	<i>Such a conduct is insupportable.</i>
Media docena es bastante.	<i>Half a dozen is sufficient.</i>
Hay muchas flores en el jardín de mi tia.	<i>There is many a flower in the garden of my aunt.</i>

OBS. 29. Se repite el indefinido cuando con un nombre debe emplearse *a* y con otro *an* : *a grasshopper and an ant*, una cigarra y una hormiga.

102. Se emplea el indefinido tambien delante de un nombre que explica la palabra ó la idea precedente :

Fué colgado ; justo castigo de sus crímenes. *He was hanged ; a just punishment for his crimes.*
 Juan, hijo de mi hermana. *John, a son of my sister.*

Nota. Aun se darán á conocer otros usos del indefinido *a* al tratar de los numerales (Lecciones XVIII, XIX).

<i>Mistress, Mrs.</i>	(pr. <i>mistris</i>) Sra.	<i>where?</i>	dónde?
<i>tyran</i>	tirano	<i>beauteous wonder</i>	hermosa mara-
<i>only</i>	único, solo	<i>to live</i>	vivir [villa
<i>liberty</i>	libertad	<i>ganado</i>	<i>won</i>
<i>infant</i>	infante	<i>amarillo</i>	<i>yellow</i>
<i>I like</i>	me gusta	<i>parte</i>	<i>part</i>
<i>salt</i>	sal	<i>rojo</i>	<i>red</i>
<i>pepper</i>	pimienta	<i>mundo</i>	<i>world</i>
<i>meat</i>	carne	<i>patriota</i>	<i>patricte</i>
<i>greater than</i>	mayor que	<i>bruja</i>	<i>fright (frait)</i>
<i>the most</i>	el más	<i>esperar</i>	<i>to expect</i>
<i>physician</i>	médico	<i>Córcega</i>	<i>Corsica</i>
<i>is exhibited</i>	se manifiesta	<i>isla</i>	<i>island (ailand)</i>
<i>prevent</i>	retienen	<i>Mediterráneo</i>	<i>Mediterranean</i>
<i>rising</i>	salida		<i>(Mediterranean)</i>

Tema 14.

Vice is the only true tyran of man, and virtue is his only true liberty. Have you seen the king, queen and prince? I have seen the princess and infants in the Prado. Good children are the happiness of parents. Have you eaten (*comido*) too much? I have not eaten enough. I like salt and pepper with the meat. In life the happiness of the rich is not much greater than the happiness of the poor. The good father (*que*) we have in Heaven loves all his children. Have you been at church? Yes, sir. Iron is very useful; it is more useful than silver; it is the most useful of all (*todos*) metals. What is that gentleman? He is a physician. Mrs. Johnson is a very modest woman and she has very good children. Where is your father? My father lives in the Palatinate and my sister lives in the West-Indies. Industry is the road to (*el camino para*) wealth, and virtue to happiness. Wine is the juice of grapes.

(Para corregir.)

Learned doctor Johnson is a good physician, but the king James is also a good man. Mediterranean is greater than Baltic. Princess Helena was (*era*) a beautiful woman, but she was not good. Salomon, son of David, was a great king. How many pens will you have (*quiere usted?*). Half dozen is sufficient. I have seen a grasshopper and ant in the garden. What magnificent phenomenon is every day (*todos los días*) exhibited in the rising of the sun! But how common (*frecuente*) is the observation that (*que*) indolence and the love of the sleep prevent a great part of mankind from contemplating (*de contemplar*) this beautiful wonder of the creation!

El general O'Donnell ha ganado la batalla. Qué hombre (*tan*) virtuoso es D. Juan! Qué bribon de criado tiene V.! es protestante ó católico? Es judío. El verde es más estimado que el rojo, y el rojo más que el amarillo. La tierra es una pequeña parte del mundo. Ya usted á la iglesia? Voy á la escuela. Vaya V. (*go*) al infierno. El general Mina fué (*was*) un excelente patriota y un buen amigo. Qué bello (*fine*) animal! Ha comprado V. este hermoso caballo? No señor. Los Países-Bajos son un hermoso país, y París es también una hermosa ciudad. La mujer es la amiga y la madre del hombre, los perros son también los amigos (*sing.*) del hombre, pero los gatos y los perros no son (*are not*) amigos unos de otros (*to each other*). Qué bruja de mujer! Qué recompensa podemos (*can we*) esperar? Ellos esperan una gran recompensa, porque esta mujer ama á sus hijos muchísimo. El gran Napoleon era natural (*native*) de Córcega, isla del Mediterráneo. El padre, la madre y los niños están en el jardín.

LECCION XV.

COMPARATIVO DE IGUALDAD.—DIMINUTIVOS Y AUMENTATIVOS.

103. Hay en inglés los mismos grados de comparación que en castellano: *de igualdad, de superioridad y de inferioridad.*

104. El de igualdad se forma traduciendo los vocablos españoles *tan*, *tanto*, etc., por otros equivalentes en inglés, del modo siguiente: tan AS, como AS :

Es V. tan rico como él? *Are you as rich as he?*

105. Si la frase es negativa, el *tan* se traduce por *so* :

No soy tan virtuoso como ella. *I am not so virtuous as she.*
Guillermo no es tan aplicado como Juan. *William is not so diligent as John.*

106. Si la comparacion se hace entre sustantivos ó verbos, se traducen: tanto-a, por *as much* ó *so much*; tantos-as, por *as many* ó *so many*, segun que la oracion sea afirmativa ó negativa, y el como por AS, como en el caso anterior:

Tiene V. tanto dinero como su hermana? *Have you as much money as your sister?*
No tengo tanto como ella. *I have not so much as she.*
No tiene tantos lápices como plumas. *He has not so many pencils as pens.*
Escribo tanto como mi primo. *I write as much as my cousin.*

107. *Tan*, *tanto-a-os-as*, se traducen respectivamente por *so*, *so much*, *so many* en exageraciones ó ponderaciones, es decir, cuando no hay comparacion de un objeto con otro :

Hay tanta gente boba! *There are so many foolish people!*
Esta señorita es tan amable! *This young lady is so kind!*
Tenemos tantas cosas que hacer. *We have so many things to do.*
Es tan malo que todo el mundo le teme. *He is so wicked that every body fears him.*

Obs. 30. Despues de *as* se puede suprimir el pronombre *it*: como es moda, *as is the fashion*, en vez de *as it is the fashion*.

108. *Importante*. La interrogacion y negacion se forman en inglés de una manera muy extraña con los verbos *no-auxiliares* ni semi-auxiliares.

La interrogacion se forma por medio del auxiliar *to do* ha-

cer, pretérito *did*, detras del cual se coloca siempre el sujeto y el infinitivo del verbo que en castellano conjugamos. La negacion se expresa con el mismo auxiliar, pero poniendo delante del *do* el sujeto, detras *not* y en seguida el infinitivo del verbo :

Aprende V. el aleman?	<i>Do you learn german?</i>
Lo aprendo, pero no lo hablo.	<i>I learn it, but I do not speak it.</i>
No comprende V. el inglés?	<i>Do you not understand English?</i>
No entiendo lo que dice ese hombre.	<i>I do not understand what that man says.</i>
Compró V. un par de guantes?	<i>Did you buy a pair of gloves?</i>

109. En todas estas formas interrogativa, negativa y afirmativa se usa mucho en inglés una locucion compuesta del verbo *to be* estar, y del gerundio del verbo de la oracion, para denotar que la accion se está ejecutando ó se va á ejecutar dentro de un espacio de tiempo breve.

La interrogacion en este caso se forma como en castellano, poniendo el sujeto detras del auxiliar *to be*, y el mismo lugar ocupa la negacion :

Está V. escribiendo una carta?	<i>Are you writing a letter?</i>
Está leyendo un libro.	<i>He is reading a book.</i>
Qué vamos á hacer ahora?	<i>What are we going to do now?</i>
Vamos á jugar una partida de ajedrez.	<i>We are going to have a game at chess.</i>

110. Los *diminutivos* se forman anteponiendo al sustantivo los adjetivos *small* ó *little* pequeño; este último usado principalmente con nombres de seres racionales, y los aumentativos, anteponiendo al sustantivo *great* ó *large* grande, ó *big* gordo, grueso; *large* para indicar dimensiones de longitud y latitud y *big* de gordura:

Mi hermanito ha escrito una carta.	<i>My little brother has written a letter.</i>
Carlitos es muy feliz.	<i>Little Charles is very happy.</i>

111. Aunque todo verbo necesita un sujeto expresado (Re-

gla 68), éste puede omitirse cuando hay varios seguidos con el mismo sujeto, bastando expresarlo con el primero :

No reza V. y oye misa antes de almorzar?	<i>Do you not pray and hear mass before you breakfast?</i>
Rezo ántes de vestirme, y me visto ántes de leer.	<i>I pray before I dress, and dress before reading.</i>

<i>that</i>	que	<i>no more</i>	ya no
<i>going</i>	yendo	<i>hot</i>	caliente
<i>home</i>	á casa	<i>to make</i>	hacer
<i>exercise</i>	ejercicio	<i>to read</i>	leer
<i>well</i>	bien	<i>pleasure</i>	placer
<i>to know</i>	conocer, saber	<i>Henrietta</i>	Enriqueta
<i>skilful</i>	hábil	cosa	<i>thing</i>
<i>often</i>	á menudo	no podemos	<i>we cannot (sin to)</i>
<i>to wish</i>	desear	salir	<i>to go out</i>
<i>gentleman</i>	caballero	sujeto	<i>subject</i>
<i>novel</i>	novela	enfermedad	<i>infirmity</i>
<i>madam</i>	(pr. <i>ma'am</i>) Sra.	discípulo	<i>pupil</i>
<i>active</i>	activo	para, por	<i>for</i>
<i>lively</i>	vivo	palabra	<i>word</i>

Tema 15.

Where are you going now? I am going home. William has written as many exercises as his brother: this letter is not well written; it is not so well written as your sister's. Do you know this gentleman? Yes, madam; he is so kind and so good! Are your servants good? Yes, but they are not so active as these children. This child is very lively, but his sister is not so lively. Madrid is not so hot as Seville. My son has as many books as his cousin, but he does not make so much progress in his studies as he. Has not the one so many teachers as the other? Yes, sir; but the one is not so diligent as the other. He reads so much as I, but he has not so good books as I have. Have you any English books? I have so many and so good ones, that I do not know which (*cuales*) to read: this novel has given (*causado*) much pleasure to the little Henrietta: this young lady was always (*siempre*) modest and virtuous. Little Charles was formerly (*ántes*) very happy; but now he is a big man, and therefore (*por eso*) he is no more happy.

(Para corregir.)

Little John is so tall as his sister and so skilful as his brother, but he is not as good as my son. The king Charles was so great as his father. Does he speak so much as I? He speaks so much as you. This gentleman is as prudent that I often consult him (*le consulto*); but his daughter is not as modest as my female cousin. Buy you a dozen of handkerchiefs? I buy not a dozen of handkerchiefs. Has this man so many friends as enemies? I know not. Wishes your neighbour to buy some gloves? He wishes not to buy them (*los*). What wish you to make? I know not. Wishes the schoolmaster to drink some ale (*cerveza*)? He wishes not to drink any.

Tiene V. tantas cosas buenas como él? No lo sé. Tenemos tantas cosas que hacer, que no podemos salir. No escribe V. tanto como estos niños? No escribo tanto como ellos. No tiene V. tanto dinero como mi hermano? No tengo tanto dinero como su hermano de V., pero tengo tantos libros como él. El hombre no está tan sujeto á enfermedades como la mujer. Tiene V. tantos discípulos como el señor King? No tengo tantos discípulos como el señor King. Lee el niño tanto como la niña? Lee tanto como ella. Mi padre ha comprado un caballito para los niños. Está V. escribiendo una carta? Escribo una carta á mi padre y otra (*another*) á mi hermanita. Entiende V. mis palabras? No, señor; V. no habla bien. Conoce V. á esta señorita? Sí, señor; es tan linda que todo el mundo la admira (*admires her*). Carlitos no tiene tantos libros como su (*his*) primo, porque (*because*) no es tan aplicado como él, y porque su padre no tiene tanto dinero como el padre de Juan.

LECCION XVI.

COMPARATIVO DE SUPERIORIDAD É INFERIORIDAD.
SUPERLATIVO.

112. El comparativo de superioridad se forma, con adjetivos que no pasen de dos sílabas, añadiéndoles ER ó R solamente si el adjetivo termina en *e*.

El *que* castellano se traduce en todos los casos de comparativo de superioridad ó inferioridad por THAN: *tall* alto, *tall-er* más alto; *fine* bonito, *fine-r* más bonito:

El sol es más grande que la luna. *The sun is larger than the moon.*
 Esas muchachas son más altas que sus hermanas de V. *Those girls are taller than your sisters.*

113. Si el adjetivo termina en *y* precedida de consonante, se cambia ésta en *i*, y si acaba en una consonante precedida de una sola vocal, se dobla la consonante, agregándole luego *er*: feliz *happy*, más feliz *happi-er*; temprano *early*, más temprano *earlier*; gordo *big*, cp. *bigg-er*.

Mi cortaplumas es más bonito que el de V. *My penknife is prettier than yours.*

114. Con participios, con adjetivos de más de dos sílabas y con sustantivos ó verbos se forma este comparativo traduciendo el *más* por MORE: *learned* instruido, *more learned*, más instruido; *perfect* perfecto, cp. *more perfect*:

Pedro es más instruido que Juan. *Peter is more learned than John.*
 Es más hermosa que su hermana, pero su hermana es más hacendosa que ella. *She is more beautiful than her sister, but her sister is more industrious than she.*

OBS. 31. Los adjetivos acabados en *ain*, *al*, *ed*, *ent*, *ful*, *id*, *ing*, *ive*, *less*, *ous*, *some*, forman el comparativo y superlativo con *more* y *most*, aunque sólo tengan dos sílabas: *certain* cierto, *wretched* miserable, *recent* reciente, *trifling* frívolo, hacen *more certain*, *the most wretched*, *the most trifling things* las cosas más frívolas, etc.

115. El comparativo de inferioridad se forma traduciendo el *ménos* por LESS y el *que* por THAN:

Tengo ménos pan que V. *I have less bread than you.*
 La violeta es ménos brillante que la rosa. *The violet is less brilliant than the rose.*
 Es ménos prudente que su padre. *He is less prudent than his father.*

116. El *superlativo* relativo se forma, con adjetivos que no pasen de dos sílabas, agregándoles *est* ó *st* en los mismos casos y verificándose los mismos cambios que en el comparativo de superioridad (R. 112 y 113); pero si el adjetivo tiene más de dos sílabas ó es participio, se le antepone *the most*.

La preposicion *de* se traduce por *of*, ménos cuando va seguida de un nombre de lugar, en cuyo caso se traduce por *in*:

Es el más noble del reino.	<i>He is the noblest in the kingdom.</i>
Es el más valiente del ejército.	<i>He is the bravest in the army.</i>
El más afortunado de los hombres tiene algun pesar.	<i>The most fortunate of men has some grief.</i>

117. El *superlativo* absoluto se expresa anteponiendo al positivo el adverbio *very* muy, ú otro equivalente. Este mismo adverbio corresponde á la terminacion *ísimo*. Sin embargo, para expresar títulos como Excelentísimo, etc., se emplea *the most* con el adjetivo positivo, y si el superlativo se forma de un participio, se expresa el *muy* ó *ísimo* castellano por *much* ó *very much*:

Mi tío es riquísimo y yo soy muy pobre.	<i>My uncle is very rich and I am very poor.</i>
El Excmo. Sr. Duque de York.	<i>The most Excellent Duke of York.</i>
Le estoy á V. reconocidísimo.	<i>I am very much obliged to you.</i>
El Eminentísimo Sr. Arzobispo.	<i>His Lordship the Archbishop.</i>

OBS. 32. En el estilo familiar se usa *very* ántes del superlativo para dar más fuerza á su significacion: *he is my very best friend*, es ciertamente mi mejor amigo.

118. El vocablo *mucho* ó *con mucho*, que suele acompañar á comparativo, se traduce por *by far*, y *by* se pone tambien delante de una cantidad en que una cosa excede á otra:

Este caballero es mucho más alto que yo.	<i>This gentleman is taller than I by far.</i>
Mi primo tiene diez años más que yo.	<i>My cousin is older than I by ten years.</i>

119. Cuando en castellano usamos el superlativo para comparar dos objetos, se usa en inglés el comparativo con *the*:

Quién es más joven, V. ó su cuñado? *Who is the younger, you or your brother-in-law?*
 Él es el más fuerte de los dos. *He is the stronger of the two.*

OBS. 33. *Más de* se dice *more than*: el zapatero tiene más de cincuenta duros, *the shoemaker has more than fifty dollars.*

<i>grain</i>	grano	<i>tailor</i>	sastre
<i>sand</i>	arena	<i>both</i>	ambos
<i>Europe (yiwóp)</i>	Europa	<i>lost</i>	perdido
<i>always</i>	siempre	<i>qual</i>	<i>which</i>
<i>contented</i>	contento	<i>familia</i>	<i>family</i>
<i>mare</i>	yegua	<i>fino</i>	<i>polite</i>
<i>kitten</i>	gatito	<i>honrado</i>	<i>honest</i> (prec. al sust.)
<i>sharp claw</i>	uña afilada	<i>real</i>	<i>rial (raíal)</i>
<i>nail</i>	uña	<i>queso</i>	<i>cheese</i>

Tema 16.

How much bigger is the earth than a grain of sand? I do not know it. Rothschild is much richer than I; he is the richest man in Europe. Is he happier than a poor man? The richest man is not always the happiest. Our horse is bigger than your mare. The kitten has very sharp claws and I have very long nails, as is the fashion. Have they money enough? The son and the daughter of my neighbour have more money than you; they are richer than I. Virtué is more precious than riches. This hat is prettier than thine (*el tuyo*); it is the prettiest of my hats. Is your neighbour richer than our tailor? Our neighbour is very poor, but this shoemaker is the poorest in the town. Our children are more sensible than yours (*los de V.*); they are the most sensible of all. Do you love this girl more than your son? I love both. My hat is much better than my neighbour's, but his (*el suyo*) is by far the best. How many dogs has the shepherd? He has fewer dogs than you. The most Excellent Duke of Norfolk is very rich, but his Lordship the archbishop of Dublin is very poor; he is by far the poorest of all our friends.

(Para corregir.)

My cousin is younger than your brother. Have you more money than I? I have lost more of fifty rials, but my uncle has won more of fifty dollars. Is his aunt very rich? She is more rich than you; she is the most rich woman of the town. The dog is faithfuler than the cat; my friend has a much faithful dog. Have you a large house? Yes; our house is more large than the duke's palace. Do you love this man? Yes; I am very obliged to him (*á él*). This woman is always contented; she is contenteder than our female neighbour who is very rich. Are you happy in this house? I am happier than my brothers. Is he a big man? Yes, he is bigger than you.

Quién es este señor? Es el más noble de la ciudad. Lee V. tan á menudo como yo? Leo más á menudo que V.Cuál de sus tres hermanos es el más alto? Mi hermana es más jóven que yo; ella es la más jóven de la familia. Tiene V. muchos libros? Tengo más libros que su hermano de V., pero él tiene mucho más dinero que yo. Cárlos es más aplicado que su primo; es el más aplicado de todos (*all*) mis hijos. Son estos hombres muy finos? Son más finos que V. El pastor de mi tio tiene un perrillo que (*which*) es más fiel que el de su jardinero de V. Ha comprado V. una casa? La casa que (*which*) he comprado es más grande que el palacio del duque. Tome V. (*take*) un poco (*de*) pan y queso. Cuánto dinero tiene V.? Tengo más de 50 reales. Tiene V. tanto vino como queso? Tengo ménos queso que vino, pero tengo más pan que V. Es el comerciante muy rico? Sí; es el hombre más rico de la ciudad.

LECCION XVII.

COMPARATIVOS Y SUPERLATIVOS IRREGULARES.—TÍTULOS.

120. Las expresiones *cuanto más..... tanto más ó tanto ménos*, etc., se expresan en inglés traduciendo el *cuanto*, *tanto*, por el artículo *the*, y *más*, *ménos*, como queda dicho:

Cuanto más largo es el día tanto más corta es la noche.	<i>The longer the day is the shorter the night is.</i>
Cuanto más instruido es, es menos orgulloso.	<i>The more knowledge he has, the less proud he is.</i>
Cuanto menos estudiamos menos aprendemos.	<i>The less we study the less we learn.</i>

121. Las expresiones *cada vez más ó más y más*, etc., se designan repitiendo el comparativo con *and*:

Se hace cada vez más rico.	<i>He grows richer and richer.</i>
Va siendo cada vez más cuidadoso.	<i>He becomes more and more careful.</i>
Se va haciendo cada vez menos obediente.	<i>He becomes less and less obedient.</i>

122. Los siguientes adjetivos y adverbios tienen irregular el comparativo y superlativo ó uno de los dos.

POSITIVO.		COMPARATIVO.		SUPERLATIVO.			
<i>good</i> ,	bueno	<i>better</i> ,	mejor	<i>the best</i> ,	el mejor		
<i>well</i> ,	bien	<i>better</i> ,	mejor	<i>the best</i> ,	lo mejor		
<i>bad</i> ,	malo	<i>worse</i> ,	peor	<i>the worst</i> ,	el, lo peor		
<i>little</i> ,	poco	<i>less</i> ,	ménos	<i>the least</i> ,	el, lo ménos		
<i>much</i> ,	mucho-a	{	<i>more</i> ,	<i>the most</i> ,	{	la mayor parte	
<i>many</i> ,	muchos-as		más	lo más			
<i>far</i> ,	léjos	{	<i>farther</i> ,	<i>the farthest</i> ,	{	lo más léjos	
<i>late</i> ,	tarde	{	<i>later</i> ,	<i>latest</i> ,	{	el más tarde	
		{	<i>latter</i> ,	<i>last</i> ,	{	el último	
<i>old</i> ,	viejo	{	<i>older</i> ,	{	<i>oldest</i> ,	{	muy viejo
		{	<i>elder</i> ,		<i>eldest</i> ,		
<i>near</i> ,	cerca	{	<i>nearer</i> ,	{	<i>the nearest</i> ,	{	el más cerca
					<i>the next</i> ,		

123. Hay varios adjetivos que por su significación no son susceptibles de comparación, como *true* verdadero, *extreme* extremo, *universal* id., etc.

Otros terminan en *most* y tienen significación de superlativos: *utmost* sumo, *inmost* íntimo, *outmost* extremo, *undermost* lo más abajo, *foremost* lo más adelante.

124. El adjetivo inglés nunca se emplea sustantivamente en singular, debiendo ir siempre acompañado de un sustantivo:

el pobre *the poor man*, el justo *the just man*; pero en plural se dirá *the brave* los valientes, *the poor* los pobres, *the wise* los sabios, etc.

125. Como consecuencia de la regla anterior, debe emplearse *one* ó *man*, etc., con adjetivos que hagan referencia á sustantivos sobreentendidos ó ya nombrados:

El vicio hace odioso.
Tiene V. un buen caballo?
Tengo cinco buenos.

Vice renders one odious.
Have you a good horse?
I have five good ones.

126. TÍTULOS. Las palabras *Mister*, *Mr.* Señor Don, *Master* Don (señorito), *Mistress*, *Mrs.* Señora, *Miss* Señorita, acompañan al nombre de la persona, y no llevan nunca artículo en inglés sino cuando acompañan á nombres en plural: el Señor Juan *Mr. John*, la Sra. Wilson *Mrs. Wilson*, la señorita Ana *Miss Anna*. Pero *Sir* Señor y *Madam* (*Ma'am*) Señora, se usan cuando uno se dirige á una persona sin nombrarla:

Está la señorita Johnson en casa? *Is Miss Johnson at home?*
La señora Roberts está en casa. *Mrs. Roberts is at home.*

I beg your pardon, *Miss*, dispense V., señorita; donde se usa *Miss* porque se sobreentiende el nombre; las de Sancho, *the Miss Sancho*; los señoritos Juan y Guillermo, *Masters John and William*; Dios Nuestro Señor, *God our Lord*; Su Excelencia, el Excmo. Sr., *his Lordship*.

Madam se usa tambien delante de nombres de señoras con títulos, como condesas, etc. Refiriéndose á las mismas se usa *your ladyship*, Su Señoría.

Pero á los duques y arzobispos se les da el tratamiento *your grace*, y tratándose de sus señoras puede tambien usarse *your ladyship*, y decirse *lady Harriot*, etc., como á las baronesas.

A los hijos menores de duques y marqueses suele darse el título *Lord*; *Lord William*.

A los príncipes, incluso el heredero, se les llama *Sir*; y en tercera persona *royal highness*, Su A. R.

127. Dichos títulos no deben usarse en inglés delante de los posesivos ó nombres de dignidades, títulos, etc.:

Está su señor padre en casa?	<i>Is your father at home?</i>
Dónde está su señora madre?	<i>Where is your mother?</i>
Cómo está su señorita hermana?	<i>How is your sister?</i>
Espero al Sr. Duque.	<i>I wait for the Duke.</i>

128. Las palabras *gentleman* ó *sir* caballero, *lady* señora, *young lady* señorita, se usan cuando no acompañan á nombre: Está la señorita en el jardín? *is the young lady in the garden?* Veo sólo un caballero en el jardín, *I see only a gentleman in the garden.* Dispense V., caballero, *I beg your pardon, sir.* Éste se usa también con nombres de personas de dignidad ó que tienen título de Baron: *Sir Robert Peel*; y *lady* con los de sus señoras.

El vocablo *Esquire* (*Esqr.*) se usa principalmente en sobres de cartas, detras del nombre de la persona: *Mr. L. Campos, Esqr.* Sr. D. Lorenzo Campos.

<i>yesterday</i>	ayer	Enrique	<i>Henry</i>
<i>to-day</i>	hoy	en casa	<i>at home</i>
<i>to be glad</i>	alegrarse	obra	<i>work</i>
<i>rather</i>	bastante	cosecha	<i>crop</i>
<i>to hear</i>	oir	garbanzo	<i>chick-pea</i>
<i>fair</i>	hermoso-a	tanto mejor	<i>so much the better</i>
<i>shall I give</i>	daré	holgazan	<i>lazy</i>
<i>to spend</i>	gastar	el mio	<i>mine</i>
<i>mountain</i>	montaña	les doy	<i>I give them</i>
<i>white</i>	blanco	trabajador	<i>workman</i>

Tema 17.

Have you anything better for my son? This ribbon is better for you. My brother's child is very young; he is not yet a boy; he is younger than your cousin's son. Do you know this gentleman? Yes;

he is so kind and so good. Is he better and kinder than his brother? He is much kinder. This town is very good but it is a smaller one than Madrid. How are you to-day? I am worse than yesterday. How is Miss Jane? She is rather better. I am very glad to hear it. I am stronger than you, but my brother is the strongest of the three. Miss Helen is one of the fairest of women; and she is as good as she is fair. How many times have you lost your book? I have lost it but (*solamente*) once. The more books you lose, the fewer things shall I give you. Is it better to study than to play? It is worse to play than to study. The more we love God, the more perfect we are. Who is the more learned; his uncle or you? I am less learned than he. The less money he has, the more he wishes to spend. Have you seen this gentleman? I have seen the Messieurs Stuart. Do you know Mr. Terol? Yes, Sir; he is one of my best pupils. Mr. Lalloz has studied very well his lesson; he is a very diligent young man.

(Para corregir.)

Who are those ladys? This is Mr. Ninon, and that is the daughter of Mrs. John. Does your sister speak as good as my brother? Yes. Is your wine as good as my cider? It is more good. Does your merchant sell (*vende*) good pencils? He sells the goodest pencils that (*que*) I know. Is your hat as bad as my brother's? It is more good, but the hat of my sister is bader. Does the boy read as good as you? He reads gooder than I. Is your horse bader than the mare of my uncle? It is not so bad as the mare of your uncle: but mine (*el mio*) is the worst horse that I know. The very excellent Duke of Osuna is very rich, but the very excellent Archbishop of Dublin is very poor. Who is this Mistress? Madam Wilson. No; she is the Lady Harriot.

Cuál de las montañas de Europa es la más alta? Es el Monte Blanco. Es este el Sr. Jones? No, señora, es D. Enrique. Dónde está su señor hermano? Está en casa. El leon es fortísimo; es el más fuerte de todos los (*all*) animales. Esa es una casa grande; es más grande que el palacio del duque; es la más grande de la ciudad. De todos estos

niños el más malo es el señorito Enrique. Un hombre honrado es la mejor obra de Dios. Quién es más sabio, V. ó su hermano de V.? Mi hermano es más sabio que yo; él es el más sabio de la casa. Cuanto más estudia un niño (*subj. primero*), tanto más aprende, y cuanto menos estudia, tanto menos sabe. La cosecha de garbanzos ha sido muy buena este año: tanto mejor para los pobres. Ha escrito V. los temas? No, señor; son muy difíciles. Yo creo que V. es un niño muy holgazán. Cuántos sombreros ha comprado V.? He comprado cinco buenos y dos malos. La señora Wilson es una mujer muy modesta, pero la señorita Álvarez es más modesta y más amable que ella. Ha visto V. (á) esos caballeros? He visto á los Sres. Noel, hermanos. Vende su comerciante de V. buenos lápices? Vende los mejores lápices que yo conozco (*that I know*). Es su caballo de V. peor que el mio? Es peor; es el peor caballo que yo conozco. Da V. (á) estos hombres menos pan que queso? Les doy más pan que queso. Escriben los estudiantes más que nosotros? Escriben menos que nosotros, pero los trabajadores escriben lo menos.

LECCION XVIII.

NÚMEROS CARDINALES.—PRECIO.—MEDIDAS.—HORAS.

128. Los números 16 á 19 se forman agregando á la unidad *teen* diez (por *ten*), y las decenas de 20 á 90 añadiendo á la misma unidad *ty*, que es igualmente una modificacion de *ten*: *sixteen* 16 = seis y diez; *thirty* 30 = tres por diez. En *twenty*, *thirty*, *forty* y *fifty* ha sufrido una ligera modificacion la unidad y estan por *two*, *three*, etc.

Números cardinales.—Cardinal numbers.

1, <i>one</i>	7, <i>seven</i>	13, <i>thirteen</i>
2, <i>two</i>	8, <i>eight</i>	14, <i>fourteen</i>
3, <i>three</i>	9, <i>nine</i>	15, <i>fifteen</i>
4, <i>four</i>	10, <i>ten</i>	16, <i>sixteen</i>
5, <i>five</i>	11, <i>eleven</i>	17, <i>seventeen</i>
6, <i>six</i>	12, <i>twelve</i>	18, <i>eighteen</i>

19, <i>nineteen</i>	100, <i>a, one hundred</i>
20, <i>twenty</i>	101, <i>hundred and one</i>
21, <i>twenty-one (one and twenty)</i>	102, <i>hundred and two</i>
28, <i>twenty-eight</i>	200, <i>two hundred</i>
30, <i>thirty</i>	300, <i>three hundred</i>
36, <i>thirty-six</i>	400, <i>four hundred</i>
40, <i>forty</i>	500, <i>five hundred</i>
50, <i>fifty</i>	1.000, <i>thousand</i>
60, <i>sixty</i>	1.100, <i>one thousand one hundred</i>
70, <i>seventy</i>	10.000, <i>ten thousand</i>
80, <i>eighty</i>	100.000, <i>hundred thousand</i>
90, <i>ninety</i>	1.000.000, <i>a, one million</i>
	100.000.000, <i>hundred millions</i>

129. *Hundred, thousand y million*, van precedidos del indefinido *a* cuando se emplean para contar un objeto determinado, y de *one* cuando no se expresa el objeto, y en las fechas.

Pero 100 se dice siempre *one hundred* cuando va detras de *thousand*.

Ademas se pone siempre *and* y, detras de *hundred, thousand y million* cuando les sigue otro número menor que ciento.

Tengo 150 varas de paño.

I have a hundred and fifty yards of cloth.

El ganadero tiene 1.130 vacas.

The grazier has a thousand one hundred and thirty cows.

En el año 1815.

In the year one thousand eight hundred and fifteen.

130. Desde 1.100 hasta 2.000 puede contarse por centenas, diciendo: *eleven hundred ó a thousand one hundred*, 1.100; *eighteen hundred ó a thousand eight hundred*, 1.800.

131. PRECIO. Para expresar el *precio* de una cosa se usa en inglés el artículo indefinido *a ó an*, en vez de nuestro *el, la, por*, y de ordinario se suprime la preposicion *á ó en*: El comerciante vende la libra á seis chelines, y yo vendo á tres peniques la yarda, *the merchant sells six shillings a pound, and I sell three pence a yard*. He pagado cinco duros por cabeza, *I have paid five dollars a head*; á 24 reales la botella, *at twenty four reals a bottle*.

132. MEDIDAS. Para expresar la medida ó dimension de una cosa se traduce nuestro verbo *tener* por *to be*, la conjuncion *y* por *and* ó *by*, la preposicion *de* se suprime, y los sustantivos anchura, profundidad, etc., por los correspondientes adjetivos: *broad* ancho, *high* alto, *deep* profundo, etc. Para expresar distancias, la preposicion *de* se traduce por *from*, y el nombre distancia por *far* léjos:

La escalera tiene 20 piés de alto y 2 de ancho.	<i>The ladder is twenty feet high and (ó by) two broad.</i>
El foso tiene 10 piés de ancho y 3 de profundidad.	<i>The ditch is ten feet broad and (by) three deep.</i>
París tiene 32 millas de circunferencia.	<i>Paris is thirty two miles in circumference.</i>
Qué altura tiene esta torre?	<i>How high is this tower?</i>
Tiene 50 piés de altura.	<i>It is fifty feet high.</i>
Qué distancia hay de aquí á París?	<i>How far is it from here to Paris?</i>

IMPERFECTO DEL VERBO *to have*.

tenía ó habia	<i>I had</i>	teníamos, etc.	<i>we had</i>
tenías ó habías	<i>thou hadst</i>	teniais, etc.	<i>you had</i>
tenía ó habia	<i>he had</i>	tenian, etc.	<i>they had</i>

133. HORAS. Para expresar la hora se pone el verbo en tercera persona del singular y lleva por sujeto *it*. Obsérvense bien los siguientes ejemplos:

Qué hora es?	<i>What o'clock is it?</i>
Es la una; son las dos.	<i>It is one o'clock; it is two o'clock.</i>
Son las tres y cuarto.	<i>It is a quarter past three o'clock.</i>
Eran las tres y diez minutos.	<i>It was ten minutes past three.</i>
Son las cuatro y media.	<i>It is half past four (o'clock).</i>
Son las siete ménos cuarto.	<i>It is a quarter to seven.</i>
Es medio día; es media noche.	<i>It is midday; it is midnight.</i>
No son todavía las diez.	<i>It is not ten yet.</i>

Obs. 33. El vocablo *o'clock*, que es una abreviacion de *of ú on the clock*, de ó sobre el reloj, puede omitirse, principalmente cuando al número acompaña *past* pasado = después, *to* á =

ménos, ú otra voz que exprese fraccion de hora. Las expresiones *de la mañana*, *de la tarde* se designan por escrito con las fórmulas *A. M.* y *P. M.*, abreviacion de *ante meridiem* y *post meridiem* respectivamente; y en la conversacion, por *in the morning*, *in the evening*.

Son las seis de la mañana.

It is six o'clock A. M.

Son las cinco de la tarde.

It is five o'clock P. M.

Vendré á las siete de la tarde.

I will come at seven o'clock in the evening.

134. EDAD. Para expresar la edad se traduce nuestro verbo tener por *to be*, el vocablo *edad* por *old* viejo, y el qué por *how* cómo :

Qué edad tiene V.? (cómo viejo).

How old are you ó what is your age?

Tengo 43 años.

I am forty—three years old.

<i>gun</i>	fusil	<i>basket</i>	cesta	<i>to contain</i>	contener
<i>week</i>	semana	<i>to breakfast</i>	almorzar	veces	<i>times</i>
<i>to wash</i>	lavar (se)	<i>class</i>	clase	toros	<i>bull-fights</i>
<i>to rise</i>	levantarse	<i>beef</i>	vaca	pollo	<i>chicken</i>
<i>to dress</i>	peinar	<i>dear</i>	caro	una vez	<i>once</i>
<i>hair</i>	cabello	<i>lamb</i>	cordero	aunque	<i>though</i>
<i>to take</i>	tomar	<i>leap-year</i>	año bisiesto	silla	<i>chair</i>
<i>pair</i> (invar.)	par	<i>chemise</i>	camisa	entónces	<i>then</i>

Tema 18.

How many dogs has your neighbour? Our neighbour's wife has one cat, two kittens and three little dogs, but no bitches. The gardener has ten rabbits, two bucks and eight does. How many guns has the grazier? He had only four. There are (*hay*) twelve months in a year, seven days in a week and three hundred and sixty five days in a year. I have bought a bottle of Champagne wine at (*á*) thirty eight reals. Do you wash your teeth every day (*todos los dias*)? The baroness rises early; she washes and dresses her hair at seven

and takes chocolate at half past eight. Do you send a pair of stockings to your son? I will send (*enviaré*) my son three pair of gloves, two dozen of chemises, a basket of fruit and half a dozen yards of cloth. At what o'clock did you breakfast yesterday? At a quarter to nine. Are you going to class at ten? No, I am going at half past eleven. How is beef sold a pound? Two reals a pound. Dou you wish a couple (*par*) of pounds? No. Bacon is in general very dear this year. I am going to buy a little lamb for Easter (*pascua*). How do you know the days in each (*cada*) month? Thirty days has September, April, June and November, February has twenty eight alone, all the rest have thirty one, except (*excepto*) in leap-year and then's (*por is*) the time, February's days are twenty-nine.

(Para corregir.)

Have the shoemaker a fine dog? He have two. How many horses has your father? [He has hundred twenty horses. This house was built (*edificada*) in the year thousand eight hundred fifteen. This town contains two thousand fifty-five houses. What o'clock is? Is not five yet; is half past four or a quarter to the five o'clock. The sum amounted (*ascendia*) to thousand six hundreds twenty five francs. How old has your son? My son has twenty six years old, and my daughter has twenty and three. I have spoken (*hablado*) to your aunt more than hundred times.

Cuántos hermanos tiene ese caballero? Tenía 8 hermanos, y esta mujer tiene 14 hijos. Han comprado VV. muchas sillas? Hemos comprado 29 sillas y 16 mesas. Cuántas medias tiene este niño? Tiene sólo tres pares, y yo tengo 17 docenas de pañuelos. Nuestro padre ha vendido 538 carneros, 125 vacas y 17 caballos, á 24 duros por cabeza. Venga V. (*come*) á las seis de la mañana y no á las cinco de la tarde. Cuántos minutos hay (*are there*) en una hora? 60 minutos hacen una hora, 24 horas un día, siete días una semana, 28, 29, 30 ó 31 días un mes, y doce meses ó 365 días hacen un año. Cuántas veces al (*a*) mes va V. á los toros? Voy cuatro ó cinco veces al

(a) año. Cuántas gallinas tiene esa mujer? Tiene 49 gallos, 468 gallinas y 4.692 pollos. Yo como gallina (*fowl*) una vez al día, aunque es demasiado cara para un pobre hombre como yo soy. Qué altura tiene esta casa? La torre de Estrasburgo (*Strassburgh*) tiene cerca de 520 pies de altura. Mi cuarto tiene 47 pies de largo y 43 de ancho.

LECCION XIX.

NÚMEROS ORDINALES, MÚLTIPLOS, ETC.

135. Los números ordinales se forman añadiendo TH á los cardinales. La *y* final se cambia en *ie*. Los tres primeros son irregulares; *five*, *twelve* cambian la *ve* en *f*, y *nine* pierde la *e* muda; pero la conserva en los compuestos.

<i>first</i>	1 st	1. ^o	<i>eighteenth</i>	18 th
<i>second</i>	2 nd	2. ^o	<i>nineteenth</i>	19 th
<i>third</i>	3 rd	3. ^o	<i>twentieth</i>	20 th
<i>fourth</i>	4 th	4. ^o	<i>twenty-first</i>	21 st
<i>fifth</i>	5 th	5. ^o	<i>twenty-second</i>	22 th
<i>sixth</i>	6 th	6. ^o	<i>thirtieth</i>	30 th
<i>seventh</i>	7 th	7. ^o	<i>fortieth</i>	40 th
<i>eighth</i>	8 th	8. ^o	<i>fiftieth</i>	50 th
<i>ninth</i>	9 th	9. ^o	<i>sixtieth</i>	60 th
<i>tenth</i>	10 th	10. ^o	<i>seventieth</i>	70 th
<i>eleventh</i>	11 th	11. ^o	<i>eightieth</i>	80 th
<i>twelfth</i>	12 th	12. ^o , etc.	<i>ninetieth</i>	90 th
<i>thirteenth</i>	13 th		<i>hundredth</i>	100 th
<i>fourteenth</i>	14 th		<i>hundred and first</i>	101 th
<i>fifteenth</i>	15 th		<i>ihousandth</i>	1.000 th
<i>sixteenth</i>	16 th		<i>millionth</i>	1.000.000 th
<i>seventeenth</i>	17 th		<i>last</i>	último

Obs. 34. Por el cuadro que antecede se ve que los compuestos añaden la terminacion ordinal al último número solamente.

136. Los ordinales van casi siempre precedidos del artículo THE en inglés: *book the first*, libro primero; *Philipp the second*, Felipe 2.^o; *the sixth volume*, el 6.^o tomo; *the second year of law*, 2.^o año de derecho; *chapter the fourth*, capítulo 4.^o

137. Para determinar los días del mes, emplean los ingleses los ordinales :

¿ Cuántos estamos?

Estamos á 25.

El 27 y 30 de Julio.

Madrid, 25 de Diciembre de 1879.

Dígame V. los meses del año.

What day of the month is it?

It is the twenty-fifth (25th).

The twenty-seventh, and the thirtieth of July.

M. the twenty-fifth of December, eighteen hundred and seventy-nine.

Tell me the months of the year.

January, February, March, April, May, June, July, August, September, October, November, December.

Quiere V. decirme los días de la semana?

Will you tell me the days of the week?

Sunday is the first; *Monday* is the second; *Tuesday* is the third; *Wednesday* is the fourth; *Thursday* is the fifth; *Friday* is the sixth, and *Saturday* is the seventh.

138. QUEBRADOS. Los fraccionarios ó quebrados se forman, como en castellano, poniendo por numerador el cardinal y el ordinal por denominador, ó bien con la palabra *part*:

La mitad *the half*, el tercio *the third* ó *third part*, el cuarto *the fourth* ó *fourth part*, el quinto *the fifth* ó *fifth part*, etc.

Tengo dos tercios de una libra.

Tres cuartos de vara.

I have two-thirds of a pound.

Three-fourths of a yard.

139. MULTIPLICATIVOS. Se forman traduciendo los vocablos castellanos *por* ó *veces* por *times*, excepto los dos primeros: una vez *once*, dos veces *twice*, tres veces *three times* (ó *thrice*), cuatro veces *four times*, cinco veces *five times*, seis veces *six times*, cien veces *a hundred times*, 4 por 4=16, *four times four are sixteen*. etc.

OBS. 35. Seguidos los números se dice *one*, *two*, *three* etc. *times*, una, dos, tres, etc., veces. *Thrice* es poco usado.

140. MÚLTIPLOS. Se forman añadiendo al cardinal *fold*, *ble* ó *ple*, equivalentes á las terminaciones castellanas *ble*, *ple* ó *plo*: doble *double*, triple *trèble* ó *threefold*, cuádruplo *fourfold* ó *quadruple*, décuplo *tenfold*, céntuplo *hundredfold*, una docena *a dozen*, una veintena *a score*.

141. COLECTIVOS. Se usan en inglés los siguientes: *both*, *both of them* ambos-as, los dos; *head* cabeza, *a dozen* una docena, *a pair*, *a brace* ó *a couple* un par, *a fortnight* (de *fourteen nights*) quince días, *a score* una veintena, *a* ó *one hundred* un centenar, *a* ó *one thousand* un millar, *a* ó *one million* un millon.

Los demas se expresan con los simples cardinales: *ten* decena, etc. *Score* se usa desde 60 para expresar la edad: tiene 90 años, *he is four score and ten*.

OBS. 36. A excepcion de *dozen*, *couple*, *pair*, *brace*, *head*, *score*, los demas numerales colectivos se usan tambien en plural.

Centenares de caballos.

Hundreds of horsemen.

Morian por millares.

They were dying by thousands.

Se les ve de dos en dos y de tres en tres.

They are seen by twos and threes.

He comprado dos pares de pichones.

I have bought two couple of pigeons.

Obsérvense las locuciones siguientes, que expresan colectividad, y pueden servir de norma para formar otras análogas:

De dos en dos, de tres en tres, etc.

Two by two, three by three.

Los cuatro, los seis, etc.

All four, all six, etc.

Cada dos días, cada dos meses.

Every other day, every other month.

Cada ocho, cada quince días.

Every week, every fortnight.

Cada tres, cada cuatro días.

Every third day, every fourth day.

El dos, el tres de copas.

The deuce, the trey of hearts.

Un coche de 4, de 6 caballos.

A carriage and four, a carriage and six.

Marchar á cuatro patas.

To go on all four (ó fours).

<i>often</i>	á menudo	<i>there</i>	allí
<i>brother-in-law</i>	cuñado	<i>fork</i>	tenedor
<i>city</i>	ciudad	<i>shirt</i>	camisa
<i>mood</i>	modo	por mi parte	<i>as for me</i>
<i>person</i>	persona	leyendo	<i>reading</i>
<i>verb</i>	verbo	página	<i>page</i>
<i>indicative</i>	indicativo	historia	<i>history</i>
<i>to come</i>	venir	chelin	<i>shilling</i>
<i>afternoon</i>	tarde	por consiguiente	<i>consequently</i>
<i>train</i>	tren	corona	<i>crown</i>
<i>to shave</i>	afeitarse	penúltimo	<i>last but one</i>
<i>how long</i>	cuánto tiempo?		

Tema 19.

Do you often write to your uncle? I write to him once a week, and my brother-in-law writes every fortnight to him. Does he write also to your aunt? He writes to both of them. Which volume of this book have you? I have the seventh volume of your work. How many foot are here? There are five thousand foot and seven hundred horse here. That pupil is the twenty-sixth in (*de*) his class, but his father is the first man in the city. What day of the month is it? It is the twelfth day of the month; no, it is the third. In what mood and person is this verb? It is in the third person singular, indicative mood. In which class are you? In that of the sixth year of philosophy. What do those of the fifth year learn? A great many things. My father is going to come on Thursday afternoon, by the four o'clock train from Alicante. When do you shave (yourself)? I shave every other day. What have you bought? Nothing, but my mother has bought a dozen knives and forks. This pair of boots is for my little sister, and this dozen of shirts is for Charles. How long did you remain there? I have remained (*permaneci*) there a quarter of an hour or half an hour.

(Para corregir.)

Henry Fourth, king of France, was a friend of the catholics. What lesson is this? It is the eleven lesson. See (*vea V.*) book third, chapter fourth of the history of Spain. My mother has bought four dozens apples for the child. Do you often write to your uncle? I

write to him one time a week; but my brother writes every fortnights to him. When can you go to the market? I can go thither (*alli*) for the morning? What day of the month is it to-morrow? To-morrow is four. Which lesson are you studying? I am studying the twenty-two. The three of September, thousand six hundred sixty and six, there was (*hubo*) a fire at London, which destroyed thirteen thousand houses.

Cuánto hacen (*is*) siete por siete? 49. Va V. á la iglesia? Sí, voy 4 vez al dia. Ha vendido el ganadero una docena de pollos? Ha vendido tres docenas. Desea V. una docena ó media docena de camisas? Por mi parte no deseo nada más. La criada ha comprado tres libras de carne y una docena de manzanas. Es V. el primero de su clase? No, soy el segundo, pero mi primo Juanito es el último, porque no es aplicado. A cómo estamos hoy? Hoy estamos á 29. Qué está usted leyendo? Estoy leyendo la página 100 de este libro, y mi hermana está leyendo el capítulo trece de la historia de Inglaterra. Qué es un chelin? Es la vigésima parte de una libra, y un penique es la duodécima parte de un chelin. Cinco chelines hacen una corona; por consiguiente, dos y medio hacen media corona: la cuarta parte de un penique se llama (*is called*) *farthing*. Tiene V. el 7.º tomo de la historia de Schlosser? Tenía el 9.º y 11.º, pero ahora tengo sólo el 13.º y el penúltimo. Qué dia de la semana es hoy? Hoy es Miércoles 31 de Diciembre de 1879. A cuántos estamos del mes? Estamos á ocho. No estamos á 11? No, señor, estamos á 16. Tiene V. mi obra ó la de mi hermano? Tengo ambas. ¿Cuánto tenía V.? Tenía dos tercios de una libra, y mi amigo tenía una décima parte.

LECCION XX.

PRONOMBRES PERSONALES.

142. Para comprender bien el uso de los pronombres conviene recordar las partes de que una oracion se compone, que son: *sujeto, verbo y régimen*.

Sujeto es la persona ó cosa que ejecuta la accion expresada por el verbo: *the pupil studies*, el discípulo estudia: ¿quién estudia? *pupil*; este es el sujeto.

Régimen directo es la persona ó cosa en que termina ó que sufre la accion expresada por el verbo: *I see the young lady*, veo á la señorita: ¿qué veo? *the young lady*; este es el régimen directo, que en inglés nunca lleva preposicion.

Régimen indirecto es la persona ó cosa para quien alguna cosa se hace ó se ejecuta, y va unido siempre al verbo por medio de preposicion: *I write a letter to my father*, escribo una carta á mi padre: ¿qué escribo? *a letter*, es régimen directo; ¿á ó para quién escribo? *to my father*, es régimen indirecto.

Pronombres personales.

I yo,	ME me, mi	WE nosotros-as	US nos, á nosotros-as
THOU tu	THEE te, ti	YOU, ye, vosotros—YOU os, á vos-as; ustedes, V.	otros, les, á ustedes
HE él	HIM le, á él	THEY ellos, ellas	THEM los, las, les, ellos, ellas
SHE ella	HER la, ella		
IT él, ella, ello	IT lo, la, él, ella, ello		

OBS. 37. Con los pronombres se omite frecuentemente la preposicion *to* del dativo; con los nombres puede omitirse en un caso que despues se indica (Regla 148).

143. En inglés nunca se tutea, ni áun los padres á los hijos. Por tanto el pronombre *thou*, *thee* sólo se usa en estilo poético y bíblico y entre ciertas personas, como los cuácaros, que tutean á todo el mundo:

Tú has llamado á los niños.
Estás cansada?

You have called the children.
Are you tired?

144. Nuestros pronombres V., VV., vosotros-as, tienen por único equivalente *you*, que siendo sujeto, siempre exige

el verbo en segunda persona plural: V. ama, VV. aman, vosotros amais, *you love*; tú lees, V. lee, VV. leen, vosotros leéis, *you read*.

145. Fuera de la interrogacion se pone el sujeto detras del verbo, en frases que se intercalan en las oraciones principales á manera de paréntesis para citar algun texto, lo mismo que en castellano: bien, contestó él; eso depende enteramente de usted, *well! replied he; that depends entirely on you*.

146. Las expresiones *soy yo, eres tú*, etc., se traducen poniendo el verbo *ser* en tercera persona singular con *it* y detras el pronombre personal correspondiente:

soy yo	<i>it is I</i>	somos nosotros	<i>it is we</i>
eres tú	<i>it is you (or thou)</i>	sois vosotros, usted	<i>it is you</i>
es él, ella, ello	<i>it is he, she, it</i>	son ellos ó ellas	<i>it is they</i>

147. Si un verbo tiene dos complementos pronombres, como *te lo, se lo, nos lo*, etc., el directo precede al indirecto. Pero si uno es pronombre y el otro sustantivo, aquél suele ir primero, aunque sea régimen indirecto:

Le da V. el libro?	<i>Do you give him the book?</i>
Se lo doy.	<i>I give it him (ó to him)</i>
Le doy dinero y él me da libros.	<i>I give money to him and he gives me books.</i>

148. En el caso anterior, si el *dativo*, sea nombre ó pronombre, precede al acusativo, se omite la preposicion *to*; pero si el acusativo va delante, debe expresarse el *to*:

Quiere usted enviar el dinero al obrero?	<i>Will you send the money to the workman?</i> <i>Will you send the workman the money?</i>
Quiero enviárselo.	
Quiero enviarle el sombrero.	<i>I will send it him.</i> <i>I will send the hat to him.</i>
Quiere V. devolverme el libro?	<i>Will you return the book to me?</i> <i>Will you return me the book?</i>
Quiero devolvérselo.	
	<i>I will return it you (ó to you).</i>



Como se ve por los ejemplos que anteceden, *to* puede omitirse siempre que los dos complementos sean pronombres personales.

149. Nuestro *LO* se traduce por *it* cuando se refiere á un objeto determinado; y se suprime ó se traduce por *so* cuando se refiere á un adjetivo, á un verbo, ó bien acompaña al verbo *ser*:

Es un buen diccionario, cómpralo.	<i>It is a good dictionary, buy it.</i>
Cree V. que vendrá? Lo supongo.	<i>Do you think he will come? I suppose so.</i>
Es V. el primo de mi amigo? Lo soy.	<i>Are you the cousin of my friend? I am ó I am so.</i>

<i>lent</i>	prestado	<i>to owe</i>	deber
<i>to wish for</i>	desear	<i>consideration</i>	atencion
<i>refused</i>	negado	<i>to suppose</i>	suponer
<i>never</i>	nunca	<i>slowly</i>	despacio
<i>to ask</i>	pedir	<i>peril</i>	peligro
<i>present</i>	regalo	<i>bless</i>	bendice
<i>promised</i>	prometido	<i>learning</i>	estudio
<i>hope</i>	esperanza	<i>to pray</i>	rogar
<i>to speak (irr.)</i>	hablar	<i>holy</i>	santo
<i>every</i>	cada	<i>praise</i>	alabanza
<i>ill</i>	malo	<i>pegar</i>	<i>beat</i>
<i>seeking</i>	buscando	llamar á	<i>to knock at</i>
<i>breakfast</i>	almuerzo	naturaleza	<i>nature</i>
<i>mind</i>	intencion	nada	<i>(not) anything</i>
<i>quite</i>	enteramente	quiere V.?	<i>will you?</i>
<i>coat</i>	levita		

Tema 20.

Have you thought of me? We have often spoken of thee. Every body is speaking of you for you are worthy of it; being (*siendo*) so good, honest, and learned a man. Do you often write to your friends? I write every fortnight to them. My sisters are ill; I am working to-day for them. Where is your sister? Her mother is seeking her. If you find my dog I will give (*daré*) you five francs. My father has given us a basket of fruit and a bottle of wine. Has he

given the wine to him? No, sir. Where is my book? I have lent it to thee. If you wish for it, he will give it you with much pleasure: he has not refused it (*to*) us; he never refused (*to*) me what I have asked (*to*) him. Has the gardener received many flowers? Yes; he will sell (*venderá*) them to us. The child of the neighbour has asked you for the knife; why have you not lent it to him? Because he has not given me an apple. Who has given a present to the children? My aunt has given it to them. Why do you not give us the inkstand? Have I not promised it to you? You have not promised it to us. Hope, said Bacon, is a very good breakfast, but it is a very bad supper. I had the honour of seeing (*de ver*) him and of speaking with him. Will you send my sister some silk? I will not send her any. Has your niece a mind to write as many letters as I? She has a mind to write quite as many, and she wishes to send them to her friends. Can the tailor send me my coat? He cannot (*no puede*) send it you.

(Para corregir.)

I you love as my own father. I owe to him money but he owes to me many considerations. Do you think he will come (*que vendrá*)? I think it. Are you the cousin of this gentleman? I am it. Am I who says it. No, sir, is she who supposes it. Have you read this book? No, sir. Read (*lea V.*) it slowly, and return me it when you please (*quiera*). Are you a teacher? Yes, sir, I am it. Will you give (*dará*) the money him? I will give (*daré*) him it. You are not so rich as my honests cousins. Thou art not so rich as my aunt. Glory (*gloria*) to you, O Lord! who have preserved (*librado*) me from the perils of the night past. Bless me, I pray you, O God, in my learning. You are happy, O holy virgin Mary, and most worthy of all praise.

Por qué no viene V. conmigo? Porque tengo muchas cosas que hacer. Pega V. al perro? El niño lo pega. Por qué lo pega? No lo sé. Quién llama á la puerta? Somos nosotros. Sois vosotros? Desea V. darles algun dinero? Deseo dárselo. Quiere V. prestarme el reloj? Quiero prestárselo á V. Hablan los niños de nosotros? No hablan de

nosotros: hablan sobre (*about*) la naturaleza. Quién envía mis cartas á Francia? Nosotros las enviamos allí. Quiere V. darle una manzana? Doy una manzana á ella, y no á él, porque él no me da nada (*anything*). Conoce V. á esas señoras? Las conozco; son mis primas. Quiere V. dar algo á estos hombres? No puedo darles nada, porque soy más pobre que ellos. Es médico su hermano de V.? Sí, señor, lo es. Quiere V. enviar algo al zapatero? Quiero enviarle mis zapatos. No soy feliz, decia ella, porque V. no me ama. Quiere V. enviarme mis pañuelos? Quiero enviárselos.

LECCION XXI.

ADJETIVOS Y PRONOMBRES POSESIVOS.

150. Los adjetivos posesivos acompañan y preceden, como en español, al sustantivo, pero son invariables en cuanto al número y género:

mi, mis	<i>my</i>	nuestro-a-os-as	<i>our</i>
tu, tus	<i>thy</i>	vuestro, etc., su,	
su, sus	<i>his</i>	de V.	<i>your</i>
su, sus (de ella)	<i>her</i>	su, sus (de mu-	
su, sus (de ello)	<i>its</i>	chos)	<i>their</i>

151. Los pronombres posesivos, á excepcion de *mine*, *thine*, se derivan de los mismos adjetivos con sólo agregar una *s* á los que no la tienen:

el mio-a-os-as	<i>mine</i>	el nuestro, etc.	<i>ours</i>
el tuyo, etc.	<i>thine</i>	el vuestro, etc.,	
el suyo (de él)	<i>his</i>	suyo, de V.	<i>yours</i>
el suyo (de ella)	<i>hers</i>	el suyo (de ellos)	<i>theirs</i>
el suyo (n.)	<i>its</i>		

152. Los pronombres posesivos nunca llevan el artículo en inglés:

Qué lápices tienen VV.?

What pencils have you?

Tenemos los nuestros.

We have ours.

Los niños tienen los suyos.

The children have theirs.

153. De los cuadros que anteceden se desprende que en inglés los adjetivos y pronombres posesivos se conciertan con el poseedor y no con la cosa poseida, como en castellano:

Qué cortaplumas tiene él?	<i>What knife has he?</i>
Tiene el suyo (de él).	<i>He has his.</i>
Ella tiene el suyo (de ella).	<i>She has hers.</i>
Su perrito (de él) está enfermo.	<i>His little dog is sick.</i>
Su perrito (de ella) está enfermo.	<i>Her little dog is sick.</i>
Su crin (de un caballo) es bonita.	<i>Its mane is beautiful.</i>

154. Para dar más fuerza á los adjetivos y pronombres posesivos se les agrega el vocablo *own* propio, con especialidad al pronombre *his* para distinguirle de *his* adjetivo:

Tiene el niño su pluma ó la mia?	<i>Has the child his pen or mine?</i>
Tiene la suya.	<i>He has his own.</i>
Tiene la niña mi tenedor?	<i>Has the female-child my fork?</i>
Tiene el suyo (de ella).	<i>She has her own.</i>

Obs. 38. Antiguamente se usaba *mine*, *thine* en vez de *my*, *thy* delante de nombres que empiezan por vocal ó *h* muda, lo que todavía ocurre en la Biblia y en poesía ó estilo poético.

155. Los pronombres reflexivos se forman añadiendo *self*, plural *selves*, á los adjetivos posesivos en la primera y segunda persona y á la terminacion oblicua del pronombre personal en la tercera.

	Singular.		Plural.
<i>myself</i>	yo mismo-a, me	<i>ourselves</i>	nosotros mismos-as,
<i>thyself</i>	tú mismo-a, te		nos.
<i>yourself</i>	vos ó V. mismo-a-os,	<i>yourselves</i>	vosotros mismos, os,
	etc.		ustedes mismos,
<i>himself</i>	él mismo, se		as, se, etc.
<i>herself</i>	ella misma, se	<i>themselves</i>	ellos mismos, ellas
<i>itself</i>	él mismo, ello mis-		mismas, se
	mo, se, etc.		
<i>One's-self</i>	uno mismo, se, sí		
	mismo		

156. Estos reflexivos se emplean, ó para identificar algun

objeto ó como equivalentes del pronombre régimen en los verbos reflexivos ó pronominales, en cuyo caso debe colocarse detrás del verbo :

Lo haré yo mismo.	<i>I will do it myself.</i>
El mismo está aquí.	<i>He himself is here.</i>
Nosotros mismos lo vemos.	<i>We ourselves see it.</i>
Si no me equivoco.	<i>If I do not deceive myself.</i>
Ellos se lisonjean.	<i>They flatter themselves.</i>

157. Cuando ocurren varios nombres en una frase no se necesita repetir el posesivo : mi padre, madre y hermanos están aquí, *my father, mother and brothers are here.*

158. Se usa en inglés el adjetivo posesivo en vez de nuestro artículo definido delante de nombres que expresan partes del cuerpo, facultades del alma, y en muchos casos para indicar que el objeto es propiedad de la persona á quien la acción se refiere, omitiéndose nuestro reflexivo :

Ella se arranca los cabellos.	<i>She pulls out her hair.</i>
Él se ha roto el brazo.	<i>He has broken his arm.</i>
Usted me debe la vida.	<i>You owe me your life.</i>

159. Hay muchas expresiones en que nuestro artículo se traduce por el indefinido *a* delante de nombres que designan partes del cuerpo ; el cual indefinido *a* se les antepone ordinariamente cuando, estando en singular, no llevan ningun artículo en castellano :

Me duele la cabeza.	<i>My head aches.</i>
Tengo dolor de cabeza.	<i>I have a head-ache.</i>
Le duelen los dientes ; tiene, etc.	<i>He has a tooth-ache.</i>
Tiene la frente ancha.	<i>She has a large forehead.</i>
El ingeniero tiene los piés malos.	<i>The engineer has sore feet.</i>

OBS. 39. A veces se usa en inglés el pronombre posesivo en vez del adjetivo suprimiendo el nombre que le acompaña, si puede sobreentenderse fácilmente : es mi deber enseñar y el

de V. es estudiar, *it is mine* (por *my duty*) *to teach and it is yours to study.*

160. Los pronombres posesivos *mio, tuyo*, etc., usados de tras de un nombre indeterminado se ponen en genitivo regidos de la preposicion *of*:

Vienen dos hermanos míos.
Un amigo vuestro.

*There come two brothers of mine.
A friend of yours.*

<i>idle</i>	holgazan	<i>slave</i>	esclavo
<i>to possess</i>	poseer	<i>deign</i>	dignate
<i>every other</i>	cada tercer	<i>to seat</i>	sentar
<i>put on</i>	póngase V.	<i>till</i>	hasta que
<i>several</i>	varios	<i>care</i>	cuidado
<i>relations</i>	parientes	<i>picture</i>	cuadro
<i>countryman</i>	paisano	<i>condition</i>	estado
<i>useful</i>	útil	traido	<i>brought</i>
<i>sight</i>	vista	limpiar (se)	<i>to clean</i>
<i>to cut</i>	cortar	alma	<i>soul</i>
<i>broken</i>	roto	prójimo	<i>neighbour</i>
<i>to conceal</i>	ocultar	salido	<i>gone out</i>
<i>concealed</i>	oculto	tarde	<i>late</i>
<i>behind</i>	detras de	quemar	<i>to burn</i>
<i>obeyed</i>	obedecido	calentar	<i>to warm</i>
<i>peopled</i>	poblado	era	<i>it was</i>

Tema 21.

Are you tired, of my brother? No; I am tired of your sister because she is very idle. Does he praise himself? He does not praise himself for he is a very modest man. Does she speak of herself? She speaks of herself because she possesses much vanity. My husband has received a letter from our sons who are at Paris. Has your cousin lost his watch? No, sir; but my wife has lost her penknife. Do you shave early? I shave myself every other day. Put on your hat. Has your aunt been at Mr. Serrano's? No, because he was not at home. You see, my children, their father loves them, because they are very diligent. My cousin and I were never (*nunca hemos sido*) so happy as now when several relations of ours have come with some countrymen of theirs. Has she not blue eyes? She has black eyes and black hair.

Who has a sore hand? Nobody has a sore one. What coat has your little brother? He has his own. Our horse is more useful than yours. Do you wish to warm yourself? No; but they wish to warm themselves. My friend has lost his sight, and she has broken her arm. Have these children cut themselves? They have not cut themselves.

(Para corregir.)

You believed yourself concealed, but you were not: they conceal themselves behind a tree. Can one know himself? Yes. She sees herself obeyed by all her sons. By her paternal protection, the sultan had peopled her dominions. Be (*se*) as thou wilt (*quieras*); thyne slave obeys thee: deign only to seat thineself here. Thou art learning thine lesson, doest thou learn it? I cannot learn it. Wait (*espera*) till I have learned mine lesson. How is your father of you? well. My father, my mother, and my sister love you. If you do not take (*tiene*) care, you shall cut (*cortará*) the fingers with the penknife. She lives in her house. All the pictures are arrived (*han llegado*); the yours, the theirs and the mine are in good condition. A friend ours has bought a fine horse for a cousin his.

Dónde has comprado tu bonita pluma? Mi madre la ha comprado. Ha comprado su padre de VV. un caballo? Nuestro padre ha vendido su caballo y ha comprado una excelente yegua. Mi buen tío ha traído para mí un reloj, porque el mío era muy malo. Tu madre ha perdido mi sombrero y sus zapatos (*de ella*). Has visto el caballo que he comprado á (*from*) su primo de ella? Le he visto, pero el nuestro es mucho mejor que el de V. Se lava V. los dientes todas las mañanas (*every morning*)? Sí señor. Límpiase V. las manos. Os amo, Dios mío, con toda (*all*) mi alma; amo (*á*) mi prójimo como (*á*) mí mismo. Ha estado V. en (*at*) mi casa? V. había salido con un criado suyo cuando yo llegué (*arrived*) con un amigo mío. Por qué no vino usted á las ocho? Era ya tarde; así es que salimos (*so we went out*) para ir al colegio con un hermanito nuestro. Su primito de V. ha perdido el sombrero de su padre (*de él*). Ha prestado V. dinero á mi tío? He prestado un libro á tu cuñado. Tu madre ha dado unas

flores á mi hermanita y á mi hermano. Este p6bre ni6o ha perdido á su padre y á su tia. Has perdido tu sombrero? Mi hermanito ha perdido el suyo. El ni6o ha dado su pluma á mi prima que (*who*) ha perdido la suya. Tiene su hermana de V. mi tintero? No tiene el de V.; tiene el suyo propio. Han perdido los ni6os sus l6pices de usted? No; han perdido los de ellos. Se quema V.? No me quemo, pero me caliento. Se ha cortado su hermano de V.? No se ha cortado, pero estas mujeres se han cortado.

LECCION XXII.

ADJETIVOS Y PRONOMBRES DEMOSTRATIVOS.—PATRONÍMICOS.

161. No hay en inglés diferencia entre los adjetivos y los pronombres demostrativos, ni tampoco palabras para señalar las tres distancias que indican los vocablos españoles *este*, *ese*, *aquel*, etc. Sus formas son:

		Singular.		
THIS	éste-a		THAT	ese-a, aquel, aquella
		Plural.		
THESE	éstos-as		THOSE	esos-as, aquellos-as

El uso de estos demostrativos es perfectamente análogo al de los equivalentes castellanos:

Desea V. este libro ó aquel?	<i>Do you wish this book or that one?</i>
Deseo aquéllos y no éstos.	<i>I wish those and not these.</i>
Le gusta á V. esa gramática?	<i>Do you like that grammar?</i>

162. No se necesita repetir el mismo demostrativo delante de varios sustantivos; pero debe expresarse cuando tenga distinta forma:

Ví allí á este hombre, esta niña, y este niño.	<i>I saw there this man, girl and boy.</i>
Este hombre y estas mujeres han estado aquí.	<i>This man and these women have been here.</i>

163. En vez de los demostrativos se emplean con frecuencia los vocablos *the former* el primero, *the latter* el último, los últimos, etc., como se hace, aunque con ménos frecuencia, en castellano:

Quiere V. comprar éstos ó aquellos? *Will you buy these or those?*

Me gustan más aquéllos que éstos. *I like better the former than the latter.*

164. Los *demostrativos posesivos* se expresan añadiendo al que designa lejanía la preposicion *of*:

él, la, lo, aquel de *that of* los, las, etc., de *those of*

Mucho ménos usados son: *he of* el de, *she of* la de, *they of* los, las de, etc.

De todos estos retratos el de mi hermano es el más parecido. *Of all these portraits that of my brother is the most resembling.*

165. Los *adjetivos patronímicos* ó de nacionalidad se forman agregando al sustantivo la terminacion *ish*, ó suprimiendo *man* en los que tienen esta desinencia.

En algunos se verifican cambios que enseña fácilmente el uso, y otros no tienen terminacion, siendo iguales el adjetivo y el sustantivo.

Estos adjetivos se escriben con letra mayúscula en inglés:

	<u>Sustantivo.</u>	<u>Adjetivo.</u>
danés	<i>the Dane</i>	<i>Danish</i>
polaco	<i>the Pole</i>	<i>Polish</i>
español	<i>the Spaniard</i>	<i>Spanish</i>
turco	<i>the Turk</i>	<i>Turkish</i>
inglés	<i>the Englishman</i>	<i>English</i>
francés	<i>the Frenchman</i>	<i>French</i>

No ve V. á esa señora española? *Do you not see that Spanish lady?*

Aprende V. la lengua inglesa? *Do you learn the English language?*

Aprendo la lengua alemana. *I learn the German language.*

166. Los nombres de lenguas, cuando van solos, no llevan artículo :

Estudia V. el español?
Estudiamos el frances.

Do you study Spanish?
We study French.

PRETÉRITO DE UN VERBO REGULAR.

llamaba, llamé	<i>I call-ed</i>	llamábamos, etc.	<i>we call-ed</i>
llamabas, etc.	<i>thou call-edst</i>	llamábais, etc.	<i>you call-ed</i>
llamaba	<i>he call-ed</i>	llamaban, etc.	<i>they call-ed</i>

Obs. 40. El pretérito perfecto ó imperfecto de los verbos regulares se forma agregando á la radical *ed*; á la segunda persona de singular se añade ademas *st*, siendo las otras iguales á la primera.

Las formas negativa é interrogativa de estos tiempos se hacen por medio del auxiliar *did*, pretérito de *to do*, segun se dijo en la Regla 108 :

Se paseó V. esta mañana?
No nos paseamos.

Did you walk this morning?
We did not walk.

<i>to water</i>	regar	<i>handsome</i>	hermoso
<i>cherry</i>	cereza	<i>told</i>	dicho
<i>to see</i>	ver	<i>play</i>	teatro
<i>heart</i>	corazon	<i>to remain</i>	quedarse
<i>jewel</i>	joya	<i>yesterday</i>	ayer
<i>treasure (treshær)</i>	tesoro	<i>ball</i>	baile
<i>good for nothing</i>	inútil	manzana	<i>apple</i>
<i>unfortunate</i>	desgraciado	juguete	<i>toy</i>
<i>to appeal</i>	apelar	varios-as	<i>different</i>
<i>neither..... nor</i>	ni..... ni	aprender	<i>to learn</i>

Tema 22.

I have given these shoes to my friend. Have you watered these flowers? Yes, sir. We have received these cherries from those children.

This house is higher than that. Are these parents good? These sisters are very good. Have you lost your penknife? I have lost my pencil and that of my brother. My shoes are smaller than those of my cousin (ó my cousin's). Did you see that beautiful woman? Yes; a handsome woman pleases the eye; a good woman pleases the heart; the former is a jewel, the latter a treasure. Is this gentleman rich? This is rich, that one is poor. These pens are good for nothing; give me two or three of those ones. Virtue is amiable, vice is odious; the former makes us happy, the latter renders us unfortunate. Have you as many shoes as stockings? I have quite as many of the former as of the latter. Has the Dutchman my hat or that of our friends? He has both. Did the Dutch buy our ships or those of the Spaniard? They did not buy those ships. They appealed to the ancient loyalty of Englishmen and their love of English institutions.

(Para corregir.)

Have you the cherrys of my garden or the of my brother? I have neither the of your garden nor the of your brother. Buy you this ink or that? I buy not this. Has he my hat or the tailors'? He has neither the first nor the latter. Learned the Spaniard any language? He did learn many languages. He has told to me that. Go you to the play this evening? I go not to the play, because I have sore foot. Can you speak the English? No, sir, but I speak the Polish and the Russian. Are these men as learned as they say? They are not. Where remained you yesterday evening? I did remain at the ball.

Desea V. comprar este reloj ó aquel? Deseo comprar aquél. Estos sombreros son más bonitos que aquellos. Compra V. ese caballo? Deseo comprar éste. Ha comprado V. estos árboles? No he comprado esos árboles, pero he comprado los del jardín de mi vecino. Ha dado usted manzanas á esos niños? He comprado estos juguetes para aquellas niñas, porque son muy aplicadas. Estudió V. ayer esta lección? Aprendí ayer esas dos lecciones. No vió V. ayer á la señora inglesa? No vi á esa señora porque no me llamó V. Habla V. alemán? Hablo varias lenguas, y mi hermano habla frances, italiano, danes y

portugues. Los jardines de Sevilla son más bonitos que los de Londres. Tiene V. mi libro ó el de mi hermano? Tengo ambos. Han comprado VV. la gramática de Enrique? Hemos comprado la de Guillermo, porque ésta es mejor que aquélla. Aprenden VV. el alemán? Aprendemos el inglés y el español; pero estas señoritas aprenden el alemán. Los hijos de mi primo estudian el turco.

LECCION XXIII.

PRONOMBRES RELATIVOS (RELATIVE PRONOUNS).

167. Los pronombres relativos ingleses son: *who* quien, *which* cual, *what* lo que, *that* que.

168. WHO sólo se refiere á personas ó cosas personificadas, y tiene las siguientes terminaciones, cuyo uso es análogo al del equivalente castellano:

que, quien, quienes	<i>who</i>
de quién-es	<i>of</i> ó <i>from whom</i>
de quién, cuyo-a-os-as	<i>whose</i>
quién, á quién, etc., acus.	<i>whom</i>
con, para, etc., quién	<i>with, for</i> etc. <i>whom</i>

Yo le diré á V. quién lo ha hecho.
Dime con quién andas y te diré
quién eres.

Dios, cuyas obras admiramos, está
en todas partes.

De quién es aquella casa?

A quién ama V.?

I will tell you who has done it.

*Tell me whom you frequent and I
will tell you who you are.*

*God whose works we admire is every
where.*

Whose house is that?

Whom do you love?

169. *Who*, usado interrogativamente como sujeto de verbo, no lleva el auxiliar *do* en frase afirmativa:

Quién desea escribir una carta?

Who wishes to write a letter?

170. *Which* es invariable, y se refiere generalmente á cosas y animales. Se aplica á personas cuando se trata de distinguir una ó varias entre muchas, en cuyo caso significa *cual* y va seguido de *of* de:

El perro que ladra pertenece al vecino.	<i>The dog which barks belongs to the neighbour.</i>
He comprado la casa que V. ve.	<i>I have bought the house which you see.</i>
Cuál de sus discípulos es el más aplicado?	<i>Which of your pupils is the most studious?</i>
Cuáles de esos cuadros prefiere V.?	<i>Which do you prefer of those pictures?</i>

171. *Cuyo-a*, etc., refiriéndose á cosas, se traduce por *of which*, debiendo colocarse éste detras del sustantivo :

He comprado un árbol cuya fruta es excelente.	<i>I have bought a tree the fruit of which is excellent.</i>
Tiene V. ya el libro cuya encuadernacion es tan bonita?	<i>Have you already the book, the binding of which is so very pretty?</i>

172. *That* que, es pronombre relativo, conjuncion (*que*) y demostrativo.

Como relativo puede referirse á personas y á cosas, usándose en vez de *who* y *which*; pero nunca interrogativamente:

El muchacho que lee es mi amigo.	<i>The boy that (who) reads is my friend.</i>
El caballo que relincha pertenece á mi tío.	<i>The horse that (which) neighs, belongs to my uncle.</i>
El campo que V. compra es muy grande.	<i>The field that (which) you buy is very large.</i>

173. *What* que, lo que, se usa principalmente para designar la especie, la clase de un objeto; no necesita antecedente:

Qué paño tiene V.?	<i>What cloth have you?</i>
Qué pretenden VV.?	<i>What do you pretend?</i>
Lo que él dice es verdad.	<i>What he says is true.</i>
Hace él lo que nosotros hacemos?	<i>Does he do what we do?</i>
Qué le pasa á V.?	<i>What is the matter with you?</i>

OBS. 41. *Todo lo que ó cuanto*, se dice *all that*:

Es todo lo que tenemos.	<i>It is all that we have.</i>
Todo lo que dice es verdad.	<i>All that he says is true.</i>

174. La preposicion que en castellano precede á cualquiera

de estos relativos puede colocarse en inglés al final de la oración, lo cual se hace casi siempre con *that* y cuando el relativo se omite (R. 175):

A quién habla V.?	<i>Whom (ó to whom) do you speak to?</i>
De quién lo toma V.?	<i>Whom (ó of whom) do you take it of?</i>
El asunto de que V. me habló.	<i>The affair that you spoke me of.</i>
	<i>The affair which (ó of w.) you spoke me of.</i>
	<i>The affair you spoke me of.</i>

175. La conjunción *that* que, y todos los relativos pueden omitirse en inglés cuando son complemento de un verbo que expresa alguna acción intelectual ó de los sentidos, como ver, pensar, etc., y después del verbo ser *to be*:

Creo que ella tiene razón.	<i>I believe she is right.</i>
Este es el caballo que deseo comprar.	<i>This is the horse I wish to buy.</i>
El hombre á quien V. habla es médico.	<i>The man you speak to is a physician.</i>

OBS. 42. *Que*, seguido de infinitivo, se traduce por *to*: tengo que escribir mi tema *I have to write my task.*

Seguido de adjetivo *que* se traduce por *how*: qué tonta es! *how stupid she is!*

176. Todos los relativos, excepto *that*, se hacen indefinidos agregándoles la terminación *ever* ó *soever*: *whoever* el que, quien quiera que; *whichever*, *whichever*, cualquiera que; *whatever* lo que quiera que, etc.

Dé V. ese dinero á quien V. guste.	<i>Give that money whomsoever you please.</i>
Cualquiera de esos alumnos puede contestarle á V.	<i>Whichever of those pupils can answer you.</i>

177. El pronombre él, la, los, etc., que preceden á que, cual, etc., se traducen de la manera siguiente: él *he* ó *that* ó *the one*; la *she* ó *that* ó *the one*; los, las *they* ó *those*. El que no

trabaja no sirve para nada, *he (that ó the one) who does not work, is good for nothing.* Los que trabajan se llaman aplicados, *those who work are called diligent.*

<i>to drink</i>	beber	<i>shop</i>	tienda
<i>at home</i>	en casa	<i>to perceive</i>	descubrir
<i>name</i>	nombre	allí	there
<i>comply</i>	cumplir	se llama	is named
<i>duty (diuti)</i>	deber	hecho	made
<i>window</i>	ventana	guante	glove
<i>to ask</i>	pedir	pícaro	rascal
<i>to neglect</i>	descuidar	profesor	professor
<i>received</i>	recibido	Francia	France
<i>whence</i>	de dónde	criar	to suckle

Tema 23.

Do you wish to buy the horse which my brother has? I wish to buy that which my cousin has. Whom does this house belong to (ó whose is this house)? I believe it belongs to the count of Paris. Whose palace is that? It is the bishop's. What does he say? He says yes; but I say no. At whose house is your father? He is at his friend's. With whom is he? He is with our old neighbour's good friends. What do you wish to drink? I wish to drink some beer. At what o'clock is your daughter at home? She is at home at twelve o'clock. For which child have you bought a present? For that one. What is your name? My name is William. What is good is to work much and to comply with one's duties. What a fine day! I hope you will come (*vendrá*). I believe so. What have you to do? I have many things to do. How good you are! What is the matter with your father? Nothing is the matter with him. That room the window of which looks to the yard (*patio*), is the habitation of my son. I send you the bill (*factura*) of all that you have asked. Those who neglect their children are bad mothers.

(Para corregir.)

Which calls your sister? Our mother calls her. Which do you do in the evening? I study my lessons. My little daughter has received a

present. From who has she received it? She have received it from my mother. Which presents have you received? I have received fine presents. Whence does your aunt come? She comes from the shop. From what shop does she come? She comes from the of our old neighbour. Do you perceive the man which is coming? I do not perceive him. Of who do they speak? They speak of our friend. That man does not believe in God, and all those which do not believe in God are bad people.

Mi hermano ha escrito una carta á mi tia, de quien he recibido ese buen regalo que V. ha visto. Has visto los sombreros que hemos recibido de París? He visto el regalo que habeis recibido de vuestras tias. De quién ha recibido V. esa carta? De la amiga de mi madre. A qué señora ha dado V. esas flores? A la señora que V. ve allí. Cómo se llama su gato de V.? Se llama Tray. Hemos recibido una carta de nuestro hermano que está en la Coruña. José, qué estás haciendo (*doing*) aquí? Nada. Cuál de estos tres niños le ha hecho á usted el regalo más bonito? El más aplicado. En (*at*) casa de quién ha comprado V. esas camisas? En casa del comerciante. De quién son estos guantes? Son los de mi cuñado. El campo que V. desea comprar no es muy bueno. Es ésta la casa que su padre desea comprar? Esta es la casa que mi tío desea comprar. ¡Qué pícaro de hombre! Nadie más que (*no other than*) él lo ha hecho. Qué estúpido es V.! Qué tiene V. que hacer? Tengo que escribir el tema inglés. Qué buenos son mis alumnos y qué aplicados! De quién es esta máxima? Del profesor que me enseñó la moral. Conoce V. á mis hermanos? Conozco los que están en (*at*) Roma, pero no conozco los que están en (*in*) Francia. La que cria á sus hijos es buena madre.

LECCION XXIV.

ADJETIVOS Y PRONOMBRES INDEFINIDOS.

178. Adjetivos y pronombres indefinidos son unos vocablos que designan los objetos de una manera vaga ó general.

179. *One, people, men, they, we.* Todos estos vocablos sir-



ven para traducir nuestro *se* unipersonal, ó como sujetos de un verbo en tercera persona del plural sin sujeto expreso. Sobre esto obsérvense las siguientes indicaciones :

1.^a *One* se, uno, es el más indeterminado, y lleva siempre el verbo en tercera persona singular, aunque se use por sujeto de verbos empleados en castellano en tercera de plural, como *dicen*, *hablan*, etc. En proverbios ó sentencias en que usamos nosotros la primera persona plural se emplea en inglés *one* del mismo modo :

Se come cuando se tiene hambre.	<i>One eats when one is hungry.</i>
Uno no puede estar siempre sobre sí.	<i>One cannot be always on one's guard.</i>
Dicen.	<i>One says, they say, people say, it is said.</i>
Debiéramos amar á nuestros enemigos.	<i>One should love one's enemies.</i>

2.^a *People*, *men*, *they*, se usan cuando se atribuye la acción á un gran círculo de personas, como una población, etc., y llevan el verbo en tercera persona plural, y *we* cuando se trata de cierto número de personas presentes :

Qué se dice (ó dicen) de nuevo ?	} <i>What do they say new ?</i> <i>What is the news ?</i>
No se puede hacer lo que se quiere.	
Aquí se estudia, amigo.	} <i>We cannot do what we like.</i> <i>People cannot do what they like.</i> <i>Here we study, my friend.</i>

3.^a En todos estos casos, especialmente cuando la acción se expresa en sentido general, indeterminado, se puede traducir nuestra forma unipersonal por la pasiva :

Se me dijo que había llegado.	<i>I was told that he had arrived.</i>
Se dice que es un hombre honrado.	<i>He is said to be an honest man.</i>
Me dicen que es un borracho.	<i>I am told that he is a drunkard.</i>
Se vende el vino á 5 chelines botella.	<i>Wine is sold five shillings a bottle.</i>

180. *Other*, *another*, otro; el primero toma s en plural cuan-

do es pronombre; *another* sólo se usa en singular. En genitivo *other's*, *another's* puede traducirse por *ajeno*.

One another se..... uno á otro, mutuamente, etc., expresa reciprocidad entre dos :

Tome V. otro libro y déme V. ése.	<i>Take another book and give me that.</i>
Agrada á algunos, pero disgusta á otros.	<i>He pleases some, but he disgusts others.</i>
Está prohibido tomar bienes ajenos.	<i>It is forbidden to take another's property.</i>
Los hermanos debieran amarse mutuamente.	<i>Brothers and sisters should love one another.</i>

181. *Each* cada, cada uno, es adjetivo; *each one* cada uno, es pronombre; *each other* se..... unos á otros, mutuamente, recíprocamente, expresa reciprocidad entre muchos :

Cada alumno recibirá un premio.	<i>Each pupil shall receive a prize.</i>
Debeis amaros recíprocamente.	<i>You ought to love each other.</i>

182. *Every* cada, todo-a, es más indefinido que *each*.

Every one, *every body*, cada uno, todo el mundo; *every thing*, todo, cada cosa :

Todo el mundo lo cree.	<i>Every body believes it.</i>
Todo hombre está sujeto á la muerte.	<i>Every man is subject to death.</i>

183. *Some*, *any*, alguno-a-os-as, un poco de. Lo que dijimos del empleo de estos adjetivos (R. 97) debe aplicarse á todos sus compuestos : *some one*, *somebody*; *any one*, *any body*, álguien, alguno-a; *something*, *any thing*, algo, alguna cosa; *some where*, *any where*, alguna parte :

Algunos son felices, miétras otros son desgraciados.	<i>Some are happy, while others are miserable.</i>
Tome V. un poco de pan.	<i>Take some bread.</i>
Hay álguien aquí?	<i>Is any one here?</i>
No veo á nadie.	<i>I do not see any body.</i>
Va V. á alguna parte?	<i>Do you go any where?</i>
No creo nada de eso.	<i>I do not believe any thing of that.</i>

Obs. 43. *Any* y sus compuestos se emplean en oraciones negativas con la significacion de nada, nadie, etc., en vez de *no* y sus derivados, porque dos negaciones afirman en inglés: *We have no flowers* ó *we have not any flowers*, no tenemos ningunas flores.

184. *No*, además de adverbio negativo, es adjetivo indefinido, y de él se derivan los pronombres *none*, *no one*, ninguno; *nobody*, nadie, ninguno; *nothing*, nada.

Con estos pronombres no puede usarse otra negacion en la frase, ni por consiguiente el auxiliar *do* en oracion negativa, no interrogativa, porque éste debe ir acompañado de *not*.

Aunque *no*, *none*, *nobody*, etc., tienen igual significacion que *not any*, *not any body*, etc., estos últimos son generalmente preferibles:

No creen VV. nada de eso?

No creemos nada de eso.

No hay tiempo que perder.

No hay nadie.

{ *Do you believe nothing of that?*
 { *Do you not believe any thing of*
 { *that?*
 { *We believe nothing of that.*
 { *We do not believe any thing of that.*
 { *There is no time to lose.*
 { *There is not any time to lose.*
 { *There is nobody* } ó *there is not any*
 { *body.*

185. *Such* tal, semejante; *such a one* tal, fulano; *such and such* ó *such and such a one* fulano-a y zutano-a. *Such as* tales, cuales, los que, se usa en vez de *those who*:

Tal es el estado del hombre, que nunca está en reposo.

La señora Fulana me lo ha dicho.

Veo á Fulano y Zutano.

Los que aman á sus enemigos son buena gente.

Such is the state of man, that he is never at rest.

Mrs. such a one has said it to me.

I see such and such a one.

Such as love their enemies are good people.

186. *All*, todo-a-os-as; *the whole*, todo-a. Ambos son invariables, como adjetivos y como pronombres.

All se usa generalmente para designar una cosa que no es divisible, ó varios individuos; usado en sentido general no lleva artículo :

Todos los hombres son mortales.	<i>All men are mortal.</i>
Todo está perdido ménos el honor.	<i>All is lost but our honour.</i>
Yo era el más ocupado de todos.	<i>I was the busiest of all.</i>

The whole designa una colectividad ó un objeto compuesto de partes :

Toda la suma está perdida.	<i>The whole sum is lost.</i>
Todo el mundo.	<i>All the (ó the whole) world.</i>

OBS. 44. Si á *all* sigue un pronombre personal, debe ir éste precedido de *of*: lo mismo debe hacerse con *both* ambos :

Todos nosotros lo vemos.	<i>All of us see it.</i>
Todos ellos llegan hoy.	<i>All of them arrive to-day.</i>
Los dos amamos á nuestros amigos.	<i>Both of us love our friends.</i>
El padre y la madre están en Londres.	<i>Both father and mother are in London.</i>

Both ambos, se emplea con frecuencia cuando se nombran dos objetos y no tiene equivalente en castellano, como en el ejemplo anterior.

187. *Either* uno ú otro, cada uno, ambos; *either*..... or ó..... ó, ya..... ya; *neither* ni uno ni otro, ninguno de los dos; *neither*.... nor ni..... ni. Llevan el verbo en singular.

Uno ú otro libro es bueno.	<i>Either book is good.</i>
Ni uno ni otro es aficionado al vino.	<i>Neither is fond of wine.</i>
Ninguno de los dos le escribirá á usted.	<i>Neither will write to you.</i>
No es ni avaro ni pródigo.	<i>He is neither covetous nor prodigal.</i>

<i>will not</i>	no quiere	<i>to succour</i>	socorrer
<i>ever so</i>	{ siquiera unas	<i>to need</i>	necesitar
	{ (sean)	<i>se han</i>	<i>have</i>
<i>but</i>	{ pero, solo, no.....	<i>marchado</i>	<i>departed</i>
	{ más que	uno ú otro	{ <i>either the one or</i>
<i>to saw</i>	serrar		<i>the other</i>
<i>to dig</i>	cavar	todavía	<i>still</i>
<i>wafers</i>	obleas	en otro tiempo,	{ <i>formerly</i>
<i>ground</i>	tierra	antiguamente	{ <i>short</i>
<i>drudgery (dræ- chæri)</i>	{ trabajo servil	bajito	<i>to</i>
<i>desk</i>	mesa	para con	<i>odd</i>
<i>use</i>	utilidad	raro	<i>deceive</i>
<i>may</i>	ojalá que	engañar	<i>war</i>
<i>been done</i>	sido hecho	guerra	<i>to behave</i>
<i>may have</i>	haya sido	portarse	<i>was governed</i>
<i>no longer</i>	no..... ya más	se gobernaba	<i>law</i>
<i>to be acquaint- ted with</i>	{ conocer á	ley	<i>in this way</i>
<i>event</i>	acontecimiento	de este modo	<i>noise</i>
<i>is in the right</i>	tiene razon	ruido	<i>prepared</i>
<i>stick</i>	baston	preparado	<i>however</i>
<i>be ready</i>	está pronto	sin embargo	<i>must gain</i>
		debe ganar	

Tema 24.

Are you fond of your children? I love them all; but I love John most. I love all men; I love my enemies too. Charles is departed with all his friends. Are you fond of flowers? Every body loves flowers. None is so deaf as he that will not hear. Each one has watered his flowers. What do you say? I say nothing. Every one who has good books is content. Is your name John? Whatever your name is, nobody likes either you or your name. I have lost my stick somewhere. In the beginning God created Heaven and Earth and all things in them: he created them in six days; on the seventh he created nothing. Give me ever so few cherries. I have but a dozen. Is this man content? The poor are often somewhat more content than the rich. Are you going home? I go every day to my friend's who is very ill. Have you given him some cheese and bread? Pens, ink and paper are sold here, but not cheese, bread nor wine. Give me some salt, if you please. I have neither salt nor pepper. On my desk is an elegant inkstand, with pens, paper and wafers, none of which will be (*serán*) of any use to me, for I had rather (*mejor quisiera*) go and dig the ground, or saw wood, or do any such drudgery,

than study. May nothing worse have been done by any body than what has been done by these children! Whatever money may have been given him he has no longer anything. Are you acquainted with that woman? She is such an old hag of a woman that no one likes her. I gained such a son that all men called me happy. Be ready to succour such persons as need your assistance. He did it for no other reason, than to be applauded by his friends.

Se han marchado Luis y Juana? Los dos se han marchado. No, señor; uno ú otro está en Madrid. Ambos hermanos son todavía jóvenes. Tengo una carta de mis padres cada semana; pero ninguna de (*from*) mis tios. Ha visto V. mis libros? No he visto ni uno ni otro; pero V. ha recibido los dos. Todos nosotros vemos que V. ha dicho la verdad. Va su primo de V. á alguna parte? No va á ninguna parte, porque estudia todo el dia. Amo á mis padres más y más cada dia. Conoció V. en otro tiempo á mis primos? No los he conocido (*pret. def.*). Uno de mis primos era un hombron; el otro, muy bajito; ambos á dos eran muy buenos y amables para con todo el mundo, pero cada uno de ellos creia engañar al otro. Se ven cosas muy raras en este año; ahora dicen que tendremos (*we shall have*) guerra. Si se porta V. mal, qué dirán de V.? Antiguamente en España cada provincia se gobernaba por sus propias leyes. Por qué estudia usted tanto? Porque de este modo aprendo algo cada dia. Jamas habiamos oido semejante ruido. Han visto VV. semejante cosa? Ninguno de nosotros estaba preparado para (*for*) semejante acontecimiento. Ninguno de los dos tiene razon; sin embargo, el uno ó el otro debe ganar la causa.

LECCION XXV.

VERBO AUXILIAR **to have**, HABER Ó TENER.

188. Hay en inglés las mismas clases de verbos que en castellano, siendo tambien iguales en ambos idiomas los números, personas, tiempos y voces.

Como advertencia preliminar á la conjugacion, debemos hacer notar que los verbos *shall* deber y *will* querer, se emplean como auxiliares del futuro y condicional de todos los verbos.

Estos dos auxiliares sólo se usan en presente y pretérito de indicativo, el último de los cuales tiene además significacion de condicional. Se conjugan como se ve en el fut. y cond. de *to have*.

189. Los verbos ingleses no tienen, pues, forma propia de futuro y condicional; el primero se forma anteponiendo el presente *will* ó *shall* al infinitivo del verbo que se conjuga sin *to*; y el segundo, anteponiendo al mismo *would* ó *should*.

PARADIGMA DEL VERBO **to have**, HABER Ó TENER.

INFINITIVO.

PRESENTE.

Haber ó tener, to have.

PASADO.

Haber habido ó tenido, to have had.

PARTICIPIOS.

PRESENTE.

Habiendo ó teniendo, having.

PASADO.

Habiendo ñabi-do ó tenido, having had.

Habido ó tenido, had.

INDICATIVO.

1 PRESENTE.

Yo he ó tengo, I have.
etc. thou hast.
he has.
we have.
you, ye have.
they have.

2 IMPERFECTO Y PERFECTO.

Yo habia, tenía; I had.
hube, tuve, etc. thou hadst.
he, she, it had.
we had.
you, ye had.
they had.

3 PRETÉRITO INDEFINIDO.

He tenido, etc. I have had.
 thou hast had.
 he has had.
 we have had.
 you have had.
 they have had.

4 PLUSCUAMPERFECTO Y PRETÉRITO ANTERIOR.

Yo habia, hube tenido, etc. I had had.
 thou hadst had.
 he, she, it had had.
 we had had.
 you had had.
 they had had.

5 FUTURO ENUNCIATIVO.

Yo habré ó tendré, etc. I shall have.
 thou wilt have.
 he will have.
 we shall have.
 you will have.
 they will have.

FUTURO IMPERATIVO.

Yo habré ó tendré, etc. I will have.
 thou shalt have.
 he shall have.
 we will have.
 you shall have.
 they shall have.

6 FUTURO ANTERIOR.

Yo habré tenido, etc. I shall ó will have had.
 thou shalt ó wilt have had.
 he shall ó will have had.
 we shall ó will have had.
 you shall ó will have had.
 they shall ó will have had.

CONDICIONAL.

PRESENTE.

Yo habria, tendria, etc. I should ó would have.
 thou wouldst, shouldst have.
 he should, would have.
 we should, would have.
 you should, would have.
 they should, would have.

PASADO.

Yo habria habido ó tenido, etc. I should ó would have had.
 thou shouldst ó wouldst have had.
 he should ó would have had.
 we should ó would have had.
 you should ó would have had.
 they should ó would have had.

IMPERATIVO.

<i>Ten tú,</i>	have.
<i>Tenga él,</i>	let him have.
<i>Tenga ella,</i>	let her have.
<i>Tenga él (neu.),</i>	let it have.
<i>Tengamos,</i>	let us have.
<i>Tened, tenga V.,</i>	have.
<i>Tengan ellos ó ellas,</i>	let them have.

SUBJUNTIVO.

PRESENTE SIMPLE.

<i>Que yo haya ó tenga, etc.</i>	that I have.
	that thou have.
	that he have.
	that we have.
	that you have.
	that they have.

PRESENTE POTENCIAL.

<i>Que yo haya ó tenga, etc.</i>	that I may have.
	that thou mayest have.
	that he may have.
	that we may have.
	that you may have.
	that they may have.

IMPERFECTO SIMPLE.

<i>Si yo hubiera,</i>	if I had.
<i>hubiese, etc.</i>	if thou hadst.
	if he had.
	if we had.
	if you had.
	if they had.

IMPERFECTO POTENCIAL.

<i>Yo hubiera,</i>	I might have.
<i>hubiese, etc.</i>	thou mightest have.
	he might have.
	we might have.
	you might have.
	they might have.

FUTURO SUBJUNTIVO.

<i>Si yo hubiere ó tuviere,</i>	if I should have.
<i>etc.</i>	if thou shouldst have.
	if he should have.
	if we should have.
	if you should have.
	if they should have.

190. En el estilo bíblico, poético y del púlpito, la tercera persona del singular acaba en *th*, que era la terminacion antigua: *he hath*.

191. El presente de subjuntivo de todos los verbos ingleses es igual al infinitivo sin variacion alguna: yo ame *I love*, tú ames *thou love*, etc.

OBS. 45. Recuérdese lo que dejamos dicho acerca de las formas interrogativa y negativa (R. 108).

En los tiempos compuestos, para formar la interrogacion se coloca el sujeto detras del auxiliar, luégo la negacion y en seguida el participio:

No ha tenido V. muchas visitas?	<i>Have you not had many visits?</i>
No he tenido visitas.	<i>I have not had any visits.</i>
No tendremos pronto vacaciones?	<i>Shall we not have soon vacations?</i>
No habrán tenido bastante?	<i>Shall they not have had enough?</i>

192. La expresion *tener que*, etc., se traduce por *to have* ó por el verbo *must* deber:

Tengo que escribir una carta.	} <i>I have to write a letter.</i> <i>I must write a letter.</i>

<i>task</i>	tema, tarea	paciencia	<i>patience</i>
<i>costumes</i>	trajes	nuevo	<i>new</i>
<i>bought</i>	ha comprado	placer	<i>pleasure</i>
<i>present</i>	regalo	triste	<i>sad</i>
<i>been</i>	sido	bota	<i>boot</i>
<i>ill</i>	malo	perdiz	<i>partridge</i>
<i>advanced</i>	anticipado	es necesario	<i>it is necessary</i>
<i>beginning</i>	principio	prudencia	<i>prudence</i>
<i>sacrament</i>	sacramento	sentimiento	<i>sentiment</i>
<i>ordained</i>	establecido	elevado	<i>elevated</i>
<i>supper</i>	cena	no es de su*	} <i>it is not to be supposed</i>
<i>jewel</i>	joya	poner	
<i>precaution</i>	precaucion	era conveniente	} <i>it was convenient</i>
<i>courage</i>	valor	niente	
<i>comercio</i>	<i>trade</i>	guante	<i>glove</i>
<i>juguete</i>	<i>toy</i>	tino	<i>fine</i>

Tema 25.

Have you many friends? I have a few good friends. That man has a great deal of silver in his house. Has she had a little patience? She has not any patience. You have had time enough in order to write your task. She had more patience than you. Have they had as many protectors as you? They have had more happiness than we. Who has to make you the tables? The carpenter has to make them. Will they have prettier costumes than she? I shall have a very pretty hat. You will have had many flowers. Shall you have some money? I do not know if I shall have some money. Whatever books and pens you have, you do not work. Shall I not have the fine penknife that my brother bought? You shall have this present when you are diligent. We have had this week the visit of the Messrs. Smith, who have come (*venido*) with their sister. No one would have been richer than our neighbour if he had not had so much ill fortune. Have patience my dear friends; as soon as I have money I will pay (*pagaré*) all that you have advanced for me. O Lord! thou hast safely brought us to the beginning of this day. How many sacraments hath Christ ordained in his church? Baptism and the supper of the Lord, as generally necessary to salvation.

(Para corregir.)

How many volumes hath this work? It hath two. Which volume of his work has you? I have the second. Have our merchant any more jewels? He have some more. What have you that do? I have that write. Have the cook of the Frenchman had any chickens? He have had some. What has the Spaniards had? They has had nothing. Shall have you money? I shall have some. It is necessary that he has good books. It is not to be supposed that thou havest had a dictionary like that of Flügel. She would have had less precaution than you. Have we (*imperat.*) courage and prudence. It was convenient that you haved a just reward. Have you (*imperat.*) patience, my dear friend. Would have you money if your mother were (*estuviese*) here? Yes.

Cuando yo tenía á mis padres era muy feliz; mi padre tenía muchísimas casas y jardines; teníamos muchos criados, y uno de mis tios tenía un gran comercio. Cuántos caballos tienen V. y su hermano de V.? Tenemos cuatro; dos cada uno. El niño tendría bonitos juguetes si yo tuviese dinero. Tiene V. muchas cosas que hacer? Yo hubiera tenido muchas cosas que hacer si mi padre hubiese estado (*been*) aquí. Ustedes tenían siempre mucho que (*to*) hacer. Quién ha tenido mi cortaplumas? Yo le he tenido esta mañana. Estas señoras no tenían tantos amigos en otros tiempos. Tendrá ella un poco de paciencia? Si teneis un poco de paciencia, tendréis un sombrero nuevo y vuestros hermanitos tendrán una docena de pañuelos. Estarías contento si tuvieses todas estas flores? No, señora. Si no tuviésemos tantos amigos tendríamos poco placer. Mis primos no hubiesen estado tan tristes si hubiesen recibido las cartas de su padre. No tendrá su prima de V. botas nuevas? Tendría botas nuevas si su madre tuviese dinero. Tengan VV. buena carne y buen vino y que ellos tengan media docena de perdices. Es necesario que ella tenga más prudencia que todos, y que nosotros tengamos sentimientos más elevados que nuestros enemigos. No es de suponer que ellas hayan tenido maestros más instruidos que el de mi prima. Era conveniente que V. tuviese el tiempo suficiente para (*in order to*) estudiar su leccion, pero era tambien conveniente que yo tuviese algo que hacer. Habria sido (*been*) mejor que ella hubiese tenido guantes blancos y que nosotros hubiésemos tenido botas finas.

LECCION XXVI.

VERBO AUXILIAR **to be**.—CONTRACCIONES.

193. Este verbo es el más irregular de la lengua inglesa, tambien el que más variedad de formas presenta.

PARADIGMA DEL VERBO **to be**, SER Ó ESTAR.

INFINITIVO.

PRESENTE.

PASADO.

Ser ó estar, *to be.*

Haber sido ó estado, *to have been.*

PARTICIPIOS.

PRESENTE.

Siendo ó estando, being.

PASADO.

*Habiendo sido ó estado, having been.**Sido ó estado, been.*

INDICATIVO.

PRESENTE.

Yo soy ó estoy, etc. I am.
 thou art.
 he is.
 we are.
 you are.
 they are.

IMPERFECTO Y PERFECTO.

Yo era ó estaba; fui ó estuve, etc. I was.
 thou wast.
 he was.
 we were.
 you were.
 they were.

PRETÉRITO INDEFINIDO.

Yo he sido ó estado, etc. I have been.
 thou hast been.
 he has been.
 we have been.
 you have been.
 they have been.

PLUSQUAMPERFECTO Y PERFECTO ANTERIOR.

Yo habia, hubsido ó estado, etc. I had been.
 thou hadst been.
 he, she, it had been.
 we had been.
 you had been.
 they had been.

FUTURO.

Yo seré ó estaré, etc. I shall ó will be.
 thou shalt ó wilt be.
 he shall ó will be.
 we shall ó will be.
 you shall ó will be.
 they shall ó will be.

FUTURO ANTERIOR.

Yo habré sido ó estado, etc. I shall ó will have been.
 thou shalt ó wilt have been.
 he shall ó will have been.
 we shall ó will have been.
 you shall ó will have been.
 they shall ó will have been.

CONDICIONAL.

PRESENTE.

Yo sería, estaría, etc.

I should, would be.
 thou shouldst, wouldst be.
 he should, would be.
 we should, would be.
 you should, would be.
 they should, would be.

PASADO.

Yo habría sido, estado, etc.

I should ó would have been.
 thou shouldst ó wouldst have been.
 he should ó would have been.
 we should ó would have been.
 you should ó would have been.
 they should ó would have been.

IMPERATIVO.

<i>Sé ó está tú,</i>	be.
<i>Sea ó esté él,</i>	let him be.
<i>Sea ó esté ella,</i>	let her be.
<i>Seamos, estémonos nosotros,</i>	let us be.
<i>Sed ó estad, sea V.,</i>	be.
<i>Sean ó estén ellos ó ellas,</i>	let them be.

SUBJUNTIVO.

PRESENTE SIMPLE.

<i>Que yo sea ó</i>	that I be.
<i>esté, etc.</i>	that thou be.
	that he be.
	that we be.
	that you be.
	that they be.

PRESENTE POTENCIAL.

<i>Que yo sea ó</i>	that I may be.
<i>esté, etc.</i>	that thou mayest be.
	that he may be.
	that we may be.
	that you may be.
	that they may be.

IMPERFECTO SIMPLE.

<i>Que yo fuera,</i>	that I were.
<i>fuese, estu-</i>	that thou wert.
<i>viere, etc.</i>	that he were.
	that we were.
	that you were.
	that they were.

IMPERFECTO POTENCIAL.

<i>Que yo fuera,</i>	I might be.
<i>fuese, estu-</i>	thou mightest be.
<i>viere, etc.</i>	he might be.
	we might be.
	you might be.
	they might be.

FUTURO SUBJUNTIVO.

<i>Si yo fuere ó estuviere, etc.</i>	if I should be.
	if thou shouldst be.
	if he should be.
	if we should be.
	if you should be.
	if they should be.

194. Todo verbo inglés debe llevar un sujeto expresado; por tanto, cuando la frase castellana empiece por el verbo *ser* sin sujeto determinado, debe precederle *it*: refiriéndose á sujeto personal determinado, se hará uso de *he* ó *she*:

Es mi sombrero.	<i>It is my hat.</i>
Era mi tintero.	<i>It was my inkstand.</i>
El pintor es quien lo ha dicho.	<i>It is the painter who says so.</i>
Es zapatero.	<i>He is a shoemaker.</i>

195. En el lenguaje familiar se usan ciertas abreviaciones en los verbos, especialmente auxiliares:

Hé aquí las más frecuentes:

Yo soy,	<i>I'm (aim)</i>	por	<i>I am</i>	{	No soy, etc. <i>I ain't</i> (<i>ain't</i>)	{	por	<i>I am not</i>
Él es,	<i>he's (his)</i>	»	<i>he is</i>		<i>he isn't (hisent)</i>	»		<i>he is not</i>
Somos,	<i>we're (uir)</i>	»	<i>we are</i>		<i>we aren't (ui arent)</i>	»		<i>we are not</i>
Sois,	<i>you're</i>	»	<i>you are</i>		<i>you aren't</i>	»		<i>you are not</i>
Son,	<i>they're</i>	»	<i>they are</i>		<i>they aren't</i>	»		<i>they are not</i>
<i>I wasn't</i>	(<i>uósent</i>)	»	<i>I was not</i>		<i>wasn't he? (uósent)</i>	»		<i>was I not?</i>
<i>he wasn't</i>	(<i>uósent</i>)	»	<i>he was not</i>		<i>wasn't I? (uósent)</i>	»		<i>was he not?</i>
<i>we</i>	} <i>weren't</i> } (<i>uérent</i>)	} »	<i>were not</i>	{	<i>we</i>	}	<i>weren't</i>	» <i>were not</i>
<i>you</i>					<i>you</i>			
<i>they</i>					<i>they</i>			

No escribe el hombre?

Does the man not write? ó doesn't the man write?

No hablo yo?

Don't I speak? ó do I not speak?

No iría V. allá?

Shouldn't you go there? should you not go there?

No nos amábamos?

Didn't we love each other? did we not love each other?

No lo tomaría V.?	<i>Wouldn't you take it? would you not take it?</i>
No seamos mezquinos.	<i>Letn't us be mean = let's not be mean = let us not be mean.</i>
No quiere hacerlo?	<i>Won't he do it? = will he not do it?</i>
Él no lo hará.	<i>He shan't do it = he shall not do it.</i>
No lo hará?	<i>Shan't he do it? = shall he not do it?</i>

Obs. 46. Despréndese de los ejemplos que anteceden, que cuando tiene lugar la contraccion, precede la negacion al sujeto en la forma interrogativa; miéntras que si no se verifica dicha contraccion, va el sujeto ántes que la negacion:

No escribe el niño una carta?	}	<i>Doesn't the child write a letter?</i>
		<i>Does the child not write a letter?</i>
No lo tomará V.?	}	<i>Wouldn't you take it?</i>
		<i>Would you not take it?</i>
No quiere hacerlo?	}	<i>Won't he do it?</i>
		<i>Will he not do it?</i>

<i>to belong</i>	pertenecer	virtuoso	<i>virtuous</i>
<i>mass-day</i>	día de misa	jóven	<i>young</i>
<i>festival</i>	día de fiesta	enemigo	<i>enemy</i>
<i>quite</i>	enteramente	todavía	<i>still</i>
<i>to thank</i>	dar gracias	desgracia	} <i>misfortune</i>
<i>whether</i>	si (dub.)		
<i>this long time</i>	por tanto tiempo	censura pública	<i>common censure</i>
<i>was living</i>	vivia	expuesto	<i>exposed</i>
<i>chief (chif)</i>	principal	lástima	<i>pity</i>
<i>Gospel</i>	Eyangelio.	consejero	<i>adviser</i>
<i>apostle</i>	apóstol	indulgente	<i>indulgent</i>
vírgen	<i>virgin</i>	discrecion	<i>discretion</i>
diligente	<i>diligent</i>	obstinado	<i>obstinate</i>
por lo regular	<i>usually</i>	atrevido	<i>daring</i>

Tema 26.

Have you been in Paris? I have been in London. Whose is this house? It was mine, but now it belongs to Mr. John Parish. If I were rich I should give (*daria*) you some money, but not being a rich man I give you nothing. Have you good teeth? They are bad. To-day is a mass-day. No; it is a festival. Where have you been to-

day? We have been in the country. Let us be good and wise and people will love us. I am not very well, and a country-life will be better for me than that of the town. How do you do to-day? I am quite well, thank you. How are your parents? They are very well too. Is your little sister better? Yes, she is, thank God. Is the old one better? No; he is not. If you were richer than you are now, would you be much happier than at present? As I have never been very rich, I don't well know whether I should be happier or not. Would you be glad to see your parents whom you have not seen this long time? I should be most happy to see them. It was not to be supposed that they had been so lazy.

(Para corregir.)

How is you? Quite well, thank you, but my father are worse that yesterday. How art Miss Jane, to-day? She is rather better. What lovely girl that is. Whose hat is that? Is the man's who wast here yesterday. What is that gentleman? Is a physician. Who is that young lady? Is my sister. When my parents and friends was living, I wast much happier that now. All these scholars shalt be rewarded. Would you been happy in the world? Yes. He are the best man in the world; would be hard to find a better one. To be rich and be lazy are generally the same thing. They will have be your enemys. Who has be here? My brother John have be here. Who was the apostles? Those twelve disciple whom Christ chose (*escogió*) for the chiefs ministers of his Gospel.

Serán VV. aplicados? Seriamos más diligentes que VV. Los que son perezosos son generalmente pobres, pero los que son aplicados son por lo regular ricos. Ha sido V. en otro tiempo feliz? Sí, señor. Eras feliz porque eras prudente y virtuoso. Aquella señora es una madre virtuosa y está contenta; pero sus vecinas están tristes porque sus hijos son perezosos, como (*lo*) eran ellas cuando jóvenes. Serias mi amigo si yo (*lo*) fuese tuyo; pero ahora erés mi enemigo. Eras todavía muy jóven cuando tu familia tuvo tantas desgracias. Quién fué la Virgen María? La Madre de Jesucristo. Si esas señoras

fuesen ricas serian demasiado orgullosas ó hubieran estado expuestas á la censura pública. Es una lástima que ellos no hayan estado aquí, porque hubieran sido mis consejeros. Sé indulgente, pero con discrecion; si, seamos indulgentes; pero es menester que vosotros seais prudentes. No es posible que ella sea tan obstinada. Por qué no? Es posible que hayamos sido engañados, porque no era cierto que ella fuese pobre. No era de suponer que hubiese sido tan atrevida ó que ellos hubiesen sido tan indulgentes.

LECCION XXVII.

USOS DEL VERBO **to have**.

196. En los tiempos compuestos es casi el único auxiliar de los verbos ingleses.

Sin embargo, puede emplearse en su lugar *to be* con algunos verbos neutros que designan movimiento, sin que se considere como falta el dejar de hacerlo:

Todos han salido.

Every body is (ó has) gone out.

197. Las frases *querer que*, *desear que* se pueden traducir por *will have*, en cuyo caso el sujeto del verbo que sigue pasa á ser régimen en inglés, y dicho verbo se pone en infinitivo sin *to*:

Quiere V. que vaya á paseo hoy?

Will you have me go a walking to-day?

Quiero que vayas allí.

I will have you go there.

No quisiera que mis gentes fuesen creídas.

I would not have my folks believed.

198. Las expresiones *más bien ó antes quiero*, *quisiera*, etc., se traducen por el pretérito de *to have* seguido de *rather ó sooner*, y *antes*, *más bien querré*, *querria*, etc., por *will ó*

would, segun que sea futuro ó condicional, con *rather* ó *sooner*.
El infinitivo que sigue nó lleva *to*:

Más bien quisiera estudiar que co- ser.	<i>She had rather study than sew.</i>
Estoy seguro que mejor querrán jugar que estudiar.	<i>I am sure that they will rather play than study.</i>

199. *Mejor sería que, valdria más que*, y otras frases análogas, se traducen por *had better* con el verbo que sigue en infinitivo sin *to*: esta construccion no es elegante, aunque muy usada:

Valdria más que pagase V. sus deudas.	<i>You had better pay your debts.</i>
--	---------------------------------------

200. *Acabar de* se traduce por *to have just*, y el infinitivo español se pone en participio pasado:

Acaban de preguntar por V.	<i>They have just asked for you.</i>
Acabamos de publicar una obra.	<i>We have just published a work.</i>

201. *Tener*, expresando posesion de un objeto, se traduce con frecuencia por *to have got*, lit. haber adquirido; pero debe advertirse que esta es una locucion viciosa:

Usted tenia una hermosa casa.	<i>You had got a beautiful house.</i>
Tengo un libro.	<i>I have got a book.</i>

202. Despues de los verbos que expresan voluntad, deseo, mandato, como *querer*, *decir*, *desear*, etc., puede usarse en inglés una construccion latina, que consiste en suprimir el *que* castellano, poner en acusativo el sujeto de nuestro subjuntivo y éste en infinitivo:

Qué quiere V. que yo beba?	<i>What do you want me to drink?</i>
Deseo que V. coma conmigo.	<i>I desire you to dine with me.</i>
Diga V. á su hermana que venga.	<i>Tell your sister to come.</i>
Quisiera que él fuese allí.	<i>I should like him to go there.</i>

<i>ground</i>	suelo	preguntar por	<i>to ask for</i>
<i>to saw</i>	serrar	traer	<i>to bring</i>
<i>to drink</i>	beber	en casa	<i>at home</i>
<i>to die</i>	morir	caído	<i>fallen (aux. be)</i>
<i>to lie</i>	mentir	presencia	<i>presence</i>
<i>drunkard</i>	borracho	contra	<i>against</i>
<i>glutton</i>	gloton	esclavo	<i>slave</i>
<i>to dig</i>	cavar	viajar	<i>to travel</i>
<i>bachelor</i>	soltero	obedecer	<i>to obey</i>

Tema 27.

The Church desires her children to be good. Will the boy write the letter? I expect him to write it. What has he told you? He bids me go in. I have got an English grammar. Have you seen my uncle? We have just now seen him: he has just arrived. I had rather die than lie. Why don't you drink of that excellent wine? Because I would not have my folks about me (*que me rodean*) believe that I am a drunkard or a glutton. Had you rather Cæsar were living and die all slaves? I had rather study than dig the ground or saw wood. What do you say? I say, you had better remain a bachelor. Why don't you sit down? We have been standing long enough; we had better sit down. What will you take? We had better take tea than chocolate. How many of these stockings have you to sell? A great many. I suppose you would not have your cheese eaten (*comido*) by the mice. Would you have it done (*hecho*) in your own presence? Yes, madam. He had rather see the soldiers than look upon (*mirar*) his schoolmaster. You had better leave (*dejar*) that. What would you have him do against so many people? I will have you know my intention.

Acabo de ver á su amigo, que me ha preguntado por V. Ha recibido una carta de su padre? Acabamos de recibir una carta de (*from*) París que nos trae buenas noticias. Entónces tenían una gran casa, pero yo tengo ahora un cuarto muy bonito. Está su padre de usted en casa? No, señor, ha salido (*aux. to be*). Qué noticias hay? Dicen que el ministro ha caído. Antes quisiéramos morir que ser esclavos. Sería mejor que viajasen VV. por tierra que por (*by*) mar. Qué tiene V. que hacer? Tengo muchas cosas que hacer. Hijo mio,

quiero que obedezcas á tus profesores. Dí á tu hermanito que venga. Á qué hora espera V. que venga? No sé, pero me prometió venir á las siete de la tarde. Desea V. que yo escriba una carta á esa señorita? Deseo que V. estudie su leccion.

LECCION XXVIII.

USOS DEL VERBO **to be**.

203. Este verbo tiene aplicaciones muy variadas en la lengua inglesa, y que conviene estudiar con especial cuidado si se quiere dominar la conversacion en este idioma.

Ademas de los casos en que sirve para traducir nuestros *ser* y *estar*, como en la pasiva, etc., se emplea en los siguientes casos:

1.º Por nuestro unipersonal *haber*; hay, habia, etc., seguido ó precedido de *there*, segun sea ó no interrogativa la frase, debiendo concertarse con el sustantivo que sigue:

Hay estudiantes que no quieren trabajar.	<i>There are students who do not wish to work.</i>
Habia un monarca sin Estados.	<i>There was a monarch without dominions.</i>

2.º Por el mismo verbo *haber* ó tener, cuando expresa la distancia, medida ó dimension (R. 132):

Qué distancia hay de aquí á París?	<i>How far is it from here to Paris?</i>
Hay 1.300 kilómetros.	<i>It is 1.300 kilometers.</i>
Hay mucha distancia.	<i>It is very far.</i>
Mi cuarto tiene 15 piés de largo y 12 de ancho.	<i>My room is fifteen feet long by twelve wide.</i>

3.º Por nuestro *deber de*, acompañado tambien de *there* y el verbo *haber* que le sigue, se traduce igualmente por *to be*; asimismo por *tener que*, *ir á*, cuando se indica obligacion, intencion ó conveniencia de hacer algo:

Debe de haber una gran ceremonia religiosa.	<i>There is to be a great religious ceremony.</i>
Debía partir con él.	<i>I was to start with him.</i>
Tengo que almorzar con mi tío.	<i>I am to breakfast with my uncle.</i>
Voy á escribir una carta.	<i>I am to write a letter.</i>

4.º Por *hé aquí, héle ahí* (fr. *voici, voilà*), etc., con *here* ó *there* respectivamente :

Hé aquí un hermano suyo.	<i>Here is a brother of hers.</i>
Hélos aquí; hélos allí.	<i>Here they are; there they are.</i>

5.º Por *tener* para expresar la edad, ó cuando se expresa una sensacion ó el estado de una persona, debiendo traducirse el sustantivo castellano por el correspondiente adjetivo inglés; obsérvense bien los ejemplos :

Usted tiene razon.	<i>You are right.</i>
Ella no tenía razon.	<i>She was wrong (ó not right).</i>
Los trabajadores tienen hambre.	<i>The workmen are hungry.</i>
Yo tengo calor, V. tiene frio.	<i>I am warm, you are cold.</i>
Las niñas tienen sed.	<i>The girls are thirsty.</i>
Tienen VV. sueño?	<i>Are you sleepy?</i>
Tienen los niños miedo?	<i>Are the children afraid?</i>
El cochero tiene vergüenza.	<i>The coachman is ashamed.</i>
Qué edad tiene el jóven?	<i>How old is the young man?</i>
	<i>What is that young man's age?</i>

6.º Por *hacer* ó *haber*, hablando del tiempo atmosférico ó del estado del suelo :

Qué tiempo hace?	<i>How is the weather?</i>
Hace buen dia.	<i>It is a fine day.</i>
Hacía mucho calor.	<i>It was very warm (ó hot).</i>
Hace un calor insoportable.	<i>It is sultry hot.</i>
Hace luna, hace sol.	<i>It is moonlight, it is sunshine.</i>
Hay polvo, hay barro.	<i>It is dusty, it is dirty.</i>
Había humedad.	<i>It was damp (ó wet).</i>
Hace un tiempo delicioso.	<i>It is charming weather.</i>

7.º *Valer más* es *to be better* :

Vale más ser el primero en un pueblo que el segundo en una ciudad.	<i>It is better to be the first in a village than the second in a town.</i>
--	---

8.º En las expresiones siguientes: *to be fond of* querer, ser aficionado á; *to be worth* valer, costar; *to be worth while* ó (ménos usado) *to be valid* valer la pena; *to be well* encontrar bien; *to be acquainted with* conocer; *to be a judge of something* ser inteligente en algo; *to be the question* tratarse de; *to be of use* servir, de qué sirve..... *of what use is*.....; me llamo, te llamas, etc., *my name is, your name is*; ahí tienes, etc., *there is ó there are*, etc.; es de suyo, etc., *he ó she is naturally*; es de suyo triste *she is naturally sad*; alegrarse *to be glad*; me alegro mucho *I am very glad*; sentir *to be sorry for*; lo siento mucho *I am very sorry for it*; *that is, that is to say* es decir; *it is to be found*, etc., se halla, se encuentra.

De qué se trata?

Se trata de vuestros progresos.

De qué le sirve á V. eso?

Eso no me sirve de nada.

Mi fusil me sirve de baston.

Vale la pena de escribirla eso?

What is going on?

The question is your improvement.

Of what use is that to you?

That is of no use to me.

I use my gun as a stick.

Is it worth while to write that to her?

<i>bird</i>	pájaro	<i>to take a walk</i>	dar un paseo
<i>to open</i>	abrir	<i>to want</i>	necesitar
<i>mouth</i>	boca	<i>parish priest</i>	párroco
<i>mile</i>	milla	<i>sick</i>	enfermo
<i>to sing</i>	cantar	<i>apartment</i>	habitacion
<i>skating ó scating</i>	patinar	<i>muddy</i>	turbio
<i>winter</i>	invierno	comprar	<i>to buy</i>
<i>to like</i>	gustar, querer	tarde	<i>late</i>
<i>stationer</i>	almacenista	pañó	<i>cloth</i>
<i>bookseller</i>	librero	pasar	<i>to pass</i>
<i>to stay</i>	permanecer	agradablemente	<i>agreeably</i>
<i>bed</i>	cama	corbata	<i>cravat</i>
<i>appetite</i>	apetito	servir de	<i>to serve for</i>

Tema 28.

There was a priest that had learned to understand birds, and there was a bird that opened his mouth. How far is it from Dover to Calais? It is twenty one miles. It is farther from Paris to Berlin than

from Paris to London. Who is there? It is she who sings so well. It is these books which you are to read. Is he going to France? My friend returns to England next week, and my uncle is gone to America. Is he fond of flowers? No; but he is so fond of skating that winter is the only season he likes. I should like to know how old that lady is. What is your name? My name is Joseph Larraz. Where is he to be seen? He is to be seen at home every night at ten o'clock; each of them is to be found at their friend's. At the stationer's are to be had pens, paper and pencils, and at the bookseller's all the books you like. Have you been very hungry? I have not been hungry to-day; but yesterday I was very thirsty. At Madrid one is as cold in winter as at Saint Petersburg. I am not very ill, and it is not worth while for me to stay in bed for such a little thing. Are you going to see your aunt? Yes. You are not right in going, nor your brother either. You are very glad to-day, Mr. Cervera; it is better for you to be so. Is it worth our while to take a walk before dining (*antes de comer*) that we may have more appetite? It is not valid.

(Para corregir.)

As Miss Julia had fifteen years old, that is to say, as she was younger than John by six years, John had twenty one. Who is there? Am I: are we who want to speak to you. Is there much distance from here to London? There is much distance. There was to have a sermon but the parish priest is sick. Have you had much cold all the time you have been here? I had very warm when I was in your room. What is the worth of that? Is worth twenty rials. This basket is neither new nor high enough; it had only two feet of high by one and a half wide. There has a great deal of fruit in this garden; it is very large; is a league and a half long by two kilometers and a half wide in the broadest part. How wide has this apartment? Is twenty feet of long and fourteen and a half wide. How is the weather? It makes now much better weather; the sun is shining, but is still very muddy. What age has that child? It has seven months and a few days old. Have you sleep? No, madam; we have thirsty. How is the weather? It makes a bad weather. Are you fond of dogs? We boys are often fond of horses and dogs. A little woman is often better than a big one.

Hay mucha distancia de aquí á Barcelona? Hay tanta distancia como á (la) Coruña. Quién está ahí? Somos nosotros. Es el médico de nuestra casa? No, es su hermano: él es quien ha dicho todo eso. Qué es aquel caballero? Es un médico. Buenos dias, D. Guillermo; cómo va? Bien, gracias. Ahí tienes un hermoso cuchillo y tenedor que acabo de comprar. Qué hora es? Es la misma hora por su reloj que por (*by*) el mio; es decir, las doce y cuarto. Es muy tarde. Tienes hambre, hijo mio? No, señor; tengo mucha sed. Cuánto vale ese caballo? Vale 154 duros. No vale mucho. Conocen VV. á esa señora? Conocemos á su madre, pero ella no nos conoce. Es V. inteligente en caballos? No, señor, pero soy inteligente en paños. De qué se trata? Se trata de saber lo que haremos para pasar el tiempo agradablemente. De qué le sirve eso á su hermana de V.? No le sirve de nada. De qué le sirve ese caballo á su hermano? Le sirve para llevar las (*sus*) legumbres al mercado. Su corbata le servia de gorro de dormir.

LECCION XXIX.

CONJUGACION DEL VERBO REGULAR.

204. El infinitivo inglés no tiene terminacion fija; por tanto, no hay más que una conjugacion en este idioma.

Aunque ya conocemos todas las terminaciones y formas del verbo regular, damos aquí un paradigma completo de su conjugacion:

MODELO DE LA CONJUGACION REGULAR.

INFINITIVO.

PRESENTE.

PASADO.

To call

llamar

To have called haber llamado

PARTICIPAOS.

PRESENTE.

PASADO.

Call-ing

llamando

Call-ed

llamado

INDICATIVO.

PRESENTE.

Yo llamo, etc. I call
 thou call-est
 he call-s
 we call
 you call
 they call

PRETÉRITO IMPERFECTO Y PERFECTO.

Yo llamaba, etc. I call-ed
 thou call-edst
 he call-ed
 we call-ed
 you call-ed
 they call-ed

PRETÉRITO INDEFINIDO.

He llamado, etc. I have call-ed
 thou hast call-ed
 he has call-ed
 we have call-ed
 you have call-ed
 they have call-ed

PLUSCUAMPERFECTO Y PERFECTO ANTERIOR.

Habia ó hube llamado, etc. I had call-ed
 thou hadst call-ed
 he had call-ed
 we had call-ed
 you had call-ed
 they had call-ed

FUTURO ENUNCIATIVO.

Yo llamaré, etc. I shall call
 thou wilt call
 he will call
 we shall call
 you will call
 they will call

FUTURO IMPERATIVO.

Yo llamaré, etc. I will call
 thou shalt call
 he shall call
 we will call
 you shall call
 they shall call

CONDICIONAL ENUNCIATIVO.

Yo llamaría, etc. I should call
 thou wouldst call
 he would call
 we should call
 you would call
 they would call

CONDICIONAL INDICATIVO.

Yo llamaría, etc. I would call
 thou shouldst call
 he should call
 we would call
 you should call
 they should call

IMPERATIVO.

Llama tú, call
Llame él, let him call
Llame ella, let her call
Llamemos, let us call
Llamad, call
Llamen ellos ó ellas, let them call

SUBJUNTIVO.

PRESENTE SIMPLE.

PRESENTE POTENCIAL.

<i>Yo llame, etc.</i>	I call	I may call
	thou call	thou mayest call
	he call	he may call
	we call	we may call
	you call	you may call
	they call	they may call

IMPERFECTO SIMPLE.

IMPERFECTO POTENCIAL.

<i>Yo llamára ó llamase, etc.</i>	I call-ed	I might call
	thou call-edst	thou mightest call
	he call-ed	he might call
	we call-ed	we might call
	you call-ed	you might call
	they call-ed	they might call

205. Los verbos acabados en *ch, th, sh, ss, x* y *o*, toman ES en la tercera persona del singular del presente de indicativo: *to wish* desear, *thou wishest* deseas, *he wishes* desea; *to beseech* suplicar, *thou beseechest*, *he beseeches*.

206. Los acabados en *e* toman sólo ST y S respectivamente, en pretérito y participio pasado *d*, y en participio presente suprimen la *e*.

Los acabados en *y* precedida de consonante la cambian en IE en dichas personas del presente, en pretérito y en participio pasado: *to satisfy* satisfacer; *thou satisfiest*, *he satisfies*; *I satisfied* satisfice, *satisfied* satisfecho. *To smile* sonreirse, participio pr. *smiling*, pas. *smiled*; *to dive* sondear, p. presente *diving*; *to forgive* perdonar, *forgiving*; *to angle* pescar, *angling*, *to give* dar, p. pr. *giving*.

Pero de *to singe* chamuscar, *singeing* chamuscando, sin suprimir la *e* para no confundirle con *singing* cantando.

207. Los monosílabos acabados en una consonante prece-

dida de una vocal, y los disílabos que, terminando del mismo modo, lleven el acento en la última, duplican la consonante final delante de toda terminacion que empiece por vocal: *to beg* pedir, *thou beggest* pides; *begging* pidiendo, *I begged* pedí, *begged* pedido; *to permit* permitir, *thou permittest*, *permitting*, *permitted*, *I permitted*; *to sit* estar sentado, part. pr. *sitting*.

208. Si el infinitivo termina en *ie* se cambia ésta en *y* delante de la desinencia *ing* del gerundio, miéntras que la *y* se conserva: *to lie* mentir, *lying* mintiendo.

Pero de *to dye* teñir, *dyeing* tiñendo, sin suprimir la *e* para distinguirle de *dying* muriendo, de *to die*: *to occupy* ocupar, part. pres. *occupying*; *to say* decir, p. pr. *saying*; *to dirty* manchar, (*dærti*), *dirtying*.

209. El participio pasado es siempre invariable; *loved* amado-a-os-as; *to laugh* (*laf*) reirse, p. pas. *laughed*; *to grant* conceder, *granted* concedido-a-os-as.

210. Las formas interrogativa y negativa se hacen por medio del auxiliar *to do*, imperf. *did*, segun se dijo en la R. 108: *do you sleep?* duerme V.? *do you gather?* recoge V.? *does he serve up?* sirve él? *did he lead?* condujo él?

211. En frases interrogativas, si el tiempo es compuesto, el sujeto se coloca entre el auxiliar y el verbo conjugado: qué está haciendo ese pastor? *what is that shepherd doing?* se ha reido V. de nosotros? *have you laughed at us?* beberá su merced? *will your honour drink?*

212. La primera y segunda personas del imperativo se forman por medio del auxiliar *let* dejar, permitir, seguido del nombre ó pronombre en acusativo, *him*, *her*, *them*, etc., y del verbo en infinitivo sin *to*: *let them come* que vengan; *let us play* juguemos; *let him listen* que escuche.

<i>yet</i>	todavía	<i>to promise</i>	prometer	esquilar	} <i>to shear</i> (<i>shir</i>)
<i>never</i>	nunca	<i>to command</i>	mandar	regresar	
<i>to accept</i>	aceptar	<i>right</i>	derecho	Jorge	<i>George</i>
<i>revolution</i>	revolucion	<i>to hallow</i>	santificar	reinar	<i>to reign</i>
<i>quickly</i>	} rápida- mente	<i>will</i>	voluntad	buscar	<i>to look for</i>
		<i>daily</i>	diario	pensar en	<i>to think of</i>
<i>ear</i>	oído	<i>trespass</i>	ofensa	ido	<i>gone away</i>
<i>labour</i>	trabajo	<i>to tr...</i>	ofender	dar de	} <i>to feed</i>
<i>to repeat</i>	repetir	<i>to deliver</i>	librar	comer	
<i>dinner</i>	comida	<i>evil</i>	mal	echar,	} <i>to throw</i>
<i>to correct</i>	corregir	<i>to behold</i>	mirar	arrojar	
<i>without</i>	} sin dar	<i>rod</i>	caña	bollo	<i>cake</i>
<i>giving</i>		<i>to pay a</i>	hacer una	siempre que	<i>whenever</i>
<i>bath</i>	baño	<i>visit</i>	visita	grave	<i>grave</i>
<i>clothes</i>	vestidos	<i>ball</i>	baile	solemne	<i>solemn</i>
<i>depth</i>	} profundi- dad	<i>to spend</i>	emplear	tentacion	<i>temptation</i>
		<i>serious</i>	serio		
<i>increase</i>	aumento	<i>pradera</i>	<i>meadow</i>		

Tema 29.

What did your master say? He smiled at me, saying, that he was very much satisfied with me. Have you learned the English language? We have studied it a little, but we don't speak it yet. Do you laugh at me? I do not laugh at you, for I have never laughed at any body. How long did you remain at church? I remained there about an hour's time. The earth makes its revolution in a little more than three hundred and sixty five days. Time passes quickly when the mind is occupied; the eye, the ear, the head itself obey the mind. Make your pupils repeat these words. William, serve us up something for dinner as soon as possible. Are your beds good? Excellent, sir. Then I will sleep here to-night. Will your honour drink beer or wine? Give my two bottles of wine. I do not see the kitchen garden. Do you wish to see it? If you please. The gardener gathered all the flowers in his garden, without giving us any. Take a cold bath, it will do you good. Let us put our clothes at the foot of that tree. Is it deep? I will tell it you after I have dived. He dived into the canal without knowing (*sin saber*) its depth. O God! grant unto (*a*) us an increase of Faith, and that we may obtain what thou hast promised; make us love what thou commandest. I believe that God the Son died on a cross; that he ascended into heaven and sitteth at the right hand of the Father. Our Father who art in Heaven, hallowed be thy name; thy kingdom come; thy will be done on Earth, as it

is in Heaven; give us this day our daily bread; and forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us; and lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.

(Para corregir.)

Behold your patient neighbour angleing, armed with a long rod. At what o'clock are our friends to come? They promised to be here at twelve. Bring you me some water to wash my hands. Is it proper he should be accompanied by a dog, when he pays his visits? It is preferable he should to stay at home. Did go you to the ball last night? Yes, and danced (*bailé*) all night. At what o'clock did return you home? At five this morning. How shall spend we the evening? Shall play we at chess or draughts? You are too serious; I should to like to play at billiards. Come you into the billiard-room, we shall play a game. I accepts your kind offer. Who has dirtyed this copy book? It is Henry; he dirtyes every thing; he has such dirty hands. Where are your exercises? Here are: take you them and, please, correct them for me. Little Charles was formerly very happy; he plaid with his friends but he also liked labour; we obeyed our parents and listened to our teachers who were always satisfied with us.

NOTA. En futuro y condicional póngase *will*, would en la segunda y tercera persona, y *shall* y *should* en la primera (en el siguiente tema).

Qué está haciendo ese pastor en la pradera? Está esquilando un carnero. Mi tío recibe por la mañana á sus amigos que han regresado de Francia. El rey Jorge III reinó 60 años. Ha llamado V. á su hermano para que aprenda su lección? No le he llamado, pero le llamaré ahora. Ama V. á su madre? Sí, la amo, porque es tan buena, y Dios quiere mucho á los que aman á sus padres. Aquella niña es muy mala, porque no ama á sus padres, qué la quieren mucho. Cuántas mujeres hay (*there are*) que serian más felices si no buscasen la felicidad en los placeres del mundo! Usted no pensará más (*no longer*) en mí cuando (*me*) haya ido. Hablarémos á (*to*) tu pri-

mo hoy? Háblenle VV. para que dé de comer á los gansos. Estas señoras no gustarian tanto de placeres si tuviesen ménos amigos. Echa un poco de tu bollo á esos gansos, que lo comerán. Cuándo emplea V. el auxiliar en el imperativo? No lo sé. Puede V. (*can you*) omitirle algunas veces? Sí; siempre que se habla (*you speak*) en un tono grave y solemne. Sabe V. entónces la diferencia entre *do not forget me* y *forget me not*? Sí, señor. Cumple bien tus deberes y Dios te premiará; yo tambien te daré una recompensa.

LECCION XXX.

DE LOS SEMI-AUXILIARES Ó DEFECTIVOS.

Nota. Se llaman defectivos estos verbos porque sólo se usan en presente é imperfecto: *to do* y *to let* tienen tambien imperativo.

213. SHALL y WILL. Para comprender el uso de estos auxiliares es preciso tener muy presente su significado (R. 188). *Will* ó *would* se emplean para designar voluntad; *shall* ó *should* deber, ateniéndose á las reglas siguientes:

1.^a *Will* en las primeras personas expresa la voluntad del sujeto, ó sea resolucion, promesa: en las segundas y terceras enuncia simplemente un hecho, suponiendo que hay voluntad en el sujeto del verbo para ejecutar la accion:

Haré de tí una gran nacion.

I will make of thee a great nation.

Comerémos temprano para ir al teatro.

We will dine early in order to go to the play.

Dios premiará á los justos.

God will reward the righteous.

Ellas comerán hoy con nosotros.

They will dine with us to-day.

Lo haria si pudiese.

I would do it if I could.

Eso sería una lástima.

That would be a pity.

2.^a *Shall*, en las primeras personas, anuncia una cosa suponiendo que el sujeto está en el deber de ejecutarla; y en las

segundas y terceras indica promesa, mandato ó conminacion de hacer algo, expresando el deber que el sujeto tiene de ejecutar la accion :

Mañana le esperaré á V.	<i>I shall expect you to-morrow.</i>
Él será castigado como merece.	<i>He shall be punished as he deserves.</i>
Los niños ganarán un premio.	<i>The children shall gain a prize.</i>
Sufriría muchísimo si viviese en un clima cálido.	<i>I should suffer very much if I lived in a hot climate.</i>

3.^a En la forma interrogativa puede decirse que se invierten las reglas dadas, puesto que generalmente se usa *shall* en la primera persona y *will* en la segunda. Pero en la tercera persona se emplea *will* cuando se trata de indagar la voluntad del sujeto que hace la accion, y *shall* cuando se trata de averiguar tan sólo una cosa cualquiera :

Aprenderé la leccion de memoria?	<i>Shall I learn my lesson by heart?</i>
Volverá el Sr. Campos mañana?	<i>Will Mr. Campos return to-morrow?</i>
Qué dirá V. á su madre?	<i>What will you say to your mother?</i>
Dime, cuál de ellos será el primero?	<i>Tell me, which of them shall be the first?</i>

Pero si sólo se enuncia un hecho, se emplea *shall* en las primeras y segundas personas y *will* en las terceras :

Iré mañana al colegio?	<i>Shall I go to-morrow to college?</i>
Será V. feliz con esa mujer?	<i>Shall you be happy with that woman?</i>

OBS. 47. *Should* se emplea á menudo con la significacion de deber en vez de *ought* deber.

Tambien puede usarse el condicional con *should* despues de *if* si, *unless* á ménos que, etc., en lugar del subjuntivo, y con el significado de deber :

Iria allí si él fuese conmigo.	<i>I would go there if he should go with me.</i>
Debemos acordarnos de los pobres.	<i>We should remember the poor.</i>

Will se usa tambien como independiente significando querer, en cuyo caso hace en la tercera persona singular *wills*, perf. *willed*.

214. LET dejar, permitir, se usa como auxiliar del imperativo, segun se dijo en la R. 212.

Su pretérito es igual al presente: *I let* dejas, *thou lettest* dejas, *he lets* deja, *I let* dejé, permiti, *thou lettest* permitiste, *he let*, permitió, etc.

Con el significado de *dar en arriendo* se usa en todos los tiempos: *I will let*, *I would let*, etc.

Una casa que se alquila.

A house to let.

215. CAN y MAY, poder. *Can* expresa un poder absoluto, independiente; *may* un poder subordinado y dependiente, permiso generalmente en sentido moral. Su única terminacion es *st* en la segunda persona: *I can*, *I may* puedo, *thou canst*, *thou mayest* puedes; *he can*, *he may*, puede, etc.; *I could*, *I might*, podia, pude, podria; *thou couldst*, *thou mightest*, podias; *he could*, *he might*, podia, etc.:

Lo haré si puedo.

I will do it if I can.

Lo más pronto posible.

As fast as may be.

Tiene V. permiso para hacerlo si puede.

You may do it if you can.

Traté de hacerlo, pero no pude.

I tried to do it, but I could not.

Si me es permitido hablar así.

If I may say so.

Si estudiase V. ahora podría jugar por la tarde.

If you studied now, you might play on the evening.

Obs. 48. En los demas tiempos, poder se traduce por *to be able*; yo podré, *I will be able*, etc.

216. MUST y OUGHT, deber. *Must* expresa un deber absoluto, necesario, generalmente fisico; *ought* una obligacion moral. *Ought* es el único de los semiauxiliares que conserva el *to* delante del infinitivo que sigue.

Must es completamente invariable: *ought* no tiene más variación que la de la segunda persona singular, que es *oughtest*:

Qué tenemos que (ó debemos) leer?	<i>What must we read?</i>
Es menester que vaya allí.	<i>He must go there.</i>
A dónde tiene que ir?	<i>Whither must he go?</i>
He tenido que ir allí.	<i>I have been obliged to go there.</i>
Todos debemos morir.	<i>We must all die.</i>
Los niños deben ser obedientes.	<i>Children ought to be obedient.</i>
Usted obra, ni más ni ménos, como debe.	<i>You act just as you ought.</i>

OBS. 49. Los tiempos que faltan á *must* se suplen con *to be necessary* ser necesario, *to be obliged* verse obligado, *to want* necesitar, etc.; y los que faltan á *ought* con *to be one's duty* estar en el deber, *to be obliged* tener que, etc.

217. To DO, hacer. Se usa como auxiliar de las formas interrogativa y negativa (R. 108), en cuyo caso no tiene traducción ni equivalente en castellano.

Empléase también en la afirmativa para dar más fuerza á la expresión: *I do understand you* le comprendo á V. perfectamente.

Más tarde daremos á conocer otras particularidades de la interrogación y de la negación, y en la Lección XXXIV las principales frases en que se usa *to do*.

OBS. 50. Toda preposición, ménos *to*, rige en inglés gerundio en vez de nuestro infinitivo: *after breakfasting* después de almorzar, *from doing so* de hacerlo.

<i>taken</i>	cogido	<i>graven</i>	grabado
<i>to owe</i>	deber	<i>vain</i>	vano
<i>discourse</i>	discurso	<i>murder</i>	asesinato
<i>post-office</i>	correo	<i>to steal</i>	robar
<i>towards</i>	para con	<i>to amuse</i>	divertir
<i>godfather</i>	padrino	<i>to despise</i>	despreciar
<i>to keep</i>	guardar	<i>hated</i>	aborrecido
<i>namely</i>	á saber	<i>to require</i>	exigir,

<i>soon</i>	pronto	traducir de	<i>to translate from</i>
<i>way</i>	modo	preguntar	<i>to ask</i>
<i>unable</i>	incapaz	acerca de	<i>about</i>
dia de fiesta	<i>feast-day</i>	hacerse	<i>to be done</i>
tratado	<i>treaty</i>	agradar	<i>to please</i>
amistad	<i>friendship</i>		

Tema 30.

Do you understand what I say? Yes. Can you answer me? I believe that I can answer you, but I shall not listen to your discourse. I would answer but I cannot. Could you tell me which way leads to the post-office? I could if I would. What must you do to please God? I must do my duty both towards God and towards man. You said that your godfathers did promise for you that you should keep God's commandments: tell me how many there be? Ten; namely: thou shalt have none other Gods but me; thou shalt not make to thyself any graven image; thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain; thou shalt do no murder; thou shalt not steal, etc. Let the children amuse themselves with their toys. Let us see whether they will understand us. Will you come and breakfast with me to-morrow? My father will come and see me; therefore I will go out to-morrow and nobody shall prevent me from doing so. Will your father have you rise earlier? Yes, a good deal. We ought not to despise any body though he be poor, nor ought we to love the rich man only because he is so. You may be hated but you will never be despised.

(Para corregir.)

What says the fourth commandment? Thou wilt honour thy father and thy mother. Must we not to do as we wish to be done to us (*que se nos haga*)? Each of you ought do what he is ordered (*se le ordena*). You can be wrong. Do you require to be there by seven in the evening? I ought go sooner. You must not rise without having first thought of God. Caned you not have done it in a different way? Nobody is obliged to do what he is unable to do. Will you can lend me some money? I am not obliged to pay what I owe not. Where

may my cousin Josephine have gone to? To the country with her little friend Emma. Can I go and see my father? Yes, you can go if you may. Yes, I can, because I am much better. You do not ought have taken my pen, for I have no other and there are no more in the shop. There must to be more where I got (*cogí*) this one. When will your friend to come? He should to come this morning that we may to speak of his affairs and see whether anything may be done for him.

Me prestará V. su cortaplumas? No le tengo, pero ahí tiene V. el de mi hermano, que es mejor que el mio. Vendrá V. mañana á almorzar (*and breakfast*) con nosotros? Creo que sí. Vendrá V. á verme el (*on*) miércoles próximo? No lo sé; porque tengo que levantarme muy temprano el (*on*) miércoles para ir al campo. El mes próximo empezaré á estudiar inglés. Trabajaré V. mañana? No trabajaré, porque es dia de fiesta. Qué hará V. mañana? Escribiré un tratadito sobre (*on*) la amistad; V. lo traducirá y yo le preguntaré á V. acerca de lo que V. ha traducido. Seamos buenos y prudentes y Dios nos premiará. Yo hablaría al médico si estuviese enfermo. Cómo se encuentra V.? Estoy muy bien. Qué debe V. hacer para (*to*) agradar á Dios? Debo cumplir (*do*) mi deber para con Dios y para con los hombres. Nosotros no podemos ver á Dios, pero Dios puede hacer todas las cosas. Qué debe hacerse para aprender inglés? Es necesario estudiar mucho. Ha tenido V. que estudiar mucho para aprender alemán? He tenido que estudiar muchísimo. Cuánto puede valer ese caballo? Puede valer 50 duros. Puedo leer este libro? Tiene V. permiso para hacerlo si V. puede. Á dónde tienen VV. que ir? Hemos tenido que ir á la calle del Principe.

LECCION XXXI.

EMPLEO DE LOS TIEMPOS.—SUBJUNTIVO.

Nota. Sólo harémos notar aquí los puntos que constituyen una excepcion de las reglas comunes, en lo tocante al uso de

los tiempos, á nuestros idiomas, principalmente al inglés y español.

218. El presente sé usa en la narracion histórica para dar más energía y más viveza al discurso :

César abandona la Galia, cruza el Rubicon y penetra en Italia con 5.000 hombres.	<i>Cesar leaves Gaul, crosses the Rubicon and enters Italy with five thousand men.</i>
--	--

219. Despues de las conjunciones *when* cuando, *before* ántes que, *after* despues que, *as soon as* tan pronto como, *according* conforme, segun, *while* miétras, *if* si, y alguna otra, se emplea en inglés el presente de indicativo en vez de nuestro subjuntivo.

Pero si la accion es evidentemente dudosa, se usa indistintamente el futuro ó el subjuntivo :

Cuando llegue mi padre, sabrá la verdad.	<i>When my father arrives, he will know the truth.</i>
En cuanto venga, oirá la noticia.	<i>As soon as he comes, he will hear the news.</i>
Qué hará V. cuando haya comido?	<i>What will you do when you shall have dined?</i>
Cuando esté en casa de mi tia, vendrá V. á verme?	<i>When I am at my aunt's, will you come to see me?</i>
A no ser que me diga el precio, no lo llevaré á casa.	<i>Unless he tell (6 shall tell) me the price I will not take it home.</i>
Si está allí, no entraré.	<i>If he be (6 shall be) there, I will not go in.</i>

220. El verbo que sigue á ir *to go*, venir *to come*, permanecer *to stay*, quedarse *to remain* y análogos, se pone en inglés en el mismo tiempo que estos verbos, precedido de la conjuncion *and*:

Vaya V. á ver si está allí.	<i>Go and see whether he is there.</i>
Usted irá á llevar esta carta al correo.	<i>You will go and carry this letter to the post-office.</i>
Vino á decirnos que no podia venir.	<i>He came and told us he could not come.</i>

221. El *imperfecto* inglés corresponde al imperfecto y al pretérito definido español, y su empleo no ofrece dificultad alguna.

Á veces equivale á nuestro pretérito indefinido, lo que es, en ciertos casos, indispensable, como en el primer ejemplo de la R. 222.

Tenía V. ganas de comprar un caballo?	<i>Had you a wish to buy a horse?</i>
Hizo buen tiempo.	<i>It was fine weather.</i>
Me ha llamado V.?	<i>Did you call me?</i>
Le he llamado á V.	<i>I did call you.</i>
Fué su hermana de V. al teatro ayer noche?	<i>Did your sister go to the play last night?</i>
No fué.	<i>She did not go.</i>

222. Se usa del *subjuntivo*, lo mismo que en castellano, despues de las conjunciones *if* si, *that* que, *whether* si (duda), *though* aunque, *unless*, *except* no sea que, *lest* para que no, *for fear that* por miedo que, y otras análogas, cuando el sentido de la frase es dudoso ó su realizacion depende de otra cosa.

Dicho se está que el subjuntivo inglés, como el castellano, depende siempre de otro verbo :

La sentencia ha sido que pague una multa de tres libras.	<i>The sentence was that he pay a penalty of three pounds.</i>
Aunque me detengas no comeré (Bibl.).	<i>Though thou detain me I will not eat.</i>
Con sólo que toque las colinas despedirán humo.	<i>If he but touch the hills they shall smoke.</i>
Guárdate de hablar á Jacob.	<i>Take heed that thou speak not to Jacob.</i>
No peques más, no sea que te suceda un mal peor.	<i>Sin no more lest a greater evil happen to you.</i>
Si fuese rico, lo haria.	<i>If I were rich, I should do it.</i>
Si hubiese recibido el dinero, le pagaria á V.	<i>If I had received my money, I would pay you.</i>

Obs. 51. En inglés, como en aleman y algunas veces en español, puede omitirse la conjuncion *if*, en cuyo caso debe ponerse el sujeto detras del verbo:

Si hubiese recibido el dinero, le pagaría á V.	<i>Had I received my money, I would pay you.</i>
Si V. le encontrase en casa.	<i>If you should find him at home.</i>
	<i>Should you find him at home.</i>
Si él perdiese su dinero.	<i>Were he to lose his money.</i>
	<i>If he should lose his money.</i>

223. En vez de *if* se usa á veces el auxiliar *do* al principio de una frase dudosa :

Si realmente desea nuestra amistad, que la busque.	<i>Does he really wish our friendship, let him ask it.</i>
Si realmente se arrepentia de su conducta, debería probarlo con sus acciones.	<i>Did he truly repent his conduct, he would prove it by his actions.</i>

224. El *condicional* inglés se usa con frecuencia por nuestro subjuntivo, especialmente detras de *if*, y cuando se desea la realizacion de una accion futura ; mientras que si el deseo se refiere á algo pasado, debe emplearse el imperfecto de subjuntivo :

Deseo que V. lo haga.	<i>I wish you would do it.</i>
Desearia que V. lo hubiese hecho.	<i>I wish you had done it.</i>
Desearia leer si tuviese tiempo.	<i>I should like to read, if I had only time.</i>
Si los hombres reflexionasen.	<i>If men would reflect.</i>

Viceversa se usa mucho *were* y *had*,* por *would be* y *would have* :

Semejante accion hubiera sido vituperable bajo un gobierno tranquilo.	<i>Such an act had (ó would have) been blamable in a peaceable government.</i>
Sería locura hacerlo.	<i>It were (ó would be) folly to do it.</i>

Obs. 52. *Would* equivale á veces á nuestro *solia* : *he would say* solia decir ; *he would some times fall asleep in the most pathetic part of my sermon* solia á veces dormirse en el punto más patético de mi sermon ; que tambien puede traducirse por decia, se dormia, etc.

Obs. 53. De lo dicho se desprende que el uso del subjuntivo ó indicativo en inglés obedece no poco al capricho ó á la intencion del que habla ó escribe; pero en todo caso es preciso distinguir entre una afirmacion segura y una accion dudosa é incierta: en este último caso debe únicamente usarse el subjuntivo; tratándose de cosa cierta, el indicativo.

Son, pues, incorrectas frases como ésta:

Though he were divinely inspired, though he were endued with supernatural powers, yet in compliance with the way in which reasonable creatures are usually wrought upon, he reasoned, aunque estaba inspirado de lo alto é investido de un poder sobrenatural, sin embargo, en sus discursos se conformaba á la manera con que ordinariamente se obra sobre los seres racionales: donde, tratándose de cualidades que Jesucristo poseía realmente, el autor hubiera debido emplear el indicativo *was*, y no *were*.

225. El *subjuntivo potencial* se usa después de todo relativo indefinido, como *he who* el que, *she who* la que, *whoever* ó *whosoever* quien quiera que, *whatever* lo que quiera que, *whichever* cualquiera que, etc.:

Por grande que sea la fortuna de que V. disfrute, puede V. perderla en un instante.

Whatever fortune you may enjoy, you may lose it in an instant.

Por muchos esfuerzos que hagamos, no lo lograremos.

Whatever efforts we may make, we shall not succeed in it.

<i>cane</i>	baston
<i>idle</i>	ocioso
<i>forbid</i>	no quiera
<i>wrought</i>	trabajó
<i>partnership</i>	Compañía
<i>to join</i>	unirse
<i>offense</i>	ofensa
<i>liable</i>	expuesto
<i>to humble</i>	humillar

<i>to avoid</i>	evitar
<i>reluctant</i>	disgustado
<i>to bid</i>	mandar
<i>educated</i>	educado
<i>to kill</i>	matar
<i>member</i>	miembro
<i>to forfeit</i>	perder
<i>to arrive</i>	llegar
<i>use</i>	uso

<i>fortunate</i>	afortunado	puse, puesto	<i>put</i>
<i>last time</i>	últimamente	no.... otro	<i>no other</i>
alegrarse de	<i>to rejoice at</i>	en cualquiera	} <i>wherever else</i>
llegar á	<i>to arrive at ó to</i>	otra parte	
ocupacion	<i>occupation</i>	en cualquiera	} <i>whenever else</i>
con tal que	<i>provided</i>	otra ocasion	
pedir	<i>to ask of</i>	que	
está mandado	<i>it is ordained</i>	enseñar	<i>to show</i>
ojalá	<i>would to God</i>	con bondad	<i>kindly</i>
para que	<i>that (con pot.)</i>		

Tema 31.

Will you come and see our country-house to-morrow? I shall if the day is fine. Whom did you lend your cane to? To my cousin who lost (*ha perdido*) his that he may not go to the Prado without one. Work that you may not live idle. God forbid I should do it. When you are in Paris you will not be so good as now when living (*que V. vive*) with your parents. If he did not spend so much and wrought more he would be much richer. Would you go out if I remained at home? should I ever have money, I should know what to do with it. Should he propose a partnership, you would be a fool to join him. Why was that man punished? He was punished in order that he might not repeat the offense. Unless a man shall say the truth, he is liable to be humbled: therefore I say: avoid the danger that you may not fall into difficulties. I wish what you say were true; had I but (*solo*) seen him I would have let him know my way of thinking. Had I it in my hand, I would not let it go. I wish you would do me a favour. I won't be reluctant to do what you bid me. At what o'clock is the dinner? That depends; come and dine with us to-day. That he might have been a wise honest man, he should have been better educated when young.

(Para corregir.)

If he would be a little more amiable he had many friends. Would you go out if I remained at home? I would remain at home. Whether he kills Cassio or Cassio him, or each does kill the other every way makes me gain. If the men come it would be necessary to give them

something to drink. Have you not this book? If the book should be in my library, it should be at your service. When the shoemaker come, you will tell him to go and see me. You will go to walk to-morrow, won't you? We should go, if had we no other thing to do. If any member absents himself (*se ausenta*), he shall forfeit a penny for the use of the club. Tell him to come soon that I may to see him in the morning early. God grant that we may to arrive in a good condition. Oh! that you may not to be right in what you say, for (*pues*) then I should be more happy. Will you come to-morrow, that my brother has not to go alone? If I should not have so much to do, and if were not my mother so ill, I would come as you very well know. Oh! that he may to have been more fortunate than he was last time! That man is very cruel; he has a tiger's heart; unhappy he if it is so.

Si no hubiese otra vida (*más*) que ésta, los hombres tendrían razón en desear ser ricos. Visitará V. á su amigo? No le visitaré á menos que él me visite primero. Oh! que nos veamos (*pot.*) uno á otro en el cielo. Cualquiera que sea su ocupacion, es un muchacho holgazán. Por grande que sea nuestra fortuna, no debiéramos (*we should not*) amar el dinero. Para que llegues á misa con (*in*) tiempo, tienes que ir á las siete y media. Qué me das? Con tal que seas aplicado, te daré lo que me pidas. Bien; haré lo que (*whatever*) gustes. Tendremos una visita de los señores Jones tan pronto como lleguen á Madrid con sus hermanas. Está mandado que amemos á nuestros prójimos como á nosotros mismos. Ojalá que me escriban mis dos hermanos. Dónde has puesto mi camisa? La puse en (*on*) la silla para que la vieses (*pot.*). Puedes ir á dar un paseo, pero á (*on*) condicion de que (*that*) estés aquí á las cinco y media. En cualquiera otra parte que V. esté, le encontraré á V. Qué tiene V. ahí? En cualquiera otra ocasion que venga V. á nuestra casa, se lo enseñaré á usted. Todo lo que yo puedo hacer por V. es escribirle, á fin de que (*that*) le reciba á V. con bondad. De qué se alegra V.? Me alegro de tu dicha, porque por más feliz que yo sea, nunca puedo ser tan feliz como tú. Por mucha paciencia que tenga V. con estos niños, nunca tendrá V. bastante.

LECCION XXXII.

FORMA PASIVA.—VERBOS REFLEXIVOS.—UNIPERSONALES.

226. La voz pasiva se forma en inglés, lo mismo que en castellano, con el auxiliar *to be* y el participio pasado del verbo que se conjuga, que es invariable:

Soy castigado	<i>I am punished</i>	Seré alabado	<i>I will be praised</i>
eres amado	<i>thou art loved</i>	será adorado	} <i>he will be worshipped</i>
es invitado	<i>he is invited</i>	seréis casado	
somos engañados	<i>we are deceived</i>	serán alabados	} <i>they will be praised</i>
sois premiados	<i>you are rewarded</i>	he sido llamado	
son alabados	<i>they are beloved</i>	han sido vendidos.	} <i>they have been sold</i>
Dios es adorado	<i>God is adored</i>		
ella es admirada	<i>she is admired</i>		
eres bendecida	<i>thou art blessed</i>		

Los buenos niños serán premiados, y los malos castigados.

The good children will be rewarded, and the bad ones punished.

Los ministros han sido llamados al Palacio Real.

The ministers have been called to the royal palace.

Han de pagarnos por eso?

Are we to be paid for that?

Nos han de pagar, y bien (R. 179).

We are to be paid, and well paid too.

Las preposiciones *por* ó *de* que preceden al agente de un verbo pasivo se traducen por *by*: *he is beloved by his teachers* es querido de sus maestros.

227. Verbos *pronominales* ó reflexivos son los que se conjugan con dos pronombres, uno sujeto, y objeto ó régimen el otro. El pronombre régimen se coloca en inglés detras del verbo, y se compone del pronombre posesivo ó personal y *self* (R. 155, 156, 158).

Me alabo.

I praise myself.

Ella se alaba.

She praises herself.

Ellos se lavan.

They wash themselves.

Nos engañamos.

We deceive ourselves.

Valerse.

To avail one's self of.

Se ha suicidado.

He has killed himself.

Ellos se expondrán.	<i>They will expose themselves.</i>
Yo me disfrazaría.	<i>I would disguise myself.</i>
Se lisonjea V.?	<i>Do you flatter yourself?</i>
Se ha cortado su hermano?	<i>Has your brother cut himself?</i>
Nos hemos divertido á su costa.	<i>We have amused ourselves at his expense.</i>
Deshonrarse.	<i>To dishonour one's self.</i>
Verse.	<i>To see one's self.</i>
El vino se vende bien.	<i>Wine sells well.</i>

228. Cuando el verbo expresa *reciprocidad*, lo cual sólo puede tener lugar en plural, se traduce el pronombre objeto, nos, os, ó mutuamente, etc., por *one another* ó *each other*:

Nos amamos tiernamente.	<i>We love one another tenderly.</i>
Esos niños se quieren mutuamente.	<i>These children love each other.</i>

229. Entiéndase que hay muchos verbos que, siendo reflexivos en español, no lo son en inglés, y viceversa. El conocimiento de estos verbos sólo puede adquirirse por la práctica y con el diccionario:

Me abstengo de comer carne.	<i>I abstain from eating meat.</i>
Nos quejamos de V.	<i>We complain of you.</i>
Se despierta generalmente á las 4.	<i>He awakes generally at four o'clock.</i>
Se ha casado con esa señorita.	<i>He has married that young lady.</i>
Siéntese V. si gusta.	<i>Sit down, if you please.</i>
Me admiro de ello.	<i>I wonder at it.</i>
Me acuerdo siempre de V.	<i>I always remember you.</i>
Deshacerse de uno.	<i>To get rid of some one.</i>
Se queja de dolor de cabeza.	<i>He complains of a head-ache.</i>

De esta clase son tambien: *to open* abrirse, *to sell* venderse, *to shut* (*shæt*) cerrar (se), *to rise* levantarse, *to go to bed* acostarse, etc. Otros pueden usarse en ambas formas.

230. Los verbos *unipersonales* llevan en inglés por sujeto el pronombre *it*. Su conjugacion sólo difiere de la de los otros verbos en que únicamente se usan en la tercera persona del singular: el sujeto *it* es imprescindible.

INFINITIVO.		PRESENTE DE INDICATIVO.	
<i>To rain</i>	llover	<i>It rains</i>	llueve
» <i>snow</i>	nevar	» <i>snows</i>	p. pas. <i>snown</i>
» <i>hail</i>	granizar	» <i>hails</i>	graniza
» <i>thunder</i>	tronar	» <i>thunders</i>	trueno
» <i>lighten</i>	relampaguear	» <i>lightens</i>	relampaguea
» <i>freeze</i>	helar	» pret. <i>froze</i>	p. pas. <i>frozen</i>
» <i>happen</i>	acontecer	» <i>happens</i>	acontece
» <i>be becoming</i>	sentar bien	» <i>is becoming</i>	sienta bien
» <i>drizzle</i>	lloviznar	» <i>drizzles</i>	llovizna
» <i>matter</i>	importar	» <i>matters</i>	importa
» <i>seem</i>	parecer	» <i>seems</i>	parece
» <i>suffice</i>	bastar	» <i>suffices</i>	basta
» <i>follow</i>	resultar	» <i>follows</i>	resulta
» <i>be proper</i>	ser natural	» <i>is proper</i>	es natural
» <i>be necessary</i>	ser necesario	» <i>is necessary</i>	es necesario
» <i>grow dark</i>	anohecer	» <i>grows dark</i>	anohece
» <i>concern</i>	interesar	» <i>concerns</i>	interesa
<i>there to be</i>	haber	<i>there is</i>	hay
<i>to be cold</i>	hacer frío	<i>it is cold</i>	hace frío

Llueve ahora?
No llueve, graniza.
No me importa.

Does it rain ó is it raining now?
It does not rain, it hails.
It does not matter.

231. El unipersonal *hace, hacía, etc.*, se traduce en inglés de la manera siguiente:

1.º Cuando *hace, hacía, etc.*, expresa un espacio de tiempo definido pasado, se traduce por *it is, it was, etc.*, y el *que* que precede al verbo principal por *since*: hace 10 años que aprendí el alemán *it is ten years since I learned German*.

Ó bien se empieza por el verbo principal, puesto en pretérito y detras del vocablo que designe el tiempo, año, mes, etc., se pone *ago*: aprendí el alemán hace 10 años *I learned German ten years ago*.

2.º Cuando *hace, hacía, etc.*, expresa el tiempo que hace que empezó una acción ó un hecho que aún dura, se traduce en inglés por *to have* con el participio del verbo principal formando un tiempo compuesto, y delante del nombre que designa el tiempo se pone el demostrativo *this, these, etc.*

Cuánto tiempo hace que tiene V. *How long have you had this horse?*
ese caballo?

Hace cinco años que lo tengo. *I have had it these five years.*

OBS. 54. Puede tambien emplearse la forma anterior : hace cinco años que estoy en Madrid *it is five years since I am in Madrid*, ó *I have been in Madrid these five years*; hace tres meses que estoy escribiendo esta Gramática *I have been writing this grammar these three months*, ó *it is three months since I am writing this grammar*; entónces hacía seis meses que estudiaba inglés, *then I had been learning English those six months*, ó *then it was six months since I was learning English*.

Á veces se pone *for* delante del demostrativo *this, these, etc.*, especialmente en frase negativa : hace dos años que no le veo *I have not seen him for these two years*; hace dos dias que no como *I have not eaten for these two days*.

Nota. Recuérdese lo que dijimos del unipersonal *haber* y de *hacer* cuando se refiere al tiempo atmosférico (R. 203, 6.º).

<i>to protect</i>	proteger	<i>to warm</i>	calentar
<i>during</i>	durante	<i>easily</i>	fácilmente
<i>to waken</i>	despertarse	<i>East</i>	Oriente
<i>betimes</i>	temprano	<i>we met</i>	nos encontramos
<i>to bless</i>	bendecir	<i>to get wet</i>	coger humedad
<i>Maker</i>	Hacedor	<i>to catch a cold</i>	resfriarse
<i>despatch</i>	despacho	espejo	<i>mirror</i>
<i>to leave for</i>	partir para	hombre de bien	<i>good man</i>
<i>seldom</i>	rara vez	adorar	<i>to adore</i>
<i>valley</i>	valle	academia	<i>academy</i>
<i>to talk</i>	hablar	apénas	<i>scarcely</i>
<i>to rule</i>	gobernar	otoño	<i>autumn</i>
<i>to fear</i>	temer	concluir	<i>to finish</i>
<i>to admire</i>	admirar	infamia	<i>infamy</i>
<i>kind</i>	amable	enriquecerse	<i>to grow rich</i>

Tema 32.

The first thing to be done on rising is to thank God and beg him to protect us during the day. Have you to rise at five o'clock? It is

good to waken betimes and rise with the sun; but it is also good to bless yourself on (*at*) wakening and give your first thoughts to your Maker. A telegraphic despatch has been received from my brother in Irun; he says the king and queen of Spain have arrived there. I don't know whether or no it will snow to-morrow morning; but it doesn't matter; I shall leave for London. It lightens and hails in summer; seldom in winter. Does it thunder often in [the mountains? Oftener than in the valleys. That is an affair which it does not matter whether it go right or wrong. It concerns us all to live well here that we may be happy in the other world. What has been sold this morning? Nothing would have been bought, had not good things been sold. At what hour does your father go to bed? He goes to bed at ten o'clock and rises at five. What is your friend called? He is named Henry. Were you much amused yesterday? We amuse ourselves always well, when we are at our aunt's. Do you know what they are saying? I believe that we understand each other; therefore we talk to each other. If thou wilt rule, learn to rule thyself. Do you know these children? Yes; the son and the daughter fear one another. Promise one another that you will be indulgent. Are you acquainted with this man? Yes; he is so learned as to be admired by all who know him.

(Para corregir.)

Do you love yourselves? We do, as every husband and wife should do; our children too love themselves, and they and our neighbour's play very often with themselves. Are you loved of your parents? I am and have always been loved of them. She is a woman hated of all who know her. Dear friend mine; you must to know I received your kind letter on 18th of this month, and I am very glad to learn you is so well and so much beloved of all those which know you at College. Why does man rejoice so much? Because he flatters his self he have some friends. Did snow yesterday? Snowed and hailed. Will it be necessary to send for the physician? Nobody is ill, so that will not be necessary to send for him. Do you wish to warm you self? They wish to warm they selves. We must not praise us selves. Each one himself amuses in the best way he cans. Have

these children themselves cut? Those girls have themselves cut. That window does not open itself easily, but the door shuts itself very easily. It are your sisters who are playing on the piano. The sun rises in the east, and when he rises, is day. Do you remember that yesterday was three years that we met in Paris? Yes, and to-day it is two that I came back (*volví*) to Spain. How long have you been here? I have been here three years. Is raining hard to-day; don't go out, for you'll get wet and then catch a cold.

Se ha lavado V.? Él se ha lavado y estas muchachas se han visto en el espejo de sus hermanitas, pero no se han lavado esta mañana. Estamos en invierno y todavía no ha nevado mucho. Piensa V. (*que*) va á (*it is going*) nevar? No sé; pero no importa. En (*la*) primavera graniza mucho. Llueve? No, señor, pero lloverá. Heló anoche y hoy helará también. Interesa (*á*) todos los hombres de bien amar á su país. El hombre de bien es amado de (*by*) todo el mundo; el malo, de nadie. Sabe V. si (*whether*) este libro se ha vendido (*pàs.*) aquí? Se había ya vendido (*pas.*) ántes que V. llegase. Dios no es adorado por los malos, pero siempre es adorado por los buenos. Cuánto tiempo hace que aprende V. inglés? Hace seis meses que voy á esa Academia. Hace tres años que aprendí el alemán con el mismo profesor que le enseña á V. el inglés. Qué tiempo hace? Hace una hermosa mañana. Hace cuatro años que estoy casado. En Madrid llueve apenas durante el verano, pero llueve mucho en otoño: cuando nieva en el Guadarrama hace mucho frío en Madrid. Por qué trabaja V. tanto? Porque es necesario que concluya esta página ántes que anochezca. Cuánto tiempo hace (*is it*) que no come V.? No como hace dos (*these.....*) días. Quién puede deshonorarse con (*by*) semejante acción? Es una infamia valerse de la miseria de los pobres para enriquecerse.

LECCION XXXIII.

USO DEL INFINITIVO Y DEL GERUNDIO.

232. Además de los verbos semiauxiliares hay algunos otros que no llevan *to* con el infinitivo siguiente, como son: *to bid*

mandar, *to dare* atreverse, *to see*, *to behold* ver y *to make* hacer, aunque este último puede llevar *to*:

Le mando entrar.
Se atrevió á contradecirme.
Te hago levantar temprano.

I bid him come.
He dared contradict me.
I make you rise early.

Tampoco se pone *to* detras de *why* por qué, y en ciertas frases exclamativas: *why make such a noise!* por qué hacer tal ruido!

233. Toda preposicion que no sea *to* equivalente á nuestras *á*, *para* y á veces *de*, rige en inglés gerundio en vez de nuestro infinitivo:

Es aficionado á leer.
Se marchó sin decir nada.

He is fond of reading.
He went away without saying anything.

Hay alguna esperanza de lograrlo?

Is there any hope of succeeding in it?

234. Nuestro infinitivo precedido de *el* puede traducirse en inglés por gerundio ó por infinitivo; por el primero especialmente cuando empieza la oracion:

El levantarse temprano es muy bueno para la salud.
El convertir la noche en dia es una costumbre perniciososa.

Early rising is very good for the health.
Turning (o to turn) night into day is not a salutary practice.

235. Despues de los verbos *to hear* oír, *to see* ver, *to feel* sentir, *to avoid* evitar, se puede usar en inglés gerundio si la accion dura en el momento en que ó de que se habla: le veo venir *I see him coming*; le vi hacerlo *I saw him doing it*. Pero se usa el infinitivo sin *to* si la accion se da como terminada: le vi caer *I saw him fall*. Y aún debe traducirse por participio pasado nuestro infinitivo si el objeto del primer verbo es tambien objeto del segundo: le vi condenar *I saw him condemned*; le hizo arrestar *he had him arrested*.

Tambien puede traducirse nuestro infinitivo por el gerundio inglés despues de los verbos *to avoid* evitar, *to defer* diferir, *to renounce* renunciar, *to purpose* proponerse, *to repent* arrepentirse, *to cease** cesar, *to risk* arriesgarse, *to prefer* preferir, *to finish* acabar, *to continue* continuar, *to forbear* abstenerse, *to hate** odiar, *to decline** rehusar, *to devote to* dedicarse á, *to help* evitar, dejar de, *to retard* diferir, retardar, *to intend** tener intencion, *to like** gustar, y otros de significacion análoga, omitiéndose la preposicion castellana; pero puede traducirse tambien por el infinitivo con *to* especialmente con los que llevan * :

Me propongo hacerle un regalo de
10.000 libras.

No puedo ménos de observar.

Rehusaron dar su aprobacion.

*I purpose making him a present of
ten thousand pounds.*

I cannot help remarking.

*They refused giving (ó to give) their
assent.*

236. El infinitivo que sigue á los verbos *to teach* enseñar, *to know* saber, *to learn* aprender, puede ir acompañado del adverbio *how* como :

Sabe hablar aleman.

El poeta sabe agradar á sus lectores.

He knows (how) to speak German.

*The poet knows (how) to please his
readers.*

237. HACER, seguido de infinitivo, puede traducirse de tres maneras ; por *to make*, *to get* y *to cause* causar, mandar :

1.º Por *to make* cuando el objeto de este verbo es á la vez sujeto del infinitivo siguiente, que entónces no lleva *to* :

Me hace trabajar muchísimo.

Le haré dar sus cuentas.

He makes me work very much.

*I will make him give in his
accounts.*

2.º Si dicho objeto es tambien complemento del segundo verbo, hacer se traduce por *to cause* ó *to get* y á veces por *to*

have, y nuestro infinitivo por participio pasado ó por infinitivo pasivo cuando es verbo activo :

Le hizo arrestar.

He had (ó got) him arrested.

Yo le haré premiar.

I will cause him to be rewarded.

Le haré dar una recompensa.

I will cause a reward to be given to him.

Obs. 55. Con frecuencia se traduce nuestro infinitivo activo por el pasivo en inglés; es de temer *it is to be feared*; es de esperar *it is to be hoped*, qué hay que hacer? *what is to be done?*

238. El gerundio inglés puede emplearse como verbo ó como sustantivo. En el primer caso lleva el mismo régimen que el verbo de que procede: se marchó sin decir nada, *he went away without saying anything*; no hay esperanza de lograrlo, *there is no hope of succeeding in it*.

239. Usado como sustantivo va precedido del artículo y seguido de *of* como otro cualquier nombre: la venida de su padre le sorprendió, *the coming of his father surprised him*.

Pero si el gerundio va precedido de un posesivo puede omitirse el *of*, lo cual es indispensable cuando lleva detras otra preposicion: el aprender las matemáticas le fué muy útil, *his studying (of) mathematics was very useful to him*; el descuidar el estudio le hará desgraciado, *his neglecting to study will make him unhappy*.

240. Hemos dicho (R. 84, 108) que la negacion se pone detras del verbo ó del auxiliar en los tiempos compuestos. Pero se exceptúan el infinitivo y gerundio, á los cuales debe preceder siempre la partícula negativa :

No viendo á V. me fui.

Not seeing you I went away.

Siento no haberlo hecho.

I am sorry not to have done it.
I am sorry not having done it.

<i>Holy Ghost</i>	Espíritu Santo	<i>by heart</i>	de memoria
<i>on account of</i>	á causa de	costumbre	<i>custom</i>
<i>refused</i>	desairado	santiguarse	<i>to cross one's self</i>
<i>because of</i>	á causa de,	campo de trigo	<i>corn-field</i>
	porque	atar	<i>to fasten</i>
<i>never</i>	nunca	segador	<i>reaper</i>
<i>owing</i>	debido	vituperar	<i>to blame</i>
<i>again</i>	otra vez	aumentar	<i>to increase</i>
<i>busy</i>	ocupado	rezar	<i>to pray</i>
<i>to travel</i>	viajar	socorrer	<i>to relieve</i>
<i>while</i>	miéntras	llamar á	<i>to knock at</i>
<i>guitar</i>	guitarra	no puedo mé-	} <i>I cannot help</i>
<i>to touch</i>	tocar	nos de	
<i>party</i>	partida	extranjero	(c. ger.)
<i>to delight</i>	deleitarse	política	<i>foreign</i>
<i>subject</i>	asunto	sentir	<i>politics</i>
			<i>to be sorry</i>

Tema 33.

My children think of God on waking, and before dressing they pray to Him and to the holy Virgin and say: in the name of the Father, and of the son and of the Holy Ghost; amen. Their father loves them for being good and their mother has given them a present for having done their work so soon. Are you going to France? I may go there in summer if I can speak French well enough. Our affairs are not in a good condition and we have to work a great deal more if we wish them to be better than they are. Why have you not lent me this book? The book would have been lent you, had you been a good boy, but as you have been punished at school on account of your not having learned the irregular verbs, as you ought to have done, you have been refused. Is this young man happy? Because of his not having loved his parents, he will never be happy. Owing to your having come, all my labour is already lost, and it is not worth while to do it again. What are you busy at every day? I am busy writing. Is it good traveling in (*the*) winter? It is bad traveling in (*the*) winter. How are you correcting so many themes? I correct while reading and you speak while answering me.

(Para corregir.)

Do you play upon the guitar? In English we say to play on an instrument, instead of touch an instrument. In how many ways can

you to say: *ya se escribir*? In two ways; and I fancy I can tell you them: I already know read, but I don't know write. I wish I could to dance. Do you intend to go there? We purpose go to a hunting party. It is not worth while go there. Did you rejoice at see your aunt? Yes. This young lady delights in play the piano. Is it good live in London? It is good live there and not dear. Will you to make my fire? He shall to do it. I dare not to speak to her on this subject. Do you learn by heart? I do not like learn by heart. Does your brother intend go to Germany? He intends go there, if they pay him what they owe him. I had rather to see the soldiers than to look upon his schoolmaster.

Conoce V. á este niño? Sí, es un buen muchacho; tiene la costumbre de despertarse temprano y de santiguarse al (*on*) levantarse. Se levanta V. temprano? Tengo la costumbre de levantarme todos los dias á las cinco y media, y me lavo siempre al levantarme. A dónde van VV. hoy? Irémos al campo de trigo, donde verémos á los segadores cortando el grano y atando los haces. Les hemos oido vituperar (*part.*) hasta por sus amigos. Le ve V. patinar en (*on*) el canal? Siento aumentar el frio de (*from*) dia en (*to*) dia. Conoce V. á esta señorita? Sí; es muy amiga de rezar; encuentra sólo (*only*) placer en (*in*) socorrer á los pobres. Habia acabado de escribir cuando V. llamó á la puerta. Ha acabado V. de almorzar? No, señor. No puedo ménos de reír cuando pienso en (*of*) eso. Se abstienen VV. de comer pescado? Nos abstenemos de comer carne. El aprender idiomas extranjeros es muy útil á los jóvenes que se dedican al comercio, á la política ó á la iglesia. Está V. cansado de leer? No estoy cansado de leer, pero estoy cansado de escribir. Siento mucho no haber comprado esos hermosos caballos.

LECCION XXXIV.

USOS ESPECIALES DE ALGUNOS VERBOS.

241. TO KNOW, CAN, saber; imperf. *knew, could*. El primero indica conocimiento, saber científico; el segundo, una ha-

bilidad, arte, facultad física: *Can you read this lesson?* sabe usted leer esta lección? *We cannot understand it but we can speak English*, no podemos entenderla, pero sabemos hablar inglés. *I know a good place to swim in*, conozco un buen sitio para nadar en él. Le conoce V.? *do you know him?* ó *are you acquainted with him?* La conozco, *I know her* ó *I am acquainted with her*. Sabe V. nadar? *do you know how to swim?* ó *can you swim?*

Obs. 56. Para dar más viveza al discurso se usan á veces *can* y *must* en futuro, aunque ordinariamente no se emplean en este tiempo por carecer de infinitivo.

242. *TO SAY, TO TELL*, decir. El primero se usa ordinariamente cuando se indica que se van á referir palabras textuales ó un dicho de otro; imperf. y part. p. *said, told*: dijo que lo habia hecho, *he said he had done it*; *what did he say?* *he said nothing* qué dijo? no dijo nada.

El segundo significa contar, informar ó decir en general: *Will you tell the servant to make the fire?* quiere V. decir al criado que encienda fuego? *I will tell him to make it*, quiero decirle que lo haga. *Has he told you that?* le ha dicho á usted eso? *You have told me that*, V. me ha dicho eso.

243. *To say* exige siempre la preposicion *to* delante del régimen indirecto; *to tell* no la lleva casi nunca. *Have you told it me?* me lo ha dicho V.? *I have told it you*, se lo he dicho á V. *To whom have you told it?* *I have told it them*, á quién se lo ha dicho V.? se lo he dicho á ellos. *The emperor who was impatient said to the statesman*; *What have you heard?* El emperador, que estaba impaciente, dijo al repúblico: qué habeis oido?

244. *TO SPEAK, TO TALK*, hablar. El primero significa hablar en general, y siempre lleva *to* con el dativo; el segundo conversar, charlar; imperf. *spoke*, part. p. *spoken*. *Can we*

Speak with the minister? podemos hablar con el ministro? *We were talking together when he called us*, estábamos conversando cuando nos llamó. *He is a great talker*, es un gran charlatán.

245. TO MAKE, TO DO, hacer. Imperfecto *made, did*; participio p. *made, done*. *To make* significa hacer en sentido de crear, formar, ejecutar un trabajo material, físico; *to do* hacer en sentido moral, obrar; usándose también cuando se habla en sentido general: *what have you done?* qué ha hecho V.? *I have made my task*, he hecho mi tarea. *Has the shoemaker made my shoes?* he hecho el zapatero mis zapatos? no los ha hecho.

246. Las principales frases en que ocurre el verbo *to do* son:

<i>To do good</i>	hacer bien
» <i>do well</i>	obrar bien
» <i>do evil</i>	hacer mal
» <i>do badly</i>	obrar mal
» <i>do right</i>	hacer lo que se debe
» <i>do wrong</i>	hacer lo que no se debe
» <i>do justice</i>	hacer justicia
» <i>do work</i>	trabajar
» <i>do as one please</i>	hacer como uno guste
» <i>do like for like</i>	pagar en la misma moneda
» <i>do something</i>	hacer algo
» <i>do one to death</i>	matar á alguno
» <i>do meat</i>	preparar carne ó cocerla
» <i>do again</i>	volver á hacer
» <i>do a task</i>	hacer una tarea
» <i>do a translation</i>	hacer una traducción
» <i>do an exercise</i>	hacer un tema
» <i>do a foolish thing</i>	hacer una locura
» <i>do damage</i>	causar perjuicio
» <i>do honour</i>	hacer honor
» <i>do some business</i>	hacer algún negocio
» <i>do a kindness, a favour</i>	hacer un favor
» <i>do</i>	encontrarse, estar (de salud)
» <i>do with</i>	hacer de
» <i>do without</i>	pasarse sin
» <i>do well by one</i>	tratar bien á alguno

247. Las frases más usuales en que se emplea el verbo *to make* son:

<i>To make tools</i>	hacer herramientas
» <i>make a ring</i>	hacer una sortija
» <i>make a stand</i>	hacer una pausa
» <i>make amends</i>	indemnizar
» <i>make a request</i>	hacer una súplica
» <i>make one's escape</i>	escaparse
» <i>make excuses</i>	presentar excusas
» <i>make a trial</i>	hacer un ensayo
» <i>make use of</i>	hacer uso de
» <i>make haste</i>	darse prisa
» <i>make one happy</i>	hacer á uno feliz
» <i>make friends</i>	hacerse amigos
» <i>make a cure</i>	hacer una cura
» <i>make an experiment</i>	hacer un experimento
» <i>make a signal</i>	hacer una señal
» <i>make a shot at one</i>	tirar contra alguno
» <i>make an assignation</i>	hacer una asignacion
» <i>make one</i>	hacer á uno hombre
» <i>make fast</i>	amarrar, afirmar
» <i>make off</i>	tomar soleta
» <i>make away with one</i>	deshacerse de alguno
» <i>make noise</i>	hacer ruido
» <i>make a promise</i>	dar una promesa
» <i>make a proposal</i>	hacer una proposicion
» <i>make will</i>	hacer testamento
» <i>make a vow</i>	hacer un voto
» <i>make fortune</i>	hacer fortuna
» <i>make acquaintance</i>	trabar relaciones
» <i>make choice</i>	hacer eleccion
» <i>make an effort</i>	hacer un esfuerzo
» <i>make difficulties</i>	presentar dificultades
» <i>make peace (pis)</i>	hacer la paz
» <i>make truce</i>	darse treguas
» <i>make a purchase</i>	hacer una compra
» <i>make a law</i>	hacer una ley
» <i>make a poem</i>	hacer un poema
» <i>make a speech</i>	hacer un discurso, una arenga
» <i>make a difference</i>	hacer una diferencia
» <i>make a sum (scem)</i>	hacer una suma
» <i>make a league</i>	hacer una liga ó alianza
» <i>make a bargain</i>	hacer un trato
» <i>make a good dinner</i>	hacer una buena comida
» <i>make a pen</i>	cortar una pluma
» <i>make ready</i>	preparar
» <i>make one angry</i>	enfadar á uno
» <i>make something clean</i>	limpiar algo
» <i>make shipwreck</i>	naufragar
» <i>make money</i>	hacer dinero, ganar
» <i>make a blow at one</i>	pegar á alguno
» <i>make an agreement</i>	hacer un convenio
» <i>make a speculation</i>	hacer una especulacion
» <i>make a voyage</i>	hacer un viaje (por mar)

» <i>make a journey</i>	hacer un viaje (por tierra)
» <i>make an apology</i>	hacer una apología
» <i>make an offer</i>	hacer una oferta
» <i>make a blunder</i>	cometer una torpeza
» <i>make a mistake</i>	padecer una equivocación, engañarse
» <i>make a declaration</i>	hacer una declaración
» <i>make a present</i>	hacer un regalo
» <i>make progress</i>	hacer adelantos
» <i>make advances</i>	hacer anticipos á alguno

<i>assembled</i>	reunido	esperar	<i>to wait</i>
<i>to sleep</i>	dormir	momento	<i>moment</i>
<i>to fear</i>	temer	fácil	<i>easy (izi)</i>
<i>mildness</i>	dulzura	continuamente	<i>incessantly</i>
<i>chid</i>	reñido	atormentar	<i>to torment</i>
<i>account</i>	relación	remordimiento	<i>sting</i>
<i>way</i>	camino, modo	dibujo	<i>drawing</i>
<i>then</i>	entonces	por eso	<i>therefore</i>
<i>above</i>	sobre	traducción	<i>translation</i>
<i>please</i>	perdone V.	indicar	<i>to indicate</i>

Tema 34.

We cannot know whether the minister was believed by the king. Do you know all persons who are assembled here? Not all; but I know a great many of them. Do you know how to read and to write? I can read but I cannot write. As soon as I spoke to him, he did what I told him. What do you do in the evening? I sleep. That cannot be said. What language do they speak? She speaks very well English. Do not fear, said the king, with mildness: whatever you may say, I promise you I will be indulgent. Boys are fond of talking. What are you doing? If you do that, you will be chid by your master. We are talking of the king; do you know what we are saying of him? We can give you an account of what you say. Would you be happy in this world? Yes; if I knew the way to be so. Then you have to love God above all things and do to your neighbour what you would have him do to you. He who says so is right; but does he do what he says? I do not know: I should not think ill of any body. John, what have you been doing to-day? Please, Sir, nothing; I have been ill since yesterday, and that is the reason why I don't

know my lesson. I wish I knew how to speak English: what must be done to be able to speak it well? You must learn a great many words, know the grammar and speak with English people.

Está hablando con un hombre que no conozco. Llámale. Puede usted decirme el nombre del caballero que está bailando con la señorita de (*in*) blanco? No, señor. Qué le ha dicho á V. este hombre? Me ha dicho que era español. Puedo hablarle? Sí. Dígale V. que tengo algo que darle. Se lo diré. Dice que si V. quiere esperar un momento, (*le*) hablará á V. Es tan fácil hacer bien como hacer mal; el que obra mal es continuamente atormentado por los remordimientos de la conciencia. Qué ha hecho V. toda la mañana? Hice la tarea que me dió el profesor de dibujo; por eso no pude hacer la traducción. Haré uso de los medios que él me ha indicado, y le prometo á V. que me daré prisa, porque con este negocio pienso hacer á mis hijos felices. Es verdad que yo he padecido algunas equivocaciones, pero él ha cometido muchas torpezas. Qué ha dicho el maestro? Ha dicho que V. no sabrá nunca matemáticas si no estudia usted más. Puede V. decirme, niño, quién le hizo á V.? El gran Dios que hizo (*el*) cielo y (*la*) tierra. Los muchachos son amigos (*fond*) de charlar.

LECCION XXXV.

VERBOS IRREGULARES.

248. Los verbos ingleses sólo pueden ser irregulares en el pretérito y participio pasado, á excepcion de los auxiliares y semiauxiliares, que lo son tambien en presente de indicativo.

Pueden dividirse en tres clases: los que tienen el imperfecto y participio iguales al presente; los que tienen imperfecto y participio iguales, pero distintos del presente, y los que tienen diferentes los tres tiempos mencionados.

Nosotros los dividimos en grupos segun sus analogías.

I.

249. En todos estos verbos el imperfecto y participio pasado son iguales al infinitivo ó al presente.

Únicamente *beat*, *spit* y *sweat* tienen otras formas irregulares. Es de advertir que la pronunciacion de los tres tiempos no es igual en todos estos verbos.

INFINITIVO.		IMPERFECTO.	PART. PASADO.
<i>To beat</i>	batir, apalear	<i>beat, bate</i>	<i>beaten, beat</i>
» <i>burst</i>	reventar	<i>burst</i>	<i>burst</i>
» <i>cast</i>	fundir, arrojar	<i>cast</i>	<i>cast</i>
» <i>cost</i>	costar	<i>cost</i>	<i>cost</i>
» <i>cut</i>	cortar	<i>cut</i>	<i>cut</i>
» <i>hit</i>	pegar, dar	<i>hit</i>	<i>hit</i>
» <i>hurt</i>	dañar, herir, ofender	<i>hurt</i>	<i>hurt</i>
» <i>knit</i>	hacer media	<i>knit</i>	<i>knit</i>
» <i>let</i>	permitir, arrendar	<i>let</i>	<i>let</i>
» <i>put</i>	poner	<i>put</i>	<i>put</i>
» <i>read</i>	leer (<i>red</i>)	<i>read (red)</i>	<i>read</i>
» <i>rid</i>	librar	<i>rid</i>	<i>rid</i>
» <i>set</i>	poner, sembrar	<i>set</i>	<i>set</i>
» <i>shed</i>	verter, derramar	<i>shed</i>	<i>shed</i>
» <i>shred</i>	picar	<i>shred</i>	<i>shred</i>
» <i>shut</i>	cerrar	<i>shut</i>	<i>shut</i>
» <i>slit</i>	rajar	<i>slit</i>	<i>slit</i>
» <i>spit</i>	escupir	<i>spat, spit</i>	<i>spitten, spat, spit</i>
» <i>split</i>	partir	<i>split</i>	<i>split</i>
» <i>spread</i>	esparcir (<i>spred</i>)	<i>spread</i>	<i>spread</i>
» <i>sweat</i>	sudar (<i>suet</i>)	<i>sweat, swet</i>	<i>sweat, swet, swot</i>
» <i>thrust</i>	empujar, arrojar	<i>thrust</i>	<i>thrust</i>

II.

250. Todos los verbos de este grupo tienen la particularidad de acabar en el participio pasado en *en*.

Casi todos cambian en imperfecto y participio la vocal del infinitivo en *o*.

Los ocho últimos conservan dicha vocal en el participio pasado.

<i>To bid</i>	enviar, mandar	<i>bade</i>	<i>bidden</i>
» <i>eat (it)</i>	comer en general	<i>ate, eat</i>	<i>eaten, eat</i>
» <i>fall</i>	caer	<i>fell</i>	<i>fallen</i>
» <i>forsake</i>	abandonar	<i>forsook</i>	<i>forsaken</i>
» <i>give</i>	dar	<i>gave</i>	<i>given</i>
» <i>seeth</i>	cocer, hervir	<i>seethed, sod</i>	<i>sodden</i>
» <i>shake</i>	estremecerse, sacudir	<i>shook</i>	<i>shaken, shook</i>
» <i>stread</i>	pisar, hollar	<i>strod</i>	<i>strodden</i>
» <i>swell</i>	hinchar	<i>swelled</i>	<i>swollen</i>
» <i>take</i>	tomar	<i>took</i>	<i>taken</i>
» <i>tread</i>	hollar	<i>trod</i>	<i>trodden, trod</i>
» <i>break</i>	romper, quebrar	<i>broke</i>	<i>broken</i>
» <i>choose</i>	elegir, escoger	<i>chose</i>	<i>chosen</i>
» <i>freeze</i>	helar	<i>froze</i>	<i>frozen</i>
» <i>heave</i>	echar, alzar (<i>hiv</i>)	<i>hove</i>	<i>hoven</i>
» <i>speak</i>	hablar	<i>spoke</i>	<i>spoken</i>
» <i>steal</i>	robar	<i>stole</i>	<i>stolen</i>
» <i>weave</i>	tejer (<i>uiv</i>)	<i>wove</i>	<i>woven</i>

251. *To take* tomar, se usa con frecuencia por nuestro dar y hacer cuando se quiere expresar movimiento, como *to take a step* dar un paso; *to take a walk* dar un paseo; *to take a journey* hacer un viaje.

<i>fairy</i>	bonito	<i>step</i>	<i>pisada</i>
<i>to mistake</i>	equivocarse	<i>to bid farewell</i>	despedirse
<i>to rest</i>	descansar	<i>methinks</i>	se me figura
<i>for ever</i>	para siempre	darse la mano	<i>to shake hands</i>
<i>needle</i>	aguja	estar en buena	<i>to be in good</i>
<i>fashion</i>	tono	armonía	<i>terms</i>
<i>carpet</i>	alfombra	cañonazo	<i>shot</i>
<i>to go away</i>	marcharse	cañon	<i>canon</i>
<i>pocket</i>	bolsillo	continuar	<i>to continue</i>
<i>shoulder</i>	espalda	desembarazarse	<i>to rid one's self</i>
<i>pane</i>	cristal	fastidiar	<i>to tire (tair)</i>
<i>stuff (stof)</i>	tela		

Tema 35.

They ought not to have put money in your hands, for they owe you nothing. Have you read these books? I have read very few of those fairy tales that you speak of. The flowers shed their perfumes; but I like especially the perfume shed by those flowers. Make your

aunt understand that she is mistaken. Who were the Jews? The family of Abraham, and God chose them for his own people. He forbade his workmen to rest till they had finished their work; and I said to them; this is forbidden fruit. Awake! Arise! or be for ever fallen! Have you spoken with my aunt? The good woman knit from morning till night; she has knit all these things with the same needles. Mr. Henry gave himself all the airs of the man of fashion. Has the maid shaken the carpets? Yes. Have you shut the door? Yes; I shut the door, put the key in my pocket, and went away. But you shut the stable-door when the horse is stolen. Has any accident happened, Sir? Why; it is a man who was carrying a basket on his shoulders; in falling, he has broken two panes of that window. This stuff is better woven than that. His parents fear very much for his life; because he has already spit blood two or three times.

(Para corregir.)

Who has putted this hat here? Your little sister putted it here yesterday, and it has been here since then. What have you done to-day? We have eaten some apples and other fruits, and we should have eaten more, had we not been forbid by the gardener. Have you seen my garden? Yes; the flowers are all trodded over; but we trodded the beaten way, and the boys trodded in the steps of their father. What charming bonnet! where did you buy it? It was my brother who gived it me. A few minutes before dying, he bided us farewell. What falled down? The small boy. If you had held (*tenido*) him better he would not have falled. How many tears has she sheded for the death of her son! Mi father has a mahogany table that has been slitted by the heat. Methinks, this glass is broken. What shall I choose, when they have already choosed the best? This meat is not well seethed; let it seeth again.

Dónde puedes haber puesto mi pañuelo? Puede que (*I may*) le haya puesto donde le encontraste ayer; es decir, en la caja de (*with*) tus medias. Dónde has robado estas flores? No las he robado. Para

qué es este pan? Para este pobre niño, que no ha comido nada desde el almuerzo (*since breakfast-time*). Al (*at the*) segundo cañonazo reventó el cañon, y no pudimos continuar nuestro trabajo. Cuánto le ha costado á V. esta levita? Me costó 45 francos en París; aquí me habria costado 20. Ha leído V. las obras de Byron? Las he leído. Por fin me he desembarazado de un negocio que me fastidiaba. Yo nunca he abandonado á los amigos. Ya estamos en buena armonía; hoy mismo nos hemos dado la mano como buenos amigos. Cuánto le ha costado á V. ese caballo? Me costó 4.250 francos en París; aquí me habria costado más. Estos hombres son ricos porque han robado mucho dinero y porque han hollado muchas veces las leyes.

LECCION XXXVI.

CONTINUACION DE LOS VERBOS IRREGULARES.

III.

252. Los de este grupo tienen las mismas irregularidades de los anteriores; pero conservan invariable la vocal en el participio pasado.

<i>To drive</i>	guiar, arrear	<i>drove</i>	<i>driven (driv n)</i>
» <i>ride</i>	ir á caballo ó en coche	<i>rode</i>	<i>ridden</i>
» <i>rise</i>	levantarse	<i>rose</i>	<i>risen (riz'n)</i>
» <i>shrive</i>	confesar	<i>shrove</i>	<i>shriven</i>
» <i>smite</i>	herir, golpear	<i>smote</i>	<i>smitten, smit</i>
» <i>stride</i>	alargar el paso	<i>strode</i>	<i>stridden, strode</i>
» <i>strive</i>	esforzarse	<i>strove</i>	<i>striven</i>
» <i>thrive</i>	medrar, prosperar	<i>throve</i>	<i>thriven</i>
» <i>write</i>	escribir	<i>wrote</i>	<i>written</i>

IV.

253. Éstos añaden *n* al participio pasado, y en el imperfecto toman la forma regular. De *snow* ocurre á veces el imperfecto *snew*.

<i>To hew</i>	cortar	<i>hewed</i>	<i>hewn</i>
» <i>mow</i>	segar	<i>mowed</i>	<i>mown</i>
» <i>saw</i>	serrar	<i>sawed</i>	<i>sawn</i>
» <i>show, shew</i>	mostrar, enseñar	<i>showed</i>	<i>shown, R.</i>
» <i>snow</i>	nevar	<i>snowed</i>	<i>snown</i>
» <i>sow</i>	sembrar	<i>sowed</i>	<i>sown</i>
» <i>strow</i>	derramar	<i>strowed</i>	<i>strown</i>

OBS. 57. Estos verbos son muy semejantes á los comprendidos en el grupo XI, de los que sólo se diferencian en el imperfecto.

V.

254. Los verbos de este grupo forman el imperfecto y participio añadiendo *d*. La *y* se cambia en *i*.

<i>To die</i>	morir	<i>died</i>	<i>died</i>
» <i>flee</i>	huir	<i>fled</i>	<i>fled</i>
» <i>hear</i>	oir	<i>heard</i>	<i>heard (herd)</i>
» <i>lay</i>	colocar, echar	<i>laid</i>	<i>laid</i>
» <i>pay</i>	pagar	<i>paid</i>	<i>paid</i>
» <i>say</i>	decir	<i>said</i>	<i>said</i>
» <i>stay</i>	permanecer	<i>staid</i>	<i>staid</i>

<i>through (zru)</i>	por, á través de	<i>píldora</i>	<i>pill</i>
<i>park</i>	parque	<i>pieza</i>	<i>piece</i>
<i>to stop</i>	parar	<i>tarea</i>	<i>duty</i>
<i>bridge</i>	puente	<i>encanto</i>	<i>charm</i>
<i>lucky</i>	dicha	<i>heno</i>	<i>hay</i>
<i>to follow</i>	seguir	<i>madera (de construcción)</i>	} <i>timber</i>
<i>fast</i>	de prisa	<i>entre</i>	
<i>to overhear</i>	entreoír	<i>jóvenes</i>	<i>young people</i>
<i>to deserve</i>	merecer		
<i>dry</i>	seco		

Tema 36.

My son has written a long letter to his aunt whose present he has received. You rose yesterday at five, did you not? We rose early in the morning, washed and breakfasted. Have you already paid a

visit to Mr. Serrano? I have; but he did not receive me; he is very ill and Mrs. Serrano also. What is said to-day? There is nothing new to-day; yesterday the king was said to be sick. Your reasons, whatever they may be, will be heard. Where did you ride? Through his park; we rode ten miles without stopping, and the officer has ridden from the bridge to his house in a quarter of an hour. It is lucky for me to have staid at home to-day. Have you heard that your aunt is going to be married for the fourth time? I have heard some persons say so, but I do not believe it. How happy I am to read what he has written! He wrote every evening what he had done in the day. Has the child followed you? He strove to follow us, but we went too fast for him: he has striven in vain.

(Para corregir.)

We have heard our fathers say that there was a Brutus, who gave liberty to his country. Have you showed us all that is to be seen? Yes. Shut the door that we may not be overheard. My son has died when he was five years old. Do you think to stay long at London? Not so long as I stayed last year. He rised at six o'clock, and you have rised just now. How many have thrived through his influence, that deserve to be poor! Until now you have only showed me goods of great price: well, I will show you some cheap ones. The wind has strowed the ground with dry leaves. Is your little boy fond of horses? Yes; he has rided from the bridge to his house in ten minutes. We were smited with the splendour of those apartments.

Mi amigo está bastante enfermo; no se ha levantado todavía. A quién ha escrito V. tantas cartas? No son muchas, pero las he escrito todas á varios señores del comercio de (*at*) Lóndres y Mátaga. Hemos oido decir que las píldoras de este doctor son las mejores del mundo. Conoce V. á estas señoritas? Sí, una de ellas canta muy bien; ha leído todos nuestros poetas, y me han dicho que ha escrito algunas piezas de poesía. Le pagarán á V. lo que le deben? Dentro de (*in*) un mes creo que me pagarán todo: he cobrado tres meses.

Ha oído V. el ruido de (*in*) la calle? Oí algo, pero no presté (*to pay*) atención. V. nos ha echado una tarea demasiado larga. Los encantos de esta niña hirieron el corazón del joven. Cuántas veces han segado esos hombres el heno este verano? Lo han segado dos veces. Han serrado solamente (*but*) la mitad de la madera; mañana serrarán la otra mitad. Qué le ha dicho V. á él? Ese malvado ha sembrado la discordia entre estos jóvenes.

LECCION XXXVII.

CONTINUACION DE LOS VERBOS IRREGULARES.

VI.

255. Los de esta clase toman *t* en imperfecto y participio. Algunos tienen formas regulares.

<i>To burn</i>	quemar	<i>burnt</i>	<i>burnt</i>
» <i>deal</i>	traficar, barajar	<i>dealt (delt)</i>	<i>dealt</i>
» <i>dip</i>	remojar, sumergir	<i>dipped</i>	<i>dipt</i>
» <i>dream</i>	soñar (<i>drim</i>)	<i>dreamt (dremt)</i>	<i>dreamt</i>
» <i>dwell</i>	habitar, residir	<i>dwelt</i>	<i>dwelt</i>
» <i>leap</i>	saltar	<i>leaped</i>	<i>leapt (lept)</i>
» <i>learn</i>	aprender	<i>learned</i>	<i>learnt</i>
» <i>mean</i>	significar (<i>min</i>)	<i>meant (ment)</i>	<i>meant</i>
» <i>smell</i>	oler	<i>smelt</i>	<i>smelt</i>
» <i>spill</i>	derramar, verter	<i>spilt</i>	<i>spilt</i>

VII.

256. Éstos admiten también la forma regular en el participio pasado, pero es la menos usada.

<i>To grave</i>	grabar, ahondar	<i>graved</i>	<i>graven</i>
» <i>lade</i>	cargar	<i>laded</i>	<i>laden</i>
» <i>rive (raiv)</i>	rajar, madurar	<i>rived</i>	<i>riven (riv'n)</i>
» <i>shape</i>	formar	<i>shaped</i>	<i>shapen</i>
» <i>shave</i>	afeitarse	<i>shaved</i>	<i>shaven</i>
» <i>wax</i>	encerar, aumentar	<i>waxed</i>	<i>waxen</i>

VIII.

257. La irregularidad de estos verbos consiste únicamente en que toman *t* en vez de *d* como desinencia del imperfecto y participio pasado.

Los que tienen dos *e* pierden una *e* en los dos tiempos mencionados. Los acabados en *eave* cambian esta terminacion en *eft*, y los en *d* la pierden tambien.

<i>To bend</i>	doblar, encorvar	<i>bent</i>	<i>bent</i>
» <i>build</i>	edificar	<i>built</i>	<i>built</i>
» <i>gild</i>	dorar	<i>gilt</i>	<i>gilt</i>
» <i>gird</i>	ceñir, rodear (<i>gird</i>)	<i>girt</i>	<i>girt</i>
» <i>lend</i>	prestar	<i>lent</i>	<i>lent</i>
» <i>rend</i>	rasgar	<i>rent</i>	<i>rent</i>
» <i>send</i>	mandar, enviar	<i>sent</i>	<i>sent</i>
» <i>spend</i>	gastar	<i>spent</i>	<i>spent</i>
» <i>creep</i>	gatear, arrastrar	<i>crept</i>	<i>crept</i>
» <i>feel</i>	palpar, sentir	<i>felt</i>	<i>felt</i>
» <i>keep</i>	tener, guardar	<i>kept</i>	<i>kept</i>
» <i>kneel</i>	arrodillarse	<i>knelt</i>	<i>knelt</i>
» <i>sleep</i>	dormir	<i>slept</i>	<i>slept</i>
» <i>sweep</i>	barrer, marchar	<i>swept</i>	<i>swept</i>
» <i>weep</i>	llorar	<i>wept</i>	<i>wept</i>
» <i>bereave</i>	privar, despojar	<i>bereft</i>	<i>bereft</i>
» <i>cleave</i>	rajarse, hender	<i>cleft, clove</i>	<i>cleft, cloven</i>
» <i>leave</i>	dejar (<i>liv</i>)	<i>left</i>	<i>left</i>

Obs. 58. Quedar á uno algo es *to have something left*: cuánto dinero les queda á sus hermanas? *how much money have your sisters left?*

<i>novel</i>	novela	hipocresía	<i>hypocrisy</i>
<i>interruption</i>	interruccion	mantener	<i>to maintain</i>
<i>to send down</i>	arrojar	sumo sacerdote	<i>high priest</i>
<i>everlasting</i>	eterno	mirar	<i>to behold</i>
<i>plough (plau)</i>	arado	blasfemia	<i>blasphemy</i>
<i>yonder</i>	allá	encina	<i>oak (ók)</i>
<i>poplar</i>	álamo	sufrir	<i>to suffer</i>
<i>refreshment</i>	refresco	para	<i>in order to</i>
<i>quiet (cuait)</i>	tranquilo	salvar	<i>to save</i>
<i>biscuit</i>	bizcocho	pecador	<i>sinner</i>
<i>castle</i>	castillo	quebrantar	<i>to break</i>
<i>aire libre</i>	<i>open air</i>		

Tema 37.

Have you lent your grammar to my brother? I have lent my sister the novels you lent me. Whom have you lent your horse to? I have lent it to no one. Do you sleep well? I slept very well last night; I have slept six hours without interruption. What must become of you if you are wicked? If I am wicked I shall be sent down to everlasting fire in hell. That young man guides from morning till night the plough which his father left him. What's that tall tree yonder which rises so high? It is a poplar: its white wood is easily hewn. Did you understand what he meant? No, but I am sure he cannot have meant to grieve us. The girl swept this morning my room. Did not your friend promise to meet you here? He did, but he has not kept his promise. Time is money; that is why we say, to spend time: he spent his life in building castles in the air. Come, do not weep: the poor wept, when her son was gone. How much money shall we have left, when we have paid for our horses? We shall have only ten pounds left.

(Para corregir.)

Have you sended for a coach? No; but if our friends come we will send for some refreshments. This palace was builded the year one thousand eight hundred and thirty nine. Who has gilded this altar? A friend of mine. You are girded by enemies, and you remain quiet! Why have you not sended for your stick? Yesterday I sended my servant and they told him that you were not at home. How much wood did you burn last winter? I burned very few, compared with that which I have burned this year. Give the child this biscuit diped in wine. I dream almost every night, but in the morning I don't know what I have dreamed. Have you smelled this rose? Yes, it smells very well. They have kepted him long time in prison for an injury against her; but he has always kepted his dignity. How have you slepted this night? I slepted till four o'clock in the morning. He has swepted through the Prado towards the royal palace.

Mi tía ha enviado á mi esposa tres pares de guantes, seis pares de medias y una cesta de cerezas. Soñé con (*of*) V. anoche. Dónde durmió V. anoche? Como hacía buen tiempo, dormí al (*in the*) aire libre; y dormí muy bien soñando con (*of*) mi casa y con mi familia. Por fin hemos rasgado el velo de la hipocresía. Mi amigo gasta sólo en caballos tanto como su padre gastaba para (*to*) mantener á toda su familia. Pregunte V. á la criada si ha barrido el cuarto y hecho las camas. Dinero mal adquirido (*ill got*), es siempre malgastado. Qué dice V.? Digo que el viento ha rajado la vieja encina. Cuánto dinero les queda á sus hermanos de V.? Les quedarán 20 libras; pero han gastado este mes más de 125 libras. Cuándo se han afeitado estos muchachos? Se afeitaron ayer mañana. Entónces, el sumo sacerdote rasgó sus vestidos (*garments*), diciendo: 'Mirad, ahora habeis oido la blasfemia.' Qué ha sufrido Jesucristo para salvar á los hombres? Murió por (*los*) pecadores, porque han quebrantado la ley de Dios.

LECCION XXXVIII.

CONTINUACION DE LOS VERBOS IRREGULARES.

IX.

258. Este grupo no tiene más signo distintivo del imperfecto y participio que el cambio de la vocal radical. Los seis primeros la cambian generalmente en *a* en imperfecto y en *u* en participio; los ocho restantes la trasforman en *u* en ambos tiempos.

<i>To begin</i>	empezar	<i>began, begun</i>	<i>begun</i>
» <i>drink</i>	beber	<i>drank</i>	<i>drunk, drunken</i>
» <i>ring</i>	repicar, sonar	<i>rang, rung</i>	<i>rung, rong</i>
» <i>sing</i>	cantar	<i>sang, sung</i>	<i>sung</i>
» <i>spring</i>	brotar, saltar	<i>sprang</i>	<i>sprung</i>
» <i>swim</i>	nadar	<i>swam, swam</i>	<i>swum, swom</i>
» <i>cling</i>	agarrarse	<i>clung, clang</i>	<i>clung, clong</i>
» <i>dig</i>	cavar	<i>dug</i>	<i>dug</i>
» <i>fling</i>	arrojar, tirar	<i>flung</i>	<i>flung, flong</i>

<i>To get</i>	adquirir, ganar	<i>got, A. gat</i>	<i>got A. gotten</i>
» <i>hang</i>	colgar, estar colgado	<i>hung</i>	<i>hung</i>
» <i>sink</i>	hundirse	<i>sank</i>	<i>sunk</i>
» <i>sling</i>	tirar (con honda)	<i>slung, slang</i>	<i>slung</i>
» <i>slink</i>	escabullirse	<i>slunk</i>	<i>slunk</i>
» <i>spin</i>	hilar	<i>spun, span</i>	<i>spun</i>
» <i>stick</i>	clavar, fijar	<i>stuck</i>	<i>stuck</i>
» <i>sting</i>	punzar, lacerar	<i>stung</i>	<i>stung</i>
» <i>stink</i>	heder, oler mal	<i>stunk</i>	<i>stunk</i>
» <i>string</i>	poner cuerdas, tem- plar	<i>strung.</i>	<i>strung</i>
» <i>swing</i>			
» <i>wring</i>	retorcer, arrancar	<i>wrung</i>	<i>wrung</i>

X.

259. Los verbos de este grupo presentan diversas anomalías: la mayor parte tienen iguales el imperfecto y participio.

<i>To bite</i>	morder (<i>bait</i>)	<i>bit, bate</i>	<i>bitten</i>
» <i>chide</i>	reñir, regañar	<i>chid, chode</i>	<i>chid, chidden</i>
» <i>feed</i>	alimentar, pacer	<i>fed</i>	<i>fed-</i>
» <i>hide</i>	esconder, ocultar	<i>hid</i>	<i>hidden, hid</i>
» <i>light</i>	alumbrar, encender	<i>R. lit</i>	<i>lit, R.</i>
» <i>lose</i>	perder (<i>luz</i>)	<i>lost</i>	<i>lost</i>
» <i>make</i>	hacer	<i>made</i>	<i>made</i>
» <i>meet</i>	encontrar	<i>met</i>	<i>met</i>
» <i>sell</i>	vender	<i>sold</i>	<i>sold</i>
» <i>shoe</i>	herrar, calzar (<i>shu</i>)	<i>shod</i>	<i>shod</i>
» <i>sit</i>	sentarse	<i>sat, sate</i>	<i>sat, sitten</i>
» <i>slide</i>	resbalar, patinar	<i>slid</i>	<i>slidden</i>
» <i>stand</i>	estar en pié	<i>stood</i>	<i>stood</i>
» <i>strike</i>	pegar, arrojar	<i>struck</i>	<i>struck, stricken</i>
» <i>tell</i>	decir, referir	<i>told</i>	<i>told</i>

XI.

260. Éstos cambian en el pretérito la radical en *e*, terminando el participio en *n*.

<i>To blow</i>	soplar	<i>blew</i>	<i>blown</i>
» <i>crow</i>	cantar (el gallo)	<i>crew</i>	<i>crown</i>
» <i>draw</i>	tirar, dibujar	<i>drew</i>	<i>drawn</i>
» <i>fly</i>	volar, huir	<i>flew</i>	<i>flown</i>
» <i>grow</i>	crecer (llegar á ser)	<i>grew</i>	<i>grown</i>
» <i>know</i>	saber, conocer	<i>knew</i>	<i>known</i>
» <i>slay</i>	matar	<i>slew</i>	<i>slain</i>
» <i>throw</i>	arrojar, tirar, lanzar	<i>threw</i>	<i>thrown</i>

XII.

261. También cambian la vocal radical en ambos tiempos en *o*.

<i>To bear</i>	llevar (<i>bèr</i>)	<i>bore</i>	<i>born</i>
» <i>shear</i>	esquilar (<i>shèr</i>)	<i>shore</i>	<i>shorn</i>
» <i>swear</i>	jurar, renegar	<i>swore</i>	<i>sworn</i>
» <i>tear</i> (<i>tèr</i>)	rasgar, despedazar	<i>tore, tare</i>	<i>torn</i>
» <i>wear</i>	traer, usar, llevar	<i>wore, ware</i>	<i>worn</i>

<i>ham</i>	jamon	<i>bear</i> (<i>bèr</i>)	oso
<i>mahogany</i>	caoba	<i>shawl</i> (<i>shòl</i>)	chal
<i>to impose on</i>	engañar	<i>usage</i> (<i>iuzèch</i>)	tratamiento
<i>sling</i>	onda	sujeto	<i>fellow</i>
<i>obscured</i>	oscurecido	apreciable	<i>worthy</i>
<i>like</i>	igual	al lado de	<i>just by</i>
<i>cricket-ball</i>	pelota	desde entonces	<i>from that time</i>
<i>lie</i>	mentira	alcanzar	<i>to reach</i>
<i>to get into</i>	meterse	orilla	<i>shore</i>
<i>duck</i>	pato	guitarra	<i>guitar</i>
<i>sliding</i> (<i>slaiding</i>)	resbalar	discreto	<i>discreet</i>
<i>pheasant</i>	faisan	leña	<i>wood</i>
<i>decanter</i>	garrafa	creyendo	<i>thinking</i>
<i>side</i>	lado	inútil	<i>useless</i>

Tema 38.

You breakfasted well to-day, did you not? Not so ill. What did you eat? We ate a couple of chickens and ham, and drank two cups of coffee. Which of you knew his grammar lesson best? I did; but Mr. Lino has said it better than I. Would you have your ale drunk by those drunkards? I would have my clothes sold by that merchant, and my uncle would have his table made of mahogany. Be quiet, my child; your mother will chide you. Yes, his master chid him because he was lazy, and if he does that, he will be also chidden by his uncle. The wise man, who is not to be imposed on, is scarcely ever to be met with. What you have told me I shall repeat word for word. Who was Goliath? The giant whom David slew with a sling and a stone. At a total eclipse the sun is obscured from our sight: in like manner would the moon, when at full, be hid by placing your cricket-ball in a line between your eye and her. Who were Ananias and Sapphira? A man and his wife who were struck

dead for telling a lie. We saw which way the wind blew: the wind has blown from the East these three days. Can you swim? I swim a little: we had swum about two miles, when we got into the boat; young Tom swam like a duck. Do you like skating? I prefer sliding: we have slidden very often this winter. While some loaded their guns, the others shot; but you have shot at a pheasant and have killed a goose.

(Para corregir.)

Why is this child unwell? Because he ated a great deal of fruit. We have drinked some of your excellent wine, but the boys were so thirsty that they drinked a large decanter of water, therefore they have scarcely eated anything. Have you meeted the travellers? I meeted your pupil in the street. Who was Elisha? The prophet who was mocked by the children and a wild bear teared them to pieces. You will tell me when the shepherd has sheared his sheep. You ought to have your horse shoed: is there any one here that can shoe him? Money ill geted is always ill spended. The brothers shaked hands and sited down by the fire-side. Let us see what she has buyed. She buyed several shawls, that she never weared. Why is that lady in tears? She seems stinged with grief! she sobbed and wringed her hands. She has losed her only son. This usage maked him the more angry as he feeled that he it had deserved. What did John now see? He saw that her ear-rings were teared from her ears, and that she teared the paper into a hundred fragments.

Aunque mis zapatos son nuevos, los he roto; tan malos están el tiempo y los caminos. Qué mal sujeto es V.; (lo) pierde V. todo; ha perdido V. ya su pañuelo cuatro veces. Qué zapatero ha hecho tus botas? El de mi padre las ha hecho. Es persona muy apreciable; le conoce V.? Le conocí cuando vivia al lado de mi casa hace cinco años; pero no le he vuelto á ver desde entónçes. Hemos vendido mucho, pero tenemos otro tanto que vender. El navío se hundió con toda la tripulacion; pero nosotros hemos nadado hasta que alcanzamos la orilla. Has puesto cuerdas en la guitarra? Sí; y la he templado. Por fin, ya que me ha arrebatado el secreto, espero al ménos

que será discreto. Han herrado los caballos? No, señor; ahora voy á hacer (*to have*) los herrar (*part.*). Él me pegó en (*on*) la cabeza y yo le arrojé al suelo. Has soplado el fuego? Sí, señor; pero la leña está húmeda y no puedo encenderla. Dónde habeis arrojado los papeles que habia sobre (*upon*) la mesa? Los arrojamos á la calle creyendo que eran inútiles.

LECCION XXXIX.

CONTINUACION DE LOS VERBOS IRREGULARES.

XIII.

262. Los de este grupo cambian la vocal radical y acaban en *ght* en imperfecto y participio.

<i>To beseech</i>	suplicar	<i>besought</i>	<i>besought</i> (<i>bisòt</i>)
» <i>bring</i>	traer	<i>brought</i>	<i>brought</i>
» <i>buy</i>	comprar (<i>bai</i>)	<i>bought</i>	<i>bought</i>
» <i>catch</i>	prender, alcanzar	<i>caught</i>	<i>caught</i>
» <i>fight</i>	pelear, combatir	<i>fought</i>	<i>fought</i>
» <i>seek</i>	buscar	<i>sought</i>	<i>sought</i>
» <i>teach</i>	enseñar (<i>tich</i>)	<i>taught</i>	<i>taught</i>
» <i>think</i>	pensar	<i>thought</i>	<i>thought</i>
» <i>work</i>	trabajar	<i>wrought</i> R.	<i>wrought</i> R.

XIV.

263. Éstos mudan la vocal en el imperfecto y participio pasado, que son iguales.

<i>To bind</i>	atar, encuadernar	<i>bound</i> (<i>baund</i>)	<i>bound</i>
» <i>find</i>	encontrar, hallar	<i>found</i>	<i>found</i>
» <i>grind</i>	moler	<i>ground</i>	<i>ground</i>
» <i>abide</i>	habitar, residir	<i>abode</i>	<i>abode, aboden</i>
» <i>get</i>	obtener, coger	<i>got, gat</i>	<i>got, gotten</i>
» <i>shine</i>	lucir, brillar	<i>shone</i>	<i>shone</i>
» <i>win</i>	ganar	<i>won</i>	<i>won</i>
» <i>bleed</i>	sangrar	<i>bled</i>	<i>bled</i>
» <i>breed</i>	criar, educar	<i>bred</i>	<i>bred</i>
» <i>lead</i>	conducir, guiar	<i>led</i>	<i>led</i>
» <i>shoot</i>	tirar, disparar	<i>shot</i>	<i>shot</i>

XV.

264. En este grupo comprendemos los verbos cuyas irregularidades no pueden sujetarse á regla fija :

<i>To come</i>	venir	<i>came</i>	<i>come</i>
» <i>do</i>	hacer	<i>did</i>	<i>done</i>
» <i>go</i>	ir	<i>went</i>	<i>gone</i>
» <i>see</i>	ver	<i>saw</i>	<i>seen</i>
» <i>run</i>	correr (<i>ræn</i>)	<i>ran</i>	<i>run</i>
» <i>awake</i>	despertarse	<i>awoke</i>	<i>awaked</i>
» <i>clothe</i>	vestir	<i>clad</i>	<i>clad</i>
» <i>hold</i>	asir, parar	<i>held</i>	<i>held, holden</i>

265. Los verbos compuestos se conjugan como sus respectivos simples: *to become* llegar á ser, imperf. *became*, p. *become*; *to beget* engendrar, *begot*, *begotten*; *to foresee* prever, *foresaw*, *foreseen*.

<i>bonnet</i>	gorro	<i>embroidered</i>	bordado
<i>afternoon</i>	tarde	<i>snuff-box</i>	bofeton
<i>tale</i>	novela	un tal	<i>one</i>
<i>particulars</i>	pormenores	bajo	<i>under</i>
<i>lawgiver</i>	legislador	infantería	<i>infantry</i>
<i>wilderness</i>	desierto	paquete	<i>bundle</i>
<i>mad</i>	loco	ordinario	<i>carrier</i>
<i>among</i>	entre	resfriado	<i>cold</i>
<i>bracelet</i>	brazaletes	per todo	<i>throughout</i>
<i>jeweller</i>	joyero	hasta ahora que	<i>until now when</i>

Tema 39.

My mother has bought a little bonnet for my sister. Have you seen the hat which my mother has bought for our little sister? It is a very good hat. Have you found a stick? My uncle has lost his. Did you go and see Mr. Larraz this morning? I went to see him yesterday, and he will come and see me to-day, but in the afternoon. My mother, whose name was Mary, was a most virtuous lady, who always did much good to the poor. I knew your father and mother very well. What have you done this afternoon? I have read a tale the particulars of which I have forgotten. Will you have your books bound like mine? Yes; but who will bind them? I don't know. Few poets have shone like Byron. Who teaches you the English language? My father taught me his own trade. I remember the day when I saw you for

the first time. Who was Moses? The deliverer (*libertador*) and law-giver of the people of Israel, and he led them through the wilderness. Have you awaked him? Yes; when he awoke the next morning, he rang the bell for his servant. John thought of marriage as will be seen in the following sentence... Don't say it.

(Para corregir.)

Is that book cheap? It is not very dear; but it is a good deal dearer than you thought. Have you been sended here by your uncle, or have you come on your own account? We came for your sake in the first place, and then on account of your friend's affairs. Who was Nebuchadnezzar? The proud king of Babylon who runed mad, and was drived among the beasts. My dear Julia, how long it is since I seed you! Very long, indeed, cousin. Oh, I must to show you a bracelet which the jeweller has just bringed: these pearls are the finest I ever seed. I forgeted to show you my embroidered cambric (*de batista*) handkerchiefs. Who ever thought of giving a snuff-box to a little girl? My female cousin is ill; but she will not consent to be bleded.

Cuántas libras de manzanas ha comprado la criada en el mercado? Habrá comprado tres libras. Qué ha hecho V. esta mañana? He trabajado mucho. No veo lo que V. ha hecho. Porque no quiere usted verlo. Un tal D. Andres Serrano vino ayer á ver á V. para comprar sus caballos y me dijo que volveria mañana á las cinco y media si está V. en casa: dije que estaria en casa para comer. Qué cuchillos has encontrado? He encontrado los de mi hermana. Cuánto tiempo hace que no va V. á casa de mi prima? Fui ayer; se ha muerto una hermana suya. La infantería española se batió muy bien bajo Carlos V. Has atado esos paquetes para mandarlos al ordinario? Los estoy atando ahora. Quién ha encuadernado esta Gramática? El Sr. Lobo, que vive en la calle de Jacometrezo, núm. 72. Han hallado VV. á la señora que buscaban? La encontré (*to meet*) en la calle. He cogido un gran resfriado, y mi marido me ha traído estas píldoras. Es verdad que nosotros hemos ganado dinero, pero V. ha ganado diez veces más. Los soldados han prendido á un ladron que esparcia el terror por todo el país. Ha pensado V. en la comision que le dí ayer? No he pensado en (*of*) V. hasta ahora, que le veo.

LECCION XL.

LISTA ALFABÉTICA DE LOS VERBOS IRREGULARES.

INFINITIVO.	IMPERFECTO.	PART. PASADO.
<i>To abide</i> , habitar	<i>abode</i>	<i>abode.</i>
<i>to arise</i> , levantarse	<i>arose</i>	<i>arisen.</i>
<i>to awake</i> , despertarse	<i>awoke, R.</i>	<i>awaked.</i>
<i>to bake</i> , cocer	<i>baked</i>	<i>baken, R.</i>
<i>to be (I am)</i> , ser ó estar	<i>was</i>	<i>been.</i>
<i>to bear</i> , sostener, sufrir	<i>bore, bare</i>	<i>borne.</i>
<i>to bear</i> , producir, dar á luz	<i>bore, bare</i>	<i>born.</i>
<i>to beat</i> , batir, apalear	<i>beat, bate</i>	<i>beaten, beat.</i>
<i>to become</i> , llegar á ser	<i>became</i>	<i>become.</i>
<i>to befall</i> , acaecer	<i>befell, befel</i>	<i>befallen.</i>
<i>to beget</i> , engendrar	<i>begot, begat</i>	<i>begotten.</i>
<i>to begin</i> , empezar	<i>began, begun</i>	<i>begun.</i>
<i>to begird</i> , ceñir	<i>begirt, R.</i>	<i>begirt, R.</i>
<i>to behold</i> , mirar, ver, observar	<i>beheld</i>	<i>beholden, beheld.</i>
<i>to bend</i> , doblar, encorvar	<i>bent, R.</i>	<i>bent, R.</i>
<i>to bereave</i> , despojar	<i>bereft, R.</i>	<i>bereft, R.</i>
<i>to beseech</i> , suplicar	<i>besought, R.</i>	<i>besought, R.</i>
<i>to beset</i> , rodear, sitiarse	<i>beset</i>	<i>beset.</i>
<i>to bespeak</i> , encomendar	<i>bespoke</i>	<i>bespoken.</i>
<i>to bespit</i> , escupir	<i>R. bespit, bespat</i>	<i>R. bespit, bespit- tent.</i>
<i>to bestead</i> , aprovechar, servir	<i>bestead, bested</i>	<i>bestead, bested.</i>
<i>to bestink</i> , apestar	<i>bestunk</i>	<i>bestunk.</i>
<i>to bestrew</i> , rociar	<i>bestrewed</i>	<i>bestrewed.</i>
<i>to bestrow</i> , derramar	<i>bestrowed</i>	<i>bestrown.</i>
<i>to bestride</i> , cabalgar, montar á horcajadas.	<i>bestrode</i>	<i>bestriden, bestrid.</i>
<i>to bewray</i> , hacer traicion, ensuciar	<i>R.</i>	<i>R. y bewrain.</i>
<i>to betake one's self</i> , aplicarse	<i>betook</i>	<i>betaken.</i>
<i>to bethink</i> , reflexionar	<i>bethought</i>	<i>bethought.</i>
<i>it betides</i> , sucede	<i>betid</i>	<i>betid, betight.</i>
<i>to bewweep</i> , lamentarse	<i>bewept</i>	<i>bewept.</i>
<i>to bid</i> , mandar	<i>bade</i>	<i>bidden.</i>
<i>to bind</i> , atar, encuadernar	<i>bound</i>	<i>bound.</i>
<i>to bite</i> , morder	<i>bit, bate</i>	<i>bitten.</i>
<i>to bleed</i> , sangrar	<i>bled</i>	<i>bled.</i>
<i>to blend</i> , mezclar (manchar)	<i>R.</i>	<i>blended, blent.</i>
<i>to blood-let</i> , sangrar (á uno)	<i>blood-let</i>	<i>blood-let.</i>
<i>to blow</i> , soplar	<i>blew</i>	<i>blown.</i>
<i>to break</i> , romper, quebrar	<i>broke, brake, A.</i>	<i>broken.</i>
<i>to breed</i> , criar, engendrar	<i>bred</i>	<i>bred.</i>
<i>to bring</i> , traer	<i>brought</i>	<i>brought.</i>
<i>to brow-beat</i> , mirar con ceño.	<i>brow-beat</i>	<i>brow-beaten.</i>

INFINITIVO.

IMPERFECTO.

PART. PASADO.

to *build*, edificar
to *burn*, quemar
to *burst*, reventar
to *buy*, comprar
to *can*, poder
to *cast*, fundir, arrojar
to *catch*, agarrar, coger

to *chide*, regañar, regañar
to *choose* ó *chuse*, elegir
to *clap*, aplaudir
to *cleave*, rajar, hender
to *climb*, trepar
to *cling*, agarrarse
to *clothe*, vestir
to *come*, venir
to *cost*, costar
to *cramp*, sujetar, dar calambres
to *creep*, gatear, arrastrarse
to *crop*, segar, cortar
to *crow*, cantar (gallo)
to *curse*, maldecir
to *cut*, cortar
to *dare*, osar, atreverse
to *deal*, traficar, barajar
to *deem*, juzgar, determinar
to *die*, morir

to *dig*, cavar
to *ding*, chocar, arrojar
to *dip*, remojar, sumergir
to *distend*, extender, inflar
to *do*, hacer
to *draw*, tirar, dibujar
to *dread*, temer
to *dream*, soñar
to *drench*, empapar, humedecer
to *drink*, beber
to *drive*, guiar, arrear
to *drop*, gotear, destilar
to *dwell*, habitar, residir
to *eat*, comer (en general)
to *engird*, ceñir, cercar
to *engrave*, grabar, esculpir
to *extend*, extender
to *fall*, caer
to *feed*, alimentar, pacer
to *feel*, palpar, sentir
to *fight*, pelear, combatir

built, R.
burnt
burst
bought
could
cast
caught, R.
keight, A.
chid, *chode*, A.
chose
clapped
cleft, *clove*
R., *clomb*
clung, *clang*
R., *clad*
came
cost
R.
crept
cropped
crew, R.
curst
cut
durst, R.
dealt, R.
R.
died

dug, R.
R., *dung*
dipped
distended
did
drew
R., *drad*
dreamt
R.
drank
drove
dropped
dwelt, R.
ate, *eat*
R., *engirt*
R.
R.
fell
fed
felt
fought

built.
burnt.
burst.
bought.
—
cast.
caught, R.,
kesh, A.
chid, *chidden*.
chosen.
clapt.
cloven, *cleft*.
R., *clomb*.
clung, *clang*.
R., *clad*.
come.
cost.
crampt.
crept.
R., *cropt*.
*crow*n, R.
curst.
cut.
dared.
dealt, R.
R., *dempt* A.
died, *dead* (con
to be).
dug, R.
R., *dung*.
dipt.
R., *distent*.
done.
drawn.
dreaded.
dreamt.
R., *drent*.
drunk, *drunken*.
driven.
dropt, R.
dwelt, R.
eaten.
R., *engirt*.
R., *engraven*.
R., *extent*.
fallen (*faln*).
fed.
felt.
fought.

INFINITIVO.	IMPERFECTO.	PART. PASADO.
<i>to find</i> , hallar	<i>found</i>	<i>found.</i>
<i>to flee</i> , huir	<i>fled</i>	<i>fled.</i>
<i>to fleet</i> , volar	<i>R.</i>	<i>R., flet.</i>
<i>to fling</i> , arrojar, lanzar	<i>flung</i>	<i>flung, flong, A.</i>
<i>to fly</i> , volar, huir	<i>flew</i>	<i>flown.</i>
<i>to fold</i> , doblar	<i>R.</i>	<i>R., folden.</i>
<i>to forbear</i> , abstenerse	<i>forbare</i>	<i>forborne.</i>
<i>to forbid</i> , prohibir	<i>forbade</i>	<i>forbidden, forbid.</i>
<i>to forecast</i> , prever	<i>forecast</i>	<i>forecast.</i>
<i>to foredo</i> , destruir, arruinar	<i>foredid</i>	<i>foredone.</i>
<i>to forelift</i> , levantar por delante	<i>R., forelift</i>	<i>R., forelift.,</i>
<i>to foresay</i> , predecir	<i>foresaid</i>	<i>foresaid.</i>
<i>to foresee</i> , prever	<i>foresaw</i>	<i>foreseen.</i>
<i>to foretell</i> , pronosticar	<i>foretold</i>	<i>foretold.</i>
<i>to forget</i> , olvidar	<i>forgot</i>	<i>forgotten, forgot.</i>
<i>to forgive</i> , perdonar	<i>forgave</i>	<i>forgiven.</i>
<i>to forsake</i> , abandonar	<i>forsook</i>	<i>forsaken.</i>
<i>to freeze</i> , helar	<i>froze</i>	<i>frozen.</i>
<i>to freight</i> , fletar	<i>fraught, R.</i>	<i>fraught, R.</i>
<i>to geld</i> , castrar	<i>gelt, R.</i>	<i>gelt, R.</i>
<i>to get</i> , adquirir, ganar	<i>got, gat, A.</i>	<i>got, gotten, A.</i>
<i>to gild</i> , dorar	<i>gilt, R.</i>	<i>gilt, R.</i>
<i>to gird</i> , ceñir	<i>girt, R.</i>	<i>girt, R.</i>
<i>to give</i> , dar	<i>gave</i>	<i>given.</i>
<i>to glide</i> , deslizarse	<i>R., glode</i>	<i>R.</i>
<i>to go</i> , ir, andar	<i>went</i>	<i>gone.</i>
<i>to grave</i> , engrave, grabar	<i>graved</i>	<i>graven, R.</i>
<i>to grind</i> , moler	<i>ground</i>	<i>ground.</i>
<i>to grow</i> , crecer	<i>grew</i>	<i>grown.</i>
<i>to hang</i> , colgar	<i>hung</i>	<i>hung.</i>
<i>to hang</i> , ahorcar	<i>R.</i>	<i>R.</i>
<i>to have</i> , haber ó tener	<i>had</i>	<i>had.</i>
<i>to hear</i> , oír	<i>heard</i>	<i>heard.</i>
<i>to heat</i> , calentar, arder	<i>R., het</i>	<i>R., het.</i>
<i>to heave</i> , alzar	<i>hove, heaved</i>	<i>heaved, hoven.</i>
<i>to help</i> , asistir, cuidar	<i>helped, holpe, A.</i>	<i>helped, holpen, A.</i>
<i>to hew</i> , cortar, hachear	<i>hewed</i>	<i>hewn, R.</i>
<i>to hide</i> , esconder, ocultar	<i>hid</i>	<i>hidden, hid.</i>
<i>to hiss</i> , silbar	<i>hissed, hist</i>	<i>hissed, hist.</i>
<i>to hit</i> , dar en blanco	<i>hit</i>	<i>hit.</i>
<i>to hold</i> , asir, parar	<i>held</i>	<i>held, holden.</i>
<i>to hurt</i> , dañar, herir	<i>hurt</i>	<i>hurt.</i>
<i>to inlay</i> , taracear, incrustar	<i>inlaid</i>	<i>inlaid.</i>
<i>to jump</i> , saltar, brincar	<i>jumped, jumpt</i>	<i>jumped, jumpt.</i>
<i>to keep</i> , guardar	<i>kept</i>	<i>kept.</i>
<i>to kneel</i> , arrodillar	<i>knelt</i>	<i>knelt.</i>
<i>to knit</i> , hacer media	<i>knit</i>	<i>knit.</i>
<i>to knock</i> , llamar á la puerta	<i>knocked, knockt</i>	<i>knocked.</i>
<i>to know</i> , saber, conocer	<i>knew</i>	<i>known.</i>

INFINITIVO.

IMPERFECTO.

PART. PASADO.

to lade, cargar un buque
to lap, enroscar, involucrar
to laugh, reír, (*laf*)
to lay, poner, colocar
to lead, conducir, guiar
to lean, (*lin*), recostarse
to leap, saltar
to learn, aprender
to leave, dejar
to lend, prestar
to let, permitir, arrendar
to lie, acostarse, yacer
to lift, levantar
to light, alumbrar, encender
to load, cargar

to lose, perder
to make, hacer
to may, poder
to mean, significar
to meet, encontrar
to melt, derretir
—*methinks*, me parece, creo
to misbecome, desconvenir
to misdeal, dar mal las cartas
to misdo, obrar mal
to misgive, causar recelo
to mislead, extraviar
to mistake, equivocarse
to misunderstand, equivococar
to mow, guadañar, segar (heno)
to must, deber
to need, necesitar
to ought, deber
to overbear, sojuzgar
to overcome, vencer
to overrun, invadir, recorrer
to overdo, exceder
to overflow, inundar
to overhear, entreoir
to oversee, inspeccionar
to overset, volcar, trastornar
to overslip, omitir
to overtake, alcanzar
to overthrow, trastornar
to outshine, resplandecer
to outstand, resistir
to owe, deber (deudas ó favores)
to partake, participar, tener parte

laded
lapt
R., y *lough*, *A.*
laid
led
R., *leant*, (*lent*)
leaped
learned
left
lent
let
lay
R., *lift*
lit, *lighted*
loaded

lost (*lore*, *lorn*, *A.*)
made
might
meant
met
melted
methought
misbecame
misdealt, *R.*
misdid
misgave
misled
mistook
misunderstood
moved
must, *mote*, *A.*
need, *R.*
ought
overbore
overcame
overran
overdid
overflowed
overheard
oversaw
overset
overslipped
overtook
overthrew
outshone
outstood
owed, *ought*
partook

laden.
lapt.
R., y *lough*, *A.*
laid.
led.
R., *leant*.
leapt.
learned, *R.*
left.
lent.
let.
lain.
R., *lift*.
lit, *lighted*.
laden, *R.* y *loa-*
den.
lost (*lorn*, *A.*).
made.
A., *mote*.
meant.
met.
melted, *molten*.
—
misbecome.
misdealt, *R.*
misdone,
misgiven.
misled.
mistaken.
misunderstood.
mown, *R.*
—
R.
—
overborne.
overcome.
overrun.
overdone.
overflowed.
overheard.
overseen.
overset.
overslipt.
overtaken.
overtroun.
outshone.
outstood.
own, *owed*.
partaken.

INFINITIVO.	IMPERFECTO.	PART. PASADO.
<i>to pass</i> , pasar	<i>past</i> , R.	<i>past</i> , R.
<i>to pay</i> , pagar	<i>paid</i>	<i>paid</i> .
<i>to pen</i> , enjaular	<i>pent</i> , R.	<i>pent</i> , R.
<i>to pitch</i> , fijar, plantar	R., <i>pight</i>	R., <i>pight</i> .
<i>to plead</i> , abogar, defender	R., <i>vulg. plead</i>	R., <i>plead</i> .
<i>to put</i> , poner	<i>put</i>	<i>put</i> .
<i>to quake</i> , temblar	R., <i>quook</i>	R.
<i>to quit</i> , dejar, abandonar	R., <i>quit</i>	R., <i>quit</i> .
— citar	<i>quoth</i> , <i>quod</i>	—
<i>to raff</i> , amontonar, recoger	R., <i>raft</i>	R.
<i>to reach</i> , alcanzar	R., <i>raught</i>	R., <i>raught</i> .
<i>to read</i> , leer	<i>read</i>	<i>read</i> .
<i>to reap</i> , segar	R., <i>reapt</i>	R., <i>reapt</i> .
<i>to rend</i> , rasgar	<i>rent</i>	<i>rent</i> .
<i>to repay</i> , restituir	<i>repaid</i>	<i>repaid</i> .
<i>to ride</i> , cabalgar, montar á caballo	<i>rode</i>	<i>ridden</i> .
<i>to rid</i> , librar, zafarse	<i>rid</i>	<i>rid</i> .
<i>to ring</i> , repicar, tocar campanas	<i>rang</i> , <i>rung</i>	<i>rang</i> , <i>rung</i> .
<i>to rise</i> , levantarse	<i>rose</i>	<i>risen</i> .
<i>to rive</i> , rajar, hender	<i>rived</i>	<i>riven</i> .
<i>to rot</i> , podrirse	<i>rotted</i>	<i>rotten</i> .
<i>to run</i> , correr	<i>ran</i>	<i>run</i> .
<i>to saw</i> , serrar	<i>sawed</i>	<i>sawn</i> , R.
<i>to say</i> , decir	<i>said</i>	<i>said</i> .
<i>to see</i> , ver	<i>saw</i>	<i>seen</i> .
<i>to seek</i> , buscar	<i>sought</i>	<i>sought</i> .
<i>to seeth</i> , cocer, hervir	<i>seethed</i> , <i>sod</i>	<i>sodden</i> .
<i>to sell</i> , vender	<i>sold</i>	<i>sold</i> .
<i>to send</i> , enviar	<i>sent</i>	<i>sent</i> .
<i>to set</i> , poner, sembrar	<i>set</i>	<i>set</i> .
<i>to sew</i> , coser	<i>sewed</i>	R. <i>sewn</i> , <i>sown</i> .
<i>to shake</i> , estremecerse, sacudir	<i>shook</i>	<i>shaken</i> .
<i>to shall</i> , deber	<i>should</i> , A., <i>sholde</i>	—
<i>to shave</i> , afeitarse	<i>shaved</i>	R., <i>shaven</i> .
<i>to shear</i> , esquila	<i>shore</i>	<i>shorne</i> .
<i>to shed</i> , verter, derramar	<i>shed</i>	<i>shed</i> .
<i>to shew</i> ó <i>show</i> , mostrar	<i>shewed</i> , <i>showed</i>	<i>shewn</i> , <i>shown</i> .
<i>to shine</i> , lucir, brillar	<i>shone</i> , R.	<i>shone</i> , R.
<i>to shoe</i> , herrar, calzar	<i>shod</i>	<i>shod</i> .
<i>to shoot</i> , tirar, brotar, disparar	<i>shot</i>	<i>shot</i> .
<i>to shred</i> , picar, desmenuzar	<i>shred</i>	<i>shred</i> .
<i>to shriek</i> , chillar	R., <i>shright</i>	R.
<i>to shrink</i> , encogerse	<i>shrank</i>	<i>shrunk</i> .
<i>to thrive</i> , confesar (se)	<i>shrove</i>	<i>shriven</i> .
<i>to shut</i> , cerrar	<i>shut</i>	<i>shut</i> .
<i>to sing</i> , cantar	<i>sang</i> , <i>sung</i>	<i>sung</i> .
<i>to sink</i> , hundirse	<i>sank</i>	<i>sunk</i> .
<i>to sit</i> , sentarse	<i>sat</i> , <i>sate</i>	<i>sat</i> , <i>sitten</i> .
<i>to slay</i> , matar	<i>slew</i>	<i>slain</i> .

INFINITIVO.

IMPERFECTO.

PART. PASADO.

<i>to sleep</i> , dormir	<i>slept</i>	<i>slept.</i>
<i>to slide</i> , resbalar, deslizarse	<i>slid</i>	<i>slidden.</i>
<i>to sling</i> , tirar con honda	<i>slung</i>	<i>slung.</i>
<i>to slink</i> , escabullirse, abortar (entre las bestias)	<i>slunk</i>	<i>slunk.</i>
<i>to slip</i> , resbalar (se)	<i>slipped, slipt</i>	<i>slipt.</i>
<i>to slit</i> , rajar, hender	<i>slit, R.</i>	<i>slit, R.</i>
<i>to smart</i> , escocer	<i>R., smart</i>	<i>R., smart.</i>
<i>to smell</i> , oler	<i>smelt</i>	<i>smelt.</i>
<i>to smite</i> , herir, golpear	<i>smote</i>	<i>smitten.</i>
<i>to snow</i> , nevar	<i>snowed</i>	<i>snown.</i>
<i>to sow</i> , sembrar (grano)	<i>sowed</i>	<i>sown, R.</i>
<i>to speak</i> , hablar	<i>spoke, spake</i>	<i>spoken.</i>
<i>to speed</i> , acelerar	<i>sped</i>	<i>sped.</i>
<i>to spell</i> , deletrear	<i>spelt</i>	<i>spelt.</i>
<i>to spend</i> , gastar	<i>spent</i>	<i>spent.</i>
<i>to spet</i> , derramar	<i>R., spet</i>	<i>R., spet.</i>
<i>to spill</i> , derramar, verter (líquidos)	<i>spilt, R.</i>	<i>spilt, R.</i>
<i>to spin</i> , hilar	<i>spun</i>	<i>spun.</i>
<i>to spit</i> , escupir	<i>spat, spit</i>	<i>spitten, spat.</i>
<i>to split</i> , hender, dividir	<i>split</i>	<i>split.</i>
<i>to spread</i> , esparcir	<i>spread</i>	<i>spread.</i>
<i>to spring</i> , brotar, saltar	<i>sprang</i>	<i>sprung.</i>
<i>to stand</i> , estar en pié	<i>stood</i>	<i>stood.</i>
<i>to stave</i> , desfondar, hundir	<i>R., stove</i>	<i>R., stove.</i>
<i>to stay</i> , permanecer	<i>staid</i>	<i>staid.</i>
<i>to steal</i> , hurtar, pillar	<i>stole</i>	<i>stolen.</i>
<i>to step</i> , andar, dar un paso	<i>stept, R.</i>	<i>stept, R.</i>
<i>to stick</i> , pegar, fijar	<i>stuck</i>	<i>stuck.</i>
<i>to sting</i> , aguijonear, punzar	<i>stung</i>	<i>stung.</i>
<i>to stink</i> , heder	<i>stunk</i>	<i>stunk.</i>
<i>to stretch</i> , extender, ensanchar	<i>R., straight</i>	<i>R., straight.</i>
<i>to strew</i> ó <i>strow</i> , esparcir	<i>strewed, strowed</i>	<i>strewn, strown, R.</i>
<i>to stride</i> , atrancar, dar trancos	<i>strode, strid</i>	<i>stridden.</i>
<i>to strike</i> , herir, golpear	<i>struck</i>	<i>struck, stricken.</i>
<i>to string</i> , encordar	<i>strang, strung</i>	<i>strung.</i>
<i>to strip</i> , despojar, desnudar	<i>stripped</i>	<i>stript.</i>
<i>to strive</i> , contender, esforzarse	<i>strove</i>	<i>striven.</i>
<i>to strow</i> , sembrar, diseminar	<i>R.</i>	<i>strown.</i>
<i>to swear</i> , jurar (renegar)	<i>swore</i>	<i>sworn.</i>
<i>to sweat</i> , sudar	<i>swet, R.</i>	<i>swet, R.</i>
<i>to sweep</i> , barrer	<i>swept</i>	<i>swept.</i>
<i>to swell</i> , hinchar	<i>swelled</i>	<i>swollen, R., y swoln.</i>
<i>to swim</i> , nadar	<i>swam</i>	<i>swum.</i>
<i>to swing</i> , balancear, columpiarse	<i>swang</i>	<i>swung.</i>
<i>to take</i> , tomar	<i>took</i>	<i>taken.</i>

INFINITIVO.	IMPERFECTO.	PART. PASADO.
<i>to teach</i> , enseñar	<i>taught</i>	<i>taught.</i>
<i>to tear</i> , despedazar	<i>tore, tare, A.</i>	<i>torn.</i>
<i>to tell</i> , decir, referir	<i>told</i>	<i>told.</i>
<i>to think</i> , pensar	<i>thought</i>	<i>thought.</i>
<i>to thrive</i> , medrar, prosperar	<i>throve, R.</i>	<i>thriven.</i>
<i>to throw</i> , arrojar, tirar, lanzar	<i>threw</i>	<i>thrown.</i>
<i>to thrust</i> , empujar	<i>thrust</i>	<i>thrust.</i>
<i>to thunderstrike</i> , anonadar	<i>thunderstruck</i>	<i>thunderstruck.</i>
<i>to tread</i> , pisar, hollar	<i>trod</i>	<i>trodden.</i>
<i>to unbend</i> , destorcer, aflojar	<i>unbent</i>	<i>unbent.</i>
<i>to unbind</i> , desatar	<i>unbound</i>	<i>unbound.</i>
<i>to undergo</i> , sufrir, padecer	<i>underwent</i>	<i>undergone.</i>
<i>to understand</i> , entender, comprender	<i>understood</i>	<i>understood.</i>
<i>to undertake</i> , emprender	<i>undertook</i>	<i>undertaken.</i>
<i>to undo</i> , deshacer, arruinar	<i>undid</i>	<i>undone.</i>
<i>to ungird</i> , descincar	<i>ungirt, R.</i>	<i>ungirt, R.</i>
<i>to upbear</i> , levantar	<i>upbore</i>	<i>upborn.</i>
<i>to vex</i> , enojar, vejar, fastidiar	<i>vext, R.</i>	<i>vext, R.</i>
<i>to wake</i> , velar, despertar	<i>R., woke</i>	<i>R.</i>
<i>to wash</i> , lavar	<i>R.</i>	<i>R., washen.</i>
<i>to wave</i> , ondear	<i>R., weft</i>	<i>R., weft.</i>
<i>to wax</i> , encerrar, aumentarse	<i>waxed</i>	<i>waxen, R.</i>
<i>to wear</i> , traer, usar, llevar	<i>wore, ware, A.</i>	<i>worn.</i>
<i>to weave</i> , tejer	<i>wove</i>	<i>woven.</i>
<i>to weep</i> , llorar	<i>wept</i>	<i>wept.</i>
<i>to wet</i> , mojar, humedecer	<i>wet</i>	<i>wet, R.</i>
<i>to whip</i> , azotar	<i>R., whipt</i>	<i>R., whipt.</i>
<i>to will</i> , querer	<i>would, willed</i>	<i>willed (en la Eserit.)</i>
<i>to win</i> , ganar	<i>won</i>	<i>won.</i>
<i>to wind</i> , girar, dar cuerda	<i>wound</i>	<i>wound.</i>
<i>to withdraw</i> , retirarse	<i>withdrew</i>	<i>withdrawn.</i>
<i>to withhold</i> , detener, impedir	<i>withheld</i>	<i>withheld.</i>
<i>to withstand</i> , resistir	<i>withstood</i>	<i>withstood.</i>
<i>to wont</i> , acostumbrar	<i>wont</i>	<i>wont.</i>
<i>to work</i> , trabajar	<i>R., wrought</i>	<i>R., wrought.</i>
<i>to wrap</i> , envolver, empaquetar	<i>wrapped, wrapt</i>	<i>wrapt.</i>
<i>to wreathe</i> , arrollar, trenzar	<i>R.</i>	<i>R., wreathen.</i>
<i>to wring</i> , torcer (la ropa)	<i>wrung, R.</i>	<i>wrung, R.</i>
<i>to write</i> , escribir	<i>wrote</i>	<i>written.</i>
<i>to writhe</i> , torcer con violencia	<i>writhed</i>	<i>writhen.</i>

266. Los verbos compuestos se conjugan con sus respectivos simples, por lo que sólo hemos incluido algunos en la precedente lista: *to behold* mirar, como *hold*; *to forgive* perdonar, como *give*, etc.

-*Nota.* Los que admiten la forma regular van marcados con *R.*, y las formas anticuadas con *A.* Debe advertirse que éstas ocurren con frecuencia en los clásicos.

<i>wagoner</i>	carretero	<i>stint</i>	cercenar, acortar
<i>toll-house</i>	portazgo	<i>fortuna</i>	<i>fortune</i>
<i>load (lòd)</i>	carga	desde que	<i>since</i>
<i>out of</i>	fuera de	hallarse bien	<i>to be well</i>
<i>carter</i>	carretero	pecado	<i>sin</i>
<i>quite close</i>	muy cerca	despues	<i>after</i>
<i>whispered</i>	cuchicheó	como	<i>like</i>
<i>aloud (aláud)</i>	alto	resto	<i>rest</i>
<i>to suspect</i>	sospechar	direccion	<i>direction</i>

Tema 40.

THE CAUTIOUS WAGONER.

A wagoner one day came to a toll-house with a heavy load of goods. The officer put his head out of the window and asked the carter what he had on his wagon. The wagoner went quite close to the window and whispered into his ear: «Oats.» The officer could not comprehend, why the carter did not say aloud what he had on his cart, and began to suspect that he wished to deceive him.—He therefore examined all the sacks very carefully but found nothing but oats in them. He now asked the carter, why he made such a mystery of his oats.—«Why, Sir», said the man, «don't you see, oats are very dear at present; therefore I must stint my horses a little. Last week they did not see a single grain, and if I had mentioned the oats in a loud voice, they would not have gone another step, before I had given them some. That's the reason why I whispered it into your ear, that they might not hear it.»

A qué hora se ha levantado V.? Me he levantado á las ocho y media de la mañana. Se ha despertado V. ó le han despertado (*waked*)? Me ha despertado mi madre. Yo nací (nacer, *to be born*) en el año 1829, el 25 de Marzo. No puedo sufrir á este hombre porque es muy malo. Mi hermano ha pegado al perro, porque le ha mordido. Ha empezado V. á hablar inglés? Tan pronto como sepa bien los verbos

irregulares (*irregular verbs*) hablaré todos los días. Han despojado á ese pobre (hombre) de toda su fortuna. El librero ha encuadernado mis libros; encuadernará también los suyos? Mi hermano ha estado enfermo, pero desde que le sangraron se halla bien. V. es un joven bien criado (un bien criado, etc.). Me ha traído V. mis plumas, mi papel y mis libros? La casa ardió todo el día. Hemos comprado una casa y un jardín. Han cogido (agarrado) al ladrón y le han puesto en (*into*) prisión. Quién ha edificado el Escorial? Felipe II ha edificado el Escorial y los Reyes de España lo han conservado. Maldijo los pecados de su vida pasada y prometió vivir y morir como buen cristiano, y dos horas después estaba muerto. Los soldados pelearon como leones contra los moros (*against the moors*) y los españoles ganaron la batalla; muchos cayeron heridos, unos (*about*) cinco mil fueron muertos y el resto huyó en todas direcciones.

LECCION XLI.

ADVERBIOS DE TIEMPO Y DE LUGAR.

267. Hay en inglés tantas clases de adverbios como son los medios de modificar los verbos, adjetivos y aún otros adverbios, según se verá en esta y en las siguientes lecciones. Aunque no pueden darse reglas fijas respecto á la colocación del adverbio, se observan por lo general las siguientes:

268. El adverbio precede ordinariamente al adjetivo y al adverbio que califica: tenemos un caballo muy bonito que corre muchísimo *we have a very fine horse which runs very much.*

269. Siguen de ordinario al verbo si está en tiempo simple, y hasta van detrás del régimen si éste consta de un solo vocablo, sobre todo si es pronombre: *I speak frankly to them, and they hear me attentively* les hablo con franqueza y ellos me oyen con atención.

Pero si es tiempo compuesto, el adverbio se coloca entre el auxiliar y el verbo principal: *I have well understood what you have just said* he comprendido bien lo que V. acaba de decir; *you are rightly served* eres bien servido.

270. Preceden al verbo, no siendo *to be*, y muchas veces al sujeto los adverbios de tiempo, con especialidad los siguientes: *already* ya, *also* tambien, *always* siempre, *ever* siempre, *hardly* apenas, escasamente, *never* nunca, *no longer* ya no, *not yet* todavía no, *often* á menudo, *only* solamente, *rather* más bien, *seldom* raras veces, *sometimes* algunas veces, *soon* pronto, *still* aún, *then* entónces, pues, *yet* sin embargo.

Va V. á menudo al cafe?

Raras veces voy allí.

Ella no sale nunca.

Tú siempre fuiste amable.

Do you often go to the coffeeshouse?

I seldom go there.

She never goes out.

Thou wast ever kind.

Pero en frase negativa pueden tambien posponerse.

271. Cuando se empieza la oracion por un adverbio, suele ponerse el sujeto detras del auxiliar: *so do they* así hacen ellos; *never will I obey that man* nunca obedeceré á ese hombre.

272. Los verbos neutros pueden preceder á su sujeto sin ser interrogativa la frase: *on the hearth blazes a fire* sobre el hogar centellea un fuego.

Si un verbo de esta clase va modificado por un adverbio, puede verificarse una doble inversion empezando la frase por el adverbio: *down fell his glasses* ó *down his glasses fell* ó *his glasses fell down* sus anteojos cayeron al suelo.

273. Los adverbios *here*, *there* y *where* se usan respectivamente en vez de *this*, *that* y *which*, cuando van precedidos de las preposiciones *of* de, *by* por, *upon* sobre, *at* en, *in* en, *with* con, que se colocan detras de dichos adverbios:

de esto	<i>hereof</i>	ó <i>of this</i>	por eso	<i>thereby</i>	ó <i>by that</i>
de eso	<i>thereof</i>	» <i>of that</i>	sobre eso	<i>thereupon</i>	» <i>upon that</i>
de lo cual	<i>whereof</i>	» <i>of which</i>	sobre lo	} <i>whereupon</i>	» <i>upon which</i>
por esto	<i>hereby</i>	» <i>by which</i>	que		
acérca de eso	<i>thereabout</i>		por eso	<i>therefore, etc.</i>	

274. Los adverbios cuya significacion lo admite forman los grados de comparacion como los adjetivos: *near-er* más cerca, *very near* muy cerca, de *often* (ófn), *oftener* más á menudo; sup., *oftenest*, *as often as*.

Adverbios de tiempo.

<i>at present</i>	al presente
<i>a week ago</i>	una semana há
<i>a fortnight ago</i>	quince dias há
<i>a great while ago</i>	hace mucho
<i>as soon as possible</i>	lo ántes posible
<i>at the latest</i>	á más tardar
<i>at daybreak</i>	al rayar el dia
<i>always</i>	siempre
<i>at first</i>	primeramente, al principio
<i>almost always</i>	casi siempre
<i>again</i>	otra vez, de nuevo
<i>all day long</i>	todo el dia
<i>by and by</i>	poco á poco
<i>before long</i>	ántes de mucho
<i>betimes (bitáims)</i>	á buena hora
<i>directly</i>	en seguida
<i>ever, for ever</i>	siempre, para siempre
<i>every day</i>	todos los dias
<i>ever since</i>	siempre, desde entónces
<i>early (ærlí)</i>	temprano
<i>every moment</i>	á cada instante
<i>every other day</i>	un dia sí y otro no
<i>for the present</i>	al presente
<i>formerly</i>	en otro tiempo, ántes
<i>from to day</i>	desde hoy
<i>hereafter</i>	en adelante
<i>henceforth</i>	de hoy en adelante
<i>instantly</i>	al instante
<i>in a year hence</i>	de aquí á un año
<i>in the day</i>	de dia
<i>in a trice (trais)</i>	en un tris
<i>immediately</i>	al punto
<i>in the night</i>	de noche
<i>just now</i>	un momento há
<i>last night</i>	anoche

<i>last week</i>	la semana pasada
<i>late</i>	tarde
<i>most times</i>	las más de las veces
<i>now</i>	ahora
<i>not long ago</i>	no hace mucho
<i>never</i>	nunca, jamás
<i>night and day</i>	día y noche
<i>now and then</i>	de cuando en cuando
<i>not yet</i>	todavía no
<i>often (of'n)</i>	á menudo
<i>of late</i>	desde hace poco
<i>on a sudden</i>	de pronto, de repente
<i>presently</i>	luégo, en seguida
<i>precisely</i>	en punto
<i>quick (ly)</i>	pronto, volando
<i>recently</i>	poco há
<i>some time ago</i>	hace algun tiempo
<i>seldom</i>	rara vez
<i>since</i>	desde entónces
<i>scarcely</i>	apénas
<i>soon</i>	pronto
<i>to-day</i>	hoy
<i>till now</i>	hasta ahora
<i>to-morrow</i>	mañana
<i>too late</i>	demasiado tarde
<i>to-morrow morning</i>	mañana por la mañana
<i>to-morrow night</i>	mañana por la noche
<i>this morning</i>	esta mañana
<i>this evening, to night</i>	esta tarde, esta noche
<i>this afternoon</i>	esta tarde
<i>the following day</i>	al día siguiente
<i>then</i>	entónces, luégo
<i>the day before yesterday</i>	anteayer
<i>very soon</i>	muy pronto
<i>very early</i>	muy de mañana
<i>with all speed</i>	á toda prisa
<i>when</i>	cuando, luego que
<i>yesterday</i>	ayer

De lugar.

<i>above</i>	arriba	<i>backward</i>	hácia atras
<i>as far as this place</i>	hasta aquí	<i>behind</i>	detras
<i>as far as that place</i>	hasta allí	<i>down, below</i>	abajo
<i>along</i>	á lo largo	<i>elsewhere</i>	en alguna parte
<i>aside</i>	aparte	<i>everywhere</i>	en todas partes
<i>before</i>	delante	<i>far</i>	léjos
<i>by</i>	al lado de	<i>forward</i>	adelante
		<i>here</i>	aquí
		<i>hence, from here</i>	de aquí

<i>how far?</i>	hasta dónde?	<i>somewhere else</i>	en alguna otra parte
<i>here above</i>	aquí arriba	<i>straight forward</i>	todo derecho
<i>here about</i>	por aquí	<i>this way</i>	por aquí
<i>hard by</i>	junto	<i>there</i>	allí, allá
<i>just by</i>	aquí cerca	<i>thence</i>	de ahí
<i>near</i>	cerca, próximo	<i>that way</i>	por allí
<i>nowhere</i>	en ninguna parte	<i>up, up-stairs</i>	arriba (escaleras)
<i>on this side</i>	de este lado	<i>up and down</i>	acá y allá
<i>on that side</i>	de aquel lado	<i>upon</i>	encima
<i>on the right hand</i>	á la derecha	<i>under</i>	debajo
<i>on the left hand</i>	á la izquierda	<i>whence</i>	de dónde
<i>over against</i>	frente por frente	<i>which way</i>	por dónde
<i>round about</i>	alrededor	<i>where</i>	en dónde
<i>somewhere</i>	en alguna parte	<i>whither</i>	á dónde

<i>birth-day</i>	natalicio	aceite	<i>oil</i>
<i>to turn</i>	volver, llegar á ser	otro cualquier	<i>any other</i>
<i>to take long</i>	emplear mucho tiempo	despertador	<i>larum</i>
<i>lucky</i>	feliz	no estaria nadie	<i>probably nobody</i>
<i>seat</i>	asiento		<i>was</i>
<i>purse</i>	bolsa	de lo que	<i>whereat</i>
<i>to mistake</i>	equivocarse	amar mucho	<i>to love dearly</i>
<i>es que</i>	<i>because</i>	por eso	<i>on that account</i>
significar	<i>to mean</i>	lo que es yo	<i>as for me</i>
lado	<i>side</i>	toros	<i>bullfights</i>
		aparecer	<i>to appear</i>

Tema 41.

How is the weather? It is very good; better than yesterday: it was very bad yesterday. To-morrow you must come and dine at my house; we have a few friends. To-morrow is my birth-day. In a month's time I will be turned of sixty years. Let us go as far as that place. You go much farther than I; but neither do you go the farthest. I shall say nothing further nor go any farther: I am already quite tired. Do you not take long now in going from here to Paris? I only take five days. We went at once to Xerez where we did not stay long; whereby we arrived sooner at Cadiz. You have not been very lucky in trade; and hence you have but very little money. How far does this rail-way go? As far as York. After so much rain we have a fair day at last. How are you, old fellow?

Pretty well. I am very glad to hear it: Thank you. Sit down: take a seat. Shall I sit here? There or wherever you like. I never understand him when he speaks, therefore he never speaks to us. A purse of ten thousand pieces of gold would, if I mistake not, be very heavy in his pocket.

Le gusta á V. el chocolate? Me gusta por la mañana, pero no por la noche: ántes no me gustaba el aceite; ahora me gusta como otra cualquier cosa. A dónde irá V. este verano? Iré á Francia y luégo á Italia. Se despierta V. temprano ó tarde? Me despierta el despertador á las seis y media en punto. Está V. aquí todavía? Estoy aquí ya; pero esta mañana estuve allí y no vi al que me dijo V. que viese (*inf.*). No estaria nadie en casa, pero yo sé que mi amigo llegó más tarde, de lo que sus padres estaban muy contentos, porque le quieren mucho. Al contrario, su hermano nunca está contento, por lo que nadie le puede querer, y está siempre triste por eso. Estás ya contento? Nunca has sido tan feliz como hoy; y lo que es yo nunca he estado tan triste. Es que yo procuro estar siempre contento. Sabes lo que significa: véte á la izquierda; ven á la derecha; la casa está á la izquierda; van por (*on*) el lado derecho del camino? Sí, señor. Ve V. á menudo al Sr. Torron? Le veo todos los días por la tarde; yo le veré tambien mañana por la mañana; viene temprano á clase. Va su amigo algunas veces á los toros? Va raras veces. Apénas habia oido esto, cuando apareció su hermano. Vaya V. atras ó adelante.

LECCION XLII.

CONTINUACION DEL ADVERBIO.

275. Algunos adverbios, como *along*, *away*, se usan á veces de un modo pleonástico, debiendo sobreentenderse *the space*, *the field*, etc., *the hare and the rabbit sweep fast along* la liebre y el conejo pasan velozmente á lo largo.

276. Los adverbios calificativos ó de modo, y algunos otros, se forman ordinariamente agregando al adjetivo ó participio la terminacion *ly*: de *generous*, *generously* generosamente; de *bad*, *badly* malamente; de *friend*, *friendly* amigablemente; de *consequent*, *consequently* por consiguiente.

277. Si el adjetivo acaba en *y* precedida de consonante, se cambia en *i* delante de *ly*; y si en *ble*, se cambia ésta en *bly*: de *easy*, *easily* fácilmente; de *terrible*, *terribly* terriblemente; pero se dice *dayly* ó *daily* diariamente, *gayly* ó *gaily* alegremente.

Guillermo habla distintamente, es notablemente aplicado y lee muy correctamente.

Ella habla agradablemente, pero usted habla muy mal.

William speaks distinctly, he is remarkably diligent and reads very correctly.

She speaks agreeably, but you speak very badly.

278. La terminacion *wise* sirve tambien para formar adverbios de modo: *otherwise* de otro modo, *likewise* igualmente.

279. Despues de los adverbios de cantidad no se expresa generalmente el *de* castellano si le sigue sustantivo: *give me a little wine* déme V. un poco de vino.

Pero se traduce, por *of* si le sigue otra palabra: *take a little more of this wine* toma un poco más de este vino.

280. En inglés hasta una frase adverbial puede colocarse entre el auxiliar y el verbo principal: *Did he, as they say, enlist himself at Gibraltar?* Se alistó, como dicen, en Gibraltar? *I shall, to his great surprise, present him* le presentaré con gran sorpresa suya.

Adverbios de afirmacion.

assuredly
certainly
indeed
infallibly
sure, to be sure

de seguro
ciertamente
á la verdad
infaliblemente
seguramente

undoubtedly
without fail
without doubt
yes, yes indeed

indudablemente
sin falta
sin duda
sí, sí de véras

De negacion.

<i>by no means</i> <i>not, no</i>	de ningun modo no		<i>not at all</i> <i>not only that</i>	absolutamente no solamente eso
--------------------------------------	----------------------	--	---	-----------------------------------

De duda.

<i>perhaps</i> <i>probably, likely</i>	quizá, acaso probablemente		<i>perchance</i> <i>that is to say</i>	por casualidad es decir
---	-------------------------------	--	---	----------------------------

De interrogacion.

<i>how much?</i> <i>how?</i> <i>whence?</i>	cuánto? cómo? de dónde?		<i>how often?</i> <i>why?</i> <i>where?</i>	cuántas veces? por qué? dónde?
---	-------------------------------	--	---	--------------------------------------

De comparacion.

<i>after all</i> <i>above all</i> <i>better</i> <i>better and better</i> <i>chiefly</i> <i>exactly so</i> <i>gently</i> <i>in that manner</i> <i>less</i> <i>like that, so</i>	despues de todo sobre todo mejor mejor que mejor principalmente precisamente con tiento de ese modo ménos así		<i>more</i> <i>much more</i> <i>much less</i> <i>neither more nor less</i> <i>on the contrary</i> <i>otherwise</i> <i>particularly</i> <i>worse</i>	más mucho más mucho ménos ni más ni ménos al contrario de otro modo particularmente peor
---	--	--	--	---

De cantidad y de número.

<i>as much</i> <i>at most</i> <i>about, pretty near</i> <i>at least</i> <i>a little</i> <i>enough</i> <i>ever so little</i> <i>little by little</i> <i>little, few</i>	tanto (igualdad) todo lo más poco más ó ménos al ménos, lo ménos nos un poco bastante por poco poco á poco poco, pocos		<i>much, many</i> <i>once</i> <i>plentifully</i> <i>quite, entirely</i> <i>so much</i> <i>too, too much</i> <i>totally</i> <i>twice</i> <i>three times</i>	mucho, muchos una vez con abundancia del todo tanto (ponderacion) demasiado totalmente dos veces tres veces
--	---	--	--	---

De órden.

<i>at last, finally</i> <i>at once</i> <i>afterwards</i> <i>at length, in short</i> <i>first</i>	al fin á la vez, desde luego despues en fin, al cabo 1.º, primera- mente		<i>in the first place</i> <i>lastly</i> <i>one after another</i> <i>secondly</i> <i>utterly</i>	en primer lugar por último en fila 2.º, en segundo lugar del todo
--	--	--	---	--

De calidad y de modo.

<i>admirably well</i>	á las mil maravillas	<i>neither well nor ill,</i>	} ni bien ni mal
<i>at venture</i>	á lo que salga	<i>neither right nor wrong</i>	
<i>at random</i>	al tun tun	<i>on the right side</i>	al derecho
<i>bad, very bad</i>	mal, muy mal	<i>on the wrong side</i>	al revés
<i>backwards</i>	hácia atrás	<i>on purpose</i>	adrede
<i>every way</i>	en todas direcciones	<i>scarcely, hardly</i>	apénas
<i>easily</i>	fácilmente	<i>sillily</i>	neciamente
<i>for fun</i>	por reír	<i>to my mind</i>	á mi gusto
<i>heartily</i>	con mil amores	<i>thoroughly</i>	á fondo
<i>in a joke</i>	de broma	<i>the right way</i>	} bien } direccion
<i>in jest</i>	en chanza	<i>the wrong way</i>	
<i>in good earnest</i>	de véras	<i>unawares</i>	desprevenido
		<i>well, very well</i>	bien, muy bien

<i>country</i>	campo	<i>astonishing</i>	asombroso
<i>valuable</i>	precioso	<i>to pay</i>	rendir
<i>to drown</i>	ahogarse	<i>remains</i>	restos
<i>to bury</i>	enterrar	<i>so as</i>	de tal suerte que
<i>church-yard</i>	cementerio	<i>quejarse</i>	<i>to complain</i>
<i>to inter</i>	enterrar	<i>burlarse de</i>	<i>to laugh at</i>
<i>busy</i>	diligente	<i>con seguridad</i>	<i>securely</i>
<i>to reproach with</i>	echar en cara	<i>esperar</i>	<i>to wait for</i>
<i>to threaten</i>	amenazar	<i>volver</i>	<i>to come again</i>
<i>tiresome</i>	molesto	<i>salir de</i>	<i>to leave</i>
<i>to relate</i>	contar	<i>trabajar</i>	<i>to be at work</i>
<i>will</i>	testamento		

Tema 42.

At what number does that gentleman live? He lived once at n.º 24; but I do not know where he lives now. My father was received in a friendly manner by the minister, and I was amicably received by the count. Are you acquainted with that young lady? Yes; she is extremely beautiful; her brother sang yesterday well enough.

A gentleman in the country possessed a valuable dog, which had twice saved him from drowning, and several times protected him against thieves; he was consequently much attached to him. At length the poor animal became old and died, and the master, in memory of his fidelity, buried him at the end of his garden, which was near the church-yard; he also had a monument placed over him, with an epitaph in the following words. *Here lies one whose

virtues rendered him more worthy of consecrated ground than many who are there interred.*

Some busy persons immediately informed the magistrate, denouncing the gentleman as an atheist. The magistrate sent for him, reproached him with his impiety and threatened to accuse him before the ecclesiastical court. The gentleman began to be alarmed, but recollecting himself he said to the magistrate: 'Sir, your observations are very just, and if my dog had not possessed almost human intelligence, I should merit the punishment with which you threaten me. I would be tiresome to relate to you the history of the faithful creature, but the last act of his life will convince you of his extraordinary intelligence: would you believe it, sir, that he made a will and, among other things, has left you a hundred pounds, which I now bring you?' 'Indeed!' replied the magistrate, he was a most astonishing dog, and you have done extremely well in paying honour to his remains; it would be well if every body had lived so as to merit the inscriptions that are seen on their tombs.*

Cuándo trabaja este obrero? Trabaja dos veces al dia; por la mañana y por la tarde. Es posible que comprenda V. semejantes cosas? Acaso lo entiende mejor que nosotros. Si ellos se quejan, yo me quejaré igualmente: de otro modo, podrian buclarse de mí. Ha visto usted algo notable en el Escorial? Ciertamente. Parece que ahora se viaja con seguridad? Nada absolutamente; hoy han robado el ferrocarril. Allí hay mucha gente; qué les diré? Dígales V. que me esperen (*inf.*) abajo. Qué haré yo entre tanto? Primeramente haga V. lo que le he mandado, y despues vuelva V. á recibir nuevas órdenes. Adónde piensan VV. ir cuando salgan de Madrid? No lo sé; se lo digo á V. de véras. Siempre debiéramos preferir el deber á los placeres; sin embargo, es imposible trabajar continuamente. Mi hijo sabe las matemáticas á las mil maravillas; pero su amigo no las sabe ni bien ni mal.

LECCION XLIII.

PREPOSICIONES.

281. La preposicion, en inglés, como en todos los idiomas

modernos, es una de las partes más interesantes del discurso, é indica las diversas relaciones que existen entre los nombres, pronombres, verbos y adverbios.

<i>above</i>		arriba de, encima de, superior á, etc.
<i>around</i>	}	al rededor de
<i>round (raund)</i>		
<i>about</i>		cerca de, tocante á, sobre
<i>after</i>		despues de, segun
<i>against</i>		contra, hácia
<i>amidst</i>		en medio de
<i>among</i>	}	entre (muchos objetos)
<i>amongst</i>		
<i>at</i>		en, á
<i>before</i>		ántes de
<i>behind</i>		detras de (<i>bihaind</i>)
<i>below</i>		debajo de, inferior á
<i>beneath</i>		debajo de, inferior á (<i>biniz</i>)
<i>between</i>	}	entre (dos objetos) (<i>bituin</i>)
<i>betwixt</i>		
<i>beside (bisaid)</i>		al lado de, cerca de, fuera de, etc.
<i>besides</i>		á más de, excepto, etc.
<i>beyond</i>		fuera de, más allá de, etc.
<i>by (bai)</i>		por, de, con, al lado de
<i>down</i>		abajo de (<i>daun</i>)
<i>for</i>		para, por
<i>from</i>		de (separacion ó procedencia)
<i>in</i>		en
<i>into</i>		á, dentro de
<i>near</i>		cerca de (<i>nir</i>)
<i>of</i>		de (posesion)
<i>off</i>		distante de
<i>on</i>	}	sobre, encima de
<i>upon</i>		
<i>over</i>		encima de, superior á, sobre
<i>since</i>		desde (conj., ya que)
<i>through</i>		al traves de, á causa de, etc.
<i>throughout</i>		por todo, etc.
<i>till, until</i>		hasta
<i>to</i>		á, para
<i>towards</i>		hácia
<i>under</i>		bajo, debajo de, inferior á (<i>ænder</i>)
<i>up</i>		arriba de
<i>with</i>		con
<i>within</i>		dentro de
<i>without (uizáut)</i>		sin

282. ABOVE, encima de, sobre, más de. Expresa elevacion ó superioridad.

Su cuarto de V. está encima del mio.	<i>Your room is above mine</i>
Eso está fuera de mi alcance.	<i>That is above my reach</i>
Sobrepuja mis fuerzas.	<i>It is above my strength.</i>
El arriba mencionado.	<i>The above mentioned.</i>
El honor está por encima de la vida.	<i>Honour is above life.</i>
La fe vale mucho más que la incredulidad.	<i>Faith is far above incredulity.</i>
Hubo más de cien personas.	<i>There were above a hundred persons.</i>

283. AROUND, ROUND, alrededor de. La segunda es más usada que la primera: *all the family sat round the fire* toda la familia estaba sentada alrededor del fuego.

284. ABOUT, cerca de, tocante á, sobre. Varía notablemente su significacion, segun que se refiera al lugar ó cantidad, como se ve por los ejemplos:

No hablamos acerca (tocante al) del asunto.	<i>We did not speak about the business.</i>
Compré unos doce metros.	<i>I bought about twelve yards.</i>
Estoy á punto de partir.	<i>I am about to start.</i>
Qué dice V. sobre aquel negocio?	<i>What do you say about that business?</i>
He oido decir mucho tocante á él.	<i>I have heard much about him.</i>
Emprender alguna cosa.	<i>To go about a thing.</i>
Apoderarse del ánimo de alguno.	<i>To come about any one.</i>

285. AFTER, despues, segun, por. Designa posterioridad de lugar, de tiempo y de órden, y expresa tambien el modo:

Vino despues de las tres.	<i>He came after three o'clock.</i>
La Reina se viste á la española.	<i>The Queen dresses after the spanish fashion.</i>
Lo hice del mismo modo.	<i>I did it after the same manner.</i>
Preguntó por mí.	<i>He inquired after me.</i>
Pregunté por su salud.	<i>I asked after your health.</i>
Mi casa está en esa calle despues de la iglesia.	<i>My house is in this street after the church.</i>

286. AGAINST, contra, hácia. Designa oposicion y proximidad:

El que no está conmigo está contra mí.	<i>He that is not with me is against me.</i>
Volveremos para Navidad.	<i>We shall come back against Christmas.</i>
Yo estaba sentado junto á la pared.	<i>I was sitting against the wall.</i>
Vendrá hácia el fin de la semana.	<i>He will come against the end of the week.</i>

287. AMONG, AMONGST: BETWEEN, BETWIXT, entre. Las dos primeras designan una posición indeterminada entre varios objetos; las otras dos, una posición intermedia entre dos; *betwixt* es poco usada:

Entre amigos todo es comun.	<i>Among friends all things are common.</i>
Bendita eres entre todas las mujeres.	<i>Blessed art Thou among women.</i>
Hay gran diferencia entre los dos.	<i>There is a great difference between the two.</i>
Hubo algun trato de casamiento entre mí y ella.	<i>There was some speech of marriage betwixt me and her.</i>

288. AS FOR, AS TO, AS REGARDS, en cuanto á, tocante á:

En cuanto á mí, puede V. salir.	<i>As to (for) me, you may go out.</i>
---------------------------------	--

289. AT, en. Indica reposo, coexistencia en un lugar ó tiempo, y se usa en muchas locuciones como éstas: *to live at Madrid* vivir en Madrid; *to have something at hand* tener algo á la mano; *to be at ease* estar con comodidad; *to be at war, at peace* estar en guerra, en paz; *at unawares* de improviso; *at this moment* en este momento; *at one time or other* en uno ó en otro tiempo; *at first dash* al primer golpe; *at once* á la vez; *nothing at all* nada absolutamente; *at a loss* perplejo; *at the hazard of* con peligro de; *at a venture* á la ventura.

Él está en casa.	<i>He is at home.</i>
Está estudiando.	<i>He is at study.</i>
Qué piensa V. hacer?	<i>What would you be at?</i>
El perro trató de morderle.	<i>The dog bit (snapt) at him.</i>
Quiere V. pasar por mi casa?	<i>Will you call at my house?</i>

290. BEFORE, ántes, delante de. Expresa relaciones de tiempo, de orden (*ántes que ó de*) y de lugar (delante de):

Marchó delante de mí.
Saldré ántes de las diez.
Llegamos ántes que V.
El día ántes de sus bodas.

He went before me.
I shall go out before ten o'clock.
We arrived before you.
The day before his wedding.

291. BEHIND, detras de. Designa posterioridad local y atraso moral:

Se fué detras del altar.
Está mucho más atrasado que su hermano.
Está tan listo como él.

He went behind the altar.
He is far (de mucho) behind his brother.
He does not go behind him (no le va en zaga).

292. BELOW, UNDER, BENEATH, debajo. Designan inferioridad de lugar, de número, de tiempo, de dignidad, ó moral, etc.; la última se usa especialmente en poesía:

El barco está amarrado debajo del puente.
Mi habitacion está debajo de la de usted.
Hay una agradable sombra debajo de estos árboles.
Son indignos de la cólera de un hombre de bien.
El barco está á la vela.
Bajo el reinado de Carlos V.
Tiene ménos de diez y ocho años.

The boat is moored below the bridge.
My lodging is below yours.
There is an agreeable shade beneath these trees.
They are beneath the indignation of an honest man.
The ship is under sail.
Under the reign of Charles V.
He is under eighteen years.

Below y beneath son tambien adverbios: *he is there below* está allá abajo; *in the earth beneath* aquí abajo en la tierra.

293. BESIDE, BESIDES, ademas de. La primera expresa proximidad, *al lado de*, y separacion, *fuera de*: la segunda, superabundancia, *además de*, y exclusion, *sino*:

Está fuera de mi propósito.
Me sentaré á su lado.
No hubo nadie sino yo.
No pido nada más que el recuerdo de sus oraciones.

It is beside my purpose.
I will sit down beside you.
There was nobody besides myself.
I ask nothing besides the remembrance of your prayers.



294. BEYOND, más allá. Designa una relacion de lugar y de superioridad moral ó física:

Están ya al abrigo de toda persecucion.

Me fui más allá de Birmingham.

Eso está fuera de mi comprension.

They are beyond the reach of all pursuit.

I went beyond Birmingham.

That is beyond my understanding.

295. BY, por. Designa el agente, la causa, el medio, el motivo, el modo, la cantidad, el tiempo, etc.: *by chance* por casualidad; *seize him by force* cójale V. por fuerza; *they fell by hundreds* cayeron por centenares; *by little and little* poco á poco; *it is three by my watch* son las tres por mi reloj; *to sell by the yard* vender por varas; *by retail* por menor; *to sit by one* sentarse al lado de uno; *by the fire* junto al fuego; *to stand by one* apoyar á uno; *to stand by* ponerse á un lado; *by all accounts* segun la voz general; *by day* de dia; *by land* por tierra; *by stealth* á hurtadillas; *by no means* de ningun modo; *hard by* ó *close by* muy cerca de:

Todas las cosas fueron creadas por la palabra de Dios.

Atravesaron el rio por medio de una lancha.

Tomará V. su camino por Búrgos?

Ahorra V. mucho dinero en su posicion?

Tomar otro nombre.

Pasé junto á V.

All things were created by the word of God.

They crossed the river by means of a boat.

Will you take your way by Burgos?

Do you put by (de lado) much money in your position?

To go by another name.

I passed by you (your side).

296. Las preposiciones llevan muchas veces sobreentendido su complemento: *a very amusing game to play at* is billiards un juego muy divertido para jugar á (él) es el billar.

297. Los participios pasados conservan la misma preposicion que sus verbos: *the long wished for day* is arrived el dia largo tiempo deseado llegó.

Tema 43.

There is not one among a thousand, possessing the like qualities. At nine o'clock this morning a man fell down dead in the street. At what hour? At no time. My friend is before his competitors both in right and in power. His hands were tied behind his back. Were there many people in the garden? There was nobody besides those two. This rule ought to be carefully studied by all pupils. We do not suffer ourself to be trifled with. What is the fittest age to marry at? For a man, it is not the same as for a woman. Amidst all his misfortunes he was happy in having a good friend. Atheists are those ridiculous and impious persons who, contrary to the evidence of their senses, pretend not to believe in the existence of God.

One of them was disputing with a dervise, and said to him, you tell me that God is omnipresent, yet I cannot see him anywhere; show him to me, and I will believe it. Again I say that a man ought not to be punished for his crimes by your laws, since you say that everything is done by the will of God. You say also that Satan is punished by being condemned to hell-fire; now, as he is said to be of that element, what injury can fire do to itself? The dervise after a moment's reflection, took up a large lump of earth, struck the atheist a violent blow with it, and then left him. The latter went directly to the *cadi*, complained of the injury and demanded justice; the dervise was summoned to answer why instead of replying to the man, he had struck him. What I did, replied the dervise, was in answer to his ridiculous questions; of what does he complain? He says he has a pain, let him show it if he wishes us to believe him: he accuses me of a crime, yet he said that man ought not to be punished by our laws, since everything, according to our doctrine, was under the direction of God: he complains that I have injured him by striking him with a piece of earth; now he does not deny that man is of the earth, and he maintains that an element can do no harm to itself; of what then does he complain? The atheist was confounded, and retired amidst the railleries of the auditors.

To be convinced of the hypocrisy of those infidels, we should see one of them on a bed of death; it would be a lesson for the others.

Por quién fueron pintados esos cuadros? El uno fué pintado por Murillo, el otro por Zurbaran; los dos están llenos de vida. Está su madre de V. en casa? No, señor; está en casa de una amiga. Por qué hace V. eso? Porque quiero hacerlo. Está prohibido bajo pena de muerte. Bajo el reinado del gran Felipe II fué edificado el Escorial, gloria de la nacion española. Hablaron VV. sobre aquel asunto? Hablamos largo rato sobre él, pero no pudimos convenir en las condiciones. Cuelgue V. ese cuadro encima de la chimenea. Tal vez estaria mejor colgado encima del espejo. Qué va V. á hacer ahora? Voy á escribir una gramática latina. Quién viene despues que V.? Un amigo mio. Llámele V. por su propio nombre y le contestará. Hácia el fin de la semana partiré para mi país. Un coronel está por encima de un capitan; por consiguiente, un capitan está por debajo de un coronel. Se va V.? Iré á Inglaterra despues de Navidad. Cómo enseña V. el aleman? Enseño lenguas modernas por (segun) un sistema excelente. No vayan VV. más allá del palacio Real, porque nuestro amigo vive muy cerca del palacio. Entre mis libros hay varios que pertenecén á mi tio.

LECCION XLIV.

CONTINUACION DE LAS PREPOSICIONES.

298. DOWN, abajo. Es más usada como adverbio que como preposicion: *to be down stairs* estar abajo; *to drift down stream* seguir la corriente; *he had his ups and downs* tenia sus altos y bajos; *the whole family down to the very cat and dog* toda la familia hasta el gato y el perro; *this has been the practice down from the conquest* tal ha sido el uso desde la conquista.

299. FOR, para, por. Indica duracion de tiempo, causa, motivo, precio, etc.

Por muchos siglos.

Murió por su patria.

Cuánto pagó V. por eso?

Me lo vendió por dos duros.

Por mí (amor á mí), por tí, por él.

Por amor de Dios, ayúdame.

Por V. lo he hecho.

Es propio de hombres malos.

For many ages (centuries).

He died for his country.

How much did you pay for it?

He sold it me for two dollars.

For my sake, for thy, his sake.

For God's sake, help me.

I have done it for your sake.

It is for wicked men.

300. FROM, de, desde: Indica separacion, procedencia de lugar ó de tiempo, etc.

Partimos de París el 15.	<i>We started from Paris the fifteenth.</i>
He recibido dos cartas de ella.	<i>I have received two letters from her.</i>
Por lo que ha dicho no me queda duda.	<i>From what he has said I have no doubt.</i>
Desde la creacion del mundo.	<i>From the creation of the world.</i>

301. IN, INTO, en, dentro, al. La primera expresa reposo, y la segunda movimiento ó tránsito de un estado á otro.

Le he visto pasearse en el jardin.	<i>I saw him walking in the garden.</i>
Le he visto ir al jardin.	<i>I saw him going into the garden.</i>
Le incitaron al juego.	<i>They drew him into gambling.</i>
Fué convertido en una flor que todavía lleva su nombre.	<i>He was changed into a flower which yet bears his name.</i>

302. NEAR, cerca de, junto á. Denota proximidad de lugar, de tiempo ó de cantidad.

Tetuan está cerca de Madrid.	<i>Tetuan is near Madrid.</i>
Estuve cerca de extraviarme.	<i>I was near going astray.</i>
Cerca de 400 hombres (menos).	<i>Near four hundred men.</i>
Estuve á pique de ser muerto.	<i>I was near being killed.</i>

303. OF, OFF, de, fuera de. La primera indica posesion; la segunda apenas se usa como preposicion: *he was off the bed* estaba fuera de la cama; *she was full of pride* estaba llena de orgullo.

304. OVER, sobre, por encima de, etc.

Felipe II reinó en España.	<i>Philip the II reigned over Spain.</i>
El pájaro voló por encima (al otro lado) de la casa.	<i>The bird flew over the house.</i>
Está en deudas hasta los ojos.	<i>He is in debt over head and ears.</i>
Se lo he dicho repetidas veces.	<i>I told it you over and over (again).</i>
Viajé por toda España.	<i>I travelled all over Spain.</i>
El chico saltó al otro lado del foso.	<i>The boy leaped over the ditch.</i>

Obs. 59. Con el verbo *to be* expresa la conclusion de una cosa:

La funcion de la iglesia está concluida.	<i>Church is over.</i>
Se concluyó el baile.	<i>The ball is over.</i>
Estoy perdido.	<i>All is over with me.</i>

305. ON, UPON, sobre, encima de. *Upon* expresa que una cosa está sobre otra, sin necesidad de hallarse en contacto; expresa la elevacion en más alto grado que *on*:

Cúbrase V.	<i>Put your hat (cap, etc.), on (adverbio).</i>
Ponga el libro sobre la mesa.	<i>Put the book upon (ú on) the table.</i>
Lo haré por V.	<i>I will do it on your account.</i>
Él toca el piano, el violin.	<i>He plays on the piano, on the violin.</i>

306. Usos de ON y UPON. Pueden marcar otras muchas posiciones que no es fácil reducir á reglas, por cuyo motivo se recomiendan los siguientes ejemplos: *it is long since we have loss on loss* hace tiempo que tenemos pérdida sobre pérdida; *I rely on you* cuento con V.; *all our hopes depend on God's bounty* todas vuestras esperanzas se fundan en la bondad de Dios; *he promised it on his word, on his honour* lo prometió bajo su palabra, por su honor; *the fleet is on the coast* la flota está en la costa; *the towns situated on the Thames* las ciudades situadas en las orillas del Támesis; *she has a ring on her finger* tiene una sortija en el dedo; *I never saw such a quantity of fruit on any tree* jamas vi semejante cantidad de fruta en un árbol; *he is upon departure* está para partir; *upon the first opportunity* á la primera ocasion; *come upon a sunday* venga usted un domingo; *upon that very day* en aquel mismo dia; *upon pain of death* bajo pena de muerte; *to bestow any favour upon one* hacer favor á alguno; *upon a mere suspicion* á la menor sospecha; *I was upon a journey* yo estaba viajando; *I pass my time upon writing* empleo el tiempo en escribir; *to depend upon one* depender de alguno; *upon the whole matter* considerado todo.

OBS. 60. *On* como adverbio significa adelante: *go on* prosiga. V.; *read on* continúe usted leyendo.

307. SINCE, desde. Es preposicion, adverbio y conjuncion: *since my coming* desde mi llegada; *it has been fine since three days* hace buen tiempo de tres dias á esta parte; *I have not seen your friend since Christmas* no he visto á su amigo desde Navidad.

308. THROUGH, por, á traves de; THROUGHOUT, por todo: *to go through a town* atravesar una ciudad; *to look through a grating* mirar por una reja; *through thirst of gold* por sed de oro; *through want of skill* por torpeza; *through and through* de parte á parte; *throughout the year* en todo el año; *throughout my body* por todo mi cuerpo; *throughout the course of this long war* en todo el curso de esta larga guerra.

Las cosas materiales no se conciben sino por medio de los sentidos.

Material things are presented only through the senses.

Entró por la puerta y salió por la ventana.

He came in through the door and went out through the window.

Es conocido por todo el mundo.

It is known throughout the world.

309. TILL, UNTIL, hasta. Designan el término de un tiempo dado; *to y as far as* hasta, designan el término en el espacio: *unhappy till the last* desgraciado hasta el fin; *till now* hasta ahora; *as far as this place* hasta este sitio.

Permaneceré hasta las cinco.

I will remain till five o'clock.

Hasta que al fin Satanás rompió el silencio.

Till at last Satan broke the silence.

Es cosa nunca oída hasta ahora.

It is a thing unheard of till now.

Desde Madrid hasta Toledo.

From Madrid to (as far as) Toledo.

He ido hasta Sevilla.

I have gone as far as Seville.

Permaneceré en París hasta el año que viene.

I shall stay in Paris until the next year.

Aguardaré á que V. llegue.

I will wait till you arrive.

- 310. To, á, hasta, para con. Indica movimiento, compa-

racion, objeto, etc.: *to buckle to study* aplicarse al estudio; *from door to door* de puerta en puerta; *it is ten minutes to five* son las cinco ménos diez minutos; *I see to the bottom* veo hasta el fondo; *it is ten to one* hay diez contra uno; *you are nothing to him* V. no es nada junto á él; *our duty to man* nuestro deber para con el hombre.

Iré á Madrid.

No se hacen bien ni á sí mismos ni á los demas.

Qué le importa á V.?

Eso no me importa.

Está uno apurado para buscar la vida en un país cuyo idioma no sabe?

Eso no está conforme con nuestro designio.

Habia hasta 300 jinetes.

La sabiduría de los hombres es necedad delante de Dios.

Ella extendió los brazos hasta el cielo.

I shall go to Madrid.

They do good neither to themselves nor to others.

What is it to you?

That is nothing to me.

Is one hard put to, to find his living in a country whose language he does not know?

That is not fit to our purpose.

There were to the number of 300 horse.

Men's wisdom is but folly to God.

She stretched her arms to heaven.

311. TOWARDS, TOWARD, para con, hácia. *Towards the sea* hácia el mar; *towards the right hand* hácia la derecha; *he is charitable towards the poor* es caritativo para con los pobres; *toward the end of the month* hácia el fin de mes; *they were somewhat towards the right* tenían hasta cierto punto razon.

312. UP, arriba. Es adverbio, pero se usa á veces como preposicion: *up hill and down dale* por montes y valles; *up to* hasta; *up to Noah's time* hasta el tiempo de Noé; *they went up to the town* fueron á la ciudad; *to live up to one's income* gastar toda su renta; *she up with her fist* ella levantó el puño; *the funds are up* los fondos han subido; subo *I go up*; *the hour is up* ha llegado la hora; altos y bajos *ups and downs*; *he is hard up* está muy apurado; arriba y abajo (escaleras) *upstairs and downstairs*.

313. OUT OF, fuera de, sin, por. Designa salida, separa-

cion, conclusion, causa: *out of reach* fuera de alcance; *he was out of business* estaba retirado de los negocios; *he is out of all* lo ha perdido todo; *out of laziness* por pereza; *he did it out of design* lo hizo de intento; *to copy out of an author* copiar de un autor; *to be out of patience* perder la paciencia; *a voyage out and home* viaje redondo.

De cuarenta combatientes hubo quince heridos.

El enfermo está fuera de peligro.

Salgo (voy afuera).

Lo hizo de rabia.

Eso se traslucirá, se divulgará.

A muertos y á idos no hay amigos.

El aceite se acabó.

Out of forty combatants there were fifteen wounded.

The sick man is out of danger.

I am going out.

He did it out of rage.

That will come out.

Out of sight out of mind.

The oil is out.

314. WITH, con. Indica compañía, medio, instrumento, etc.: *fire is extinguished with water* el fuego se apaga con agua; *with the help of God* con ayuda de Dios; *to have to do with* tener que habérselas con; *consonant with* de acuerdo con; *one with another* uno con otro; *away with him* fuera con él; *away with these compliments* tregua de cumplimientos; *with all my heart* de todo mi corazón; *to meddle with* mezclarse en; *filled with* lleno de; *he died with cold* murió de frío; *smitten with* enamorado de; *I had in mind to begin with that* tenía intención de empezar por eso; *a girl with blue eyes* una muchacha de ojos azules; *to will the same with me* querer lo mismo que yo.

315. WITHIN, dentro de, al alcance de; WITHOUT, fuera de, sin. *Within hearing* al alcance de la voz; *he was within a little of being killed* por poco no le matan; *within a few days* dentro de pocos días; *within these five hours* hace cinco horas; *without fear* sin miedo; *without day* sin fecha; *from without* de fuera; *you will not enjoy health without you take much exercise* no tendrá V. salud si no hace V. mucho ejercicio.

<i>to freight</i>	fletar	<i>to hold back</i>	retener
<i>flour</i>	harina	<i>hurry</i>	prisa
<i>to borrow</i>	pedir prestado	<i>to snatch</i>	arrancar
<i>to prevail upon</i>	vencer	<i>flap</i>	faldon
<i>to agree</i>	convenir	<i>pike</i>	sollo
<i>heap</i>	cima	<i>fin</i>	aleta
<i>rubbish</i>	monton	puesto	<i>place</i>
<i>City</i>	barrio comercial de Lóndres	cuello	<i>neck</i>
<i>pickpocket</i>	tomador	entrada la noche	<i>late at night</i>
<i>crowded</i>	ateestado (de gente)	devolver	<i>to return</i>
<i>snuff-box</i>	tabaquera	niño	<i>childhood</i> (niñez)
<i>success</i>	éxito	pagano	<i>heathen</i>
<i>fish-hook</i>	anzuelo	vela	<i>candle</i>
<i>to draw out</i>	sacar	mandar	<i>to command</i>
<i>ready</i>	preparado	contar con	<i>to rely on</i>
<i>tug</i>	tiro	ingrato	<i>ungrateful</i>

Tema 44.

He is going to freight a ship with flour for Spain. Is this money sufficient for you? I am obliged to you for your kindness. From whom has he borrowed that money? From the merchant. Will you refresh yourself with a glass of water? Dispense with it; I cannot comply with your wishes, but I am charmed with your company: I thank you for it. Of what are you thinking? I think I cannot prevail upon him to do it. Then I take it upon me: let us first agree upon one thing. Well; I accept of your kind offer. Will you go for my sister? She was ignorant of that circumstance. From the heap of a rubbish he saw a green tree. The heat is so excessive that we work in the night and sleep in the day. What is life without a friend? But you are a friend of his, because he obtained that place through you. Yes, but he deceived me under the colour of friendship. Where are you going to? I will approach towards the place. I passed through your garden and saw the sun rise this morning. That is a sight which we who live in towns seldom enjoy. Are you going over the bridge? Yes. But you must be here within an hour.

HOW TO CATCH A PICKPOCKET, A merchant at London, who used (*solia*) to walk very much in the City, the streets of which are always crowded and infested by pickpockets, was continually losing either his pocket-book, his snuff box, or his purse, without ever being able to discover the thief. At last he thought of a very ingenious method which promised success. He went to a fishing-

tackle shop (*tienda de objetos de pescar*), and bought some strong fishing-hooks, which he got sewed fast (*mandó coser fuertemente*) in his pocket with the points turned downwards, so that any body might put their hand into the pocket, but could not draw it out without being caught.

Thus prepared he went out as usual to go on'change (*á la Bolsa*) desiring one of his clerks to follow him at a short distance, to be ready in case he should catch a fish. On passing up Lombard-street, he felt a slight tug at his coat, and immediately set off (*se echó*) to run, but was prevented by something holding him back. He turned and saw the pick-pocket, and said, why do you hold my coat, sir? Let me go, I am in a great hurry; at the same time attempting to snatch the flap from him, which drove (*metian*) the fish-hooks further into his hand, and he cried out, Oh, oh! sir, I cannot, you are tearing (*rasgando*) my hand to pieces, pray let me go. Ah! ah! said the merchant, I have then caught the fish that has so frequently bitten; you are the pike, or rather the shark (*liburon*). By this time the clerk had come up and a crowd being assembled around them, had a hearty (*gran*) laugh at the fisherman and fish, whose fin was so firmly hooked (*agarraza*) that he was obliged to go with the merchant to a surgeon, and have the flesh cut to disengage (*desenredar*) the hooks. The gentleman was satisfied with the trick (*chasco*), and did not send the pick-pocket to prison; but ever after that he could walk safely through the City, with his pocket-book, purse, or snuff-box.

A quién habla V.? Hablo á este hombre, que es muy atento para con los pobres. Sin embargo, perdió su puesto por su mala conducta. Trabaja V. todos los dias? No trabajo en (*on*) domingo. Sirvase usted entrar (*walk*) en mi cuarto: tome V. un pedazo de pan. Qué dice V.? Digo que la lluvia cae del cielo. Cuánto tiempo permanecieron VV. en casa del conde? Estuvimos en la (*at*) mesa desde las seis hasta las diez. La condesa fué muy amable; tenia una bonita cadena alrededor del (*pos.*) cuello; entre tanto los viejos estuvieron sentados alrededor del fuego, desde la mañana hasta muy entrada la noche. Dónde está mi perro? Está echado debajo de la mesa de la cocina. Le ha devuelto á V. el libro? Me lo devolvió con muchas gracias.

Cree V. que los hombres han nacido (*been born*) para los reyes como las bestias para los hombres? No, señor; todos los hombres son iguales. Hace mucho tiempo que está V. en España? Desde niño. Vive V. cerca del teatro? Vivo cerca de la Bolsa. El mundo cristiano tiene muchas ventajas sobre los paganos. Ponga V. la vela sobre la mesa y cierre V. la puerta. Tiene V. algo que mandar? Cuente usted conmigo en toda ocasion. El que es ingrato para con sus bienhechores, merece ser despreciado: sin V. yo hubiera sido un ignorante toda mi vida.

LECCION XLV.

CONJUNCIONES.

316. Por regla general, las conjunciones desempeñan en inglés el mismo oficio que sus equivalentes castellanas, con algunas particularidades que á continuacion indicamos.

Debe advertirse que muchas conjunciones tienen otros significados análogos á los que se indican en la lista.

Lista de las conjunciones inglesas.

AFTER <i>all</i> despues de todo,	FOR pues, porque
AFTER <i>that</i> despues que	IF si (condic.)
AND y, é	IF NOT si no
AS cuando	IN CASE <i>that</i> en caso que
AS <i>well as</i> así como	IN FINE, <i>in short</i> en fin, por fin
AS <i>long as</i> en tanto que	INDEED, <i>in effect</i> en efecto
AS..... <i>as</i> ; <i>so</i> <i>as</i> tan..... como	INSOMUCH <i>that</i> hasta tal punto
AS..... <i>so</i> como..... así	IN PROPORTION <i>as</i> á medida que
AT <i>any rate</i> , <i>in each case</i> en todo caso	JUST <i>as</i> ni más ni ménos
ALTHOUGH aún cuando	LEST por temor de que
BUT no más que, sino, pero, á no 'ser por	LIKEWISE asimismo
BUT <i>also</i> sino tambien	MEANTIME en tanto que
BESIDES <i>that</i> ademas de eso	MOREOVER ademas
BECAUSE porque, puesto que	NEITHER <i>nor</i> ni-ni
EVEN aún	NOTWITHSTANDING, <i>nevertheless</i>
EITHER..... <i>or</i> ó..... ó	HOWEVER, <i>yet for all that</i> , sin embargo, con todo
	NOT ONLY..... <i>but</i> no sólo..... sino

NAY además
 NEITHER tampoco, ni
 OF COURSE por supuesto
 OR ELSE ó de lo contrario, ó bien
 PROVIDED *that* con tal que
 SO THAT de suerte que
 SINCE ya que
 SCARCE, *scarcely, hardly* apenas.
 SO así, así es que
 SO *soon as; as soon as* luégo que,
 tan pronto como
 SUPPOSING supuesto que
 THAT que, para que
 THOUGH aunque
 TO WIT á saber

TILL, *until* hasta que
 TOO, *also* también
 THEREFORE por tanto
 THEN entónces
 THUS así, de este modo.
 UNLESS á ménos que
 VIZ, *that is to say, i. e.* es decir
 WELL *then* pues bien, con que
 WHEN cuando
 WHETHER sea, sea que
 WHILST miéntras que
 WHY, *what for?* por qué?
 WHETHER..... *or* sea que..... ó que
 YET aún, con todo

317. AND. Puede suprimirse en inglés cuando varios adjetivos preceden á un sustantivo: *this prince was a weak licentious tyrant* este príncipe era un tirano débil y licencioso.

318. Hace las veces de nuestro *á* delante de un infinitivo regido de otro verbo: *I shall go and see her in a few days* iré á verla dentro de unos dias.

319. AS. Como correlativa de *so* hace las veces de *that* que, y rige al verbo que sigue en infinitivo: *he is so lazy as to remain in bed till eleven o'clock* ó *that he remains in.....* es tan holgazán, que se queda en la cama hasta las once.

FRASES. *As he was at the door* estando á la puerta; *as they were walking* yendo ellos paseando; *as it is* así como así; *as big again* dos veces tan grueso; *all such as went there* todos los que iban allí.

320. BUT. Cuando significa siñó, no más que, no llevá el verbo otra negacion: *I do it but for you* lo hago sólo por V.

FRASES. *Be but ruled by me* siga V. sin embargo mi consejo; *but a little* un poco solamente; *I cannot but go* no puedo dejar de ir; *he is but just gone* no ha hecho más que salir; *but for me* si no fuera por mí; *the last but one* el penúltimo; *but a while since* hace poco; *but just now* inmediatamente; *but if* á ménos que; *we were all there but you* todos estábamos allí excepto V.

321. IF, WHETHER. Aunque ambas significan *si*, tienen un uso muy diferente. *If* es condicional, y equivale á con tal que, aunque: *if you wait for me, we shall go out together* si me espera V. saldremos juntos; *even if he should say so himself I would not believe it* áun cuando lo dijese él mismo no lo creería.

Whether designa duda, y va seguido de *or no* expreso ó sobrentendido: *resolve whether you will or no* resuelve si quieres ó no: *she does not know whether her mother is at home* no sabe si su madre está en casa (ó no).

FRASES. *If it please God* si Dios quiere; *as if one should say* como si se dijese; *they look as if they had deserted* tienen cara de haber desertado; *with ifs and ands* con dimes y directes; *without ifs or buts* sin síis ni peros; *if you but take my part* con tal que tome V. mi partido; *I will do it if I should die for it* lo haré áun cuando hubiese de costarme la vida; *if it be only for a moment* áun cuando no sea más que por un momento.

322. SO. Á veces se usa con el significado de con tal que: *so the doctrine be wholesome and edifying* con tal que la doctrina sea buena y edificante; *so he be but a citizen* con tal que sea ciudadano.

323. THAN. Algunas veces, usando un giro vicioso, precede al comparativo en vez de seguirle; *a family than which there is not a greater* una familia tal como no hay otra mayor.

En tal caso, si el relativo que sigue á *than* se refiere á personas, debe traducirse por *whom* y no por *who*, aunque sea nominativo:

*Which when Beelzebub perceived, than whom
Satan except, none higher sat, with grave
Aspect he rose.....*

Lo que percibido por Belzebu, aquel sobre el que no hay otro más alto fuera de Satan, se levantó con grave continente.....

324. QUE. Por la importancia de esta palabra nos ha parecido oportuno dar aquí las diversas equivalencias que tiene en inglés :

1.º Entre dos verbos, ó se suprime ó se traduce por *that*: *he said (that) he would come* dijo que vendria.

2.º La expresion *más que* se traduce *but* ú *only*; *I gave him but two crowns* no le he dado más que dos coronas; *he has only two shellings to spend a day* no tiene más que dos chelines para gastar en el dia.

3.º Seguido de adjetivo por *how*, y de sustantivo por *how much* ó *how many* (qué de) segun sea singular ó plural: *how generous you are!* qué generoso es V. !; *how much money that man has spent in his life!* qué de dinero ha gastado ese hombre en su vida!

4.º A qué ó por qué interrogativo es *why*: *why did you not say so* á qué no lo decia V.?

5.º Designando duda, ó sea seguido de *o*, es *whether*: *whether he kill Cassio or Cassio him* que él mate á Casio ó Casio á él.

6.º Seguido de *por* ó *por muy* con adjetivo es *as*: *amiable as she is* por amable que sea; *poor as he is* por pobre que sea.

7.º En sentido de cuando se traduce por *when* ó se suprime en inglés: *the day (when) he comes to see me* el dia que venga á verme; *the day I met him* el dia que le encontré.

8.º En sentido de *porque* es *because*: *if I did not go to see you, it is because I was too busy* si no fui á ver á V. es que (porque) estaba muy ocupado.

9.º Despues de los verbos que significan *temer* ó de las expresiones *por temor que*, *por miedo que*, ó *ménos que*, se suprime: *I am afraid he will do it* temo que lo haga.

10. Despues de *muy otro*, enteramente otro, por *than*: *she is quite other than you have described her* es muy otra de lo que V. la ha pintado.

11. Cuando está por *para que es that: give me some paper that I may write my note* dame un poco de papel para que escriba el billete.

<i>to confide</i>	confiar	<i>meat</i>	carne
<i>astonished</i>	admirado	<i>turn</i>	turno, vez
<i>powerful</i>	poderoso	<i>never mind</i>	no importa
<i>to fear</i>	temer	<i>to rattle</i>	hacer sonar
<i>knave</i>	pillo	<i>nostril</i>	nariz
<i>angry</i>	incomodado	<i>to tickle</i>	agradar
<i>uncivil</i>	descortés	<i>by-standers</i>	circunstantes
<i>chimney-sweeper</i>	deshollinador	<i>payment</i>	pago
<i>to stop</i>	pararse	<i>agitado</i>	<i>agitated</i>
<i>to regale</i>	regalar	<i>dejar</i>	<i>to leave off</i>
<i>nose</i>	nariz	<i>bajo</i>	<i>low</i>
<i>smell</i>	olor	<i>divino</i>	<i>divine</i>
<i>savoury</i>	sabroso	<i>pasion</i>	<i>passion</i>
<i>taste</i>	gusto, manjar	<i>conversacion</i>	<i>conversation</i>
<i>to take hold</i>	agarrar	<i>satisfecho</i>	<i>pleased</i>
<i>demand</i>	exigencia	<i>responder de</i>	<i>to answer for</i>
<i>happening</i>	aconteciendo	<i>fiar</i>	<i>to credit</i>

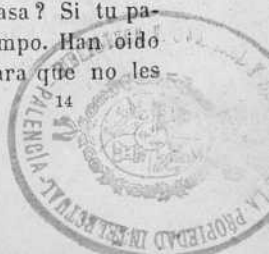
Tema 45.

Take care that your pupil employ his time well, and see that dinner be on the table at five o'clock. You may confide in him, because I believe him to be a man of honour. If he is not ill, why does he send for the physician? I don't know; but if you see him, tell him to come: if you knew how ill I am, you would not be astonished to find me in bed. Though they were more powerful than they are, we should not fear them. He is either a knave or a fool: do not you do so either. No, sir; neither he nor I are capable of it. Do you think him so uncivil as to be angry with you? If he were a little more amiable, he would have many friends. Would to God (*that*) it were so. Be that as it may, I give you a month's time that you may have the means of paying me.

A CURIOUS DECISION. A poor chimney-sweeper, who had not money enough to buy himself a dinner, stopped one day before an eating-house, and remained regaling his nose with the smell of the victuals (*manjares*). The master of the shop told him several times to go

away, but the sweep could not leave the savoury smell, though unable to purchase the taste. At last the cook came out of the shop, and taking hold of him, declared that, as he had been feeding upon the smell of his victuals, he should not go away without paying half the price of a dinner. The poor little fellow said that he neither could nor would pay, and that he would ask the first person who should pass, whether it was not an unreasonable and unjust demand. A police officer happening to pass (*pasando por casualidad*) at the moment, the case was referred to him. He said to the sweep, my boy, as you have been regaling one of your senses with the odour of this man's meat, it is but just you should make him some recompense; therefore you shall, in your turn, regale one of his senses, which appears more insatiable than your appetite. How much money have you? I have but two pence, in all the world, sir, and I must buy me some bread. Never mind, said the officer, take your two pence between your hands; now rattle them loudly. The boy did so, and the officer, turning to the cook said, Now, sir, I think he has paid you: the smell of your victuals regaled his nostrils; the sound of his money has tickled your ears. The decision gave more satisfaction to the by-standers than to the cook, but it was the only payment he could obtain.

Es preciso que los hijos sean amables para con sus padres, puesto que la ley natural y la ley divina lo requieren así. Ha comprado usted pan? No he comprado ni pan ni vino, pero he comprado muy buena carne. Escriba V. pronto sus temas, si no será V. castigado cuando su padre vuelva del teatro. Cuánto tiempo hace que están ustedes estudiando inglés? No hace más que tres meses; y sin embargo, sabemos ya traducir la *Historia de Inglaterra*; y con todo, nuestro profesor dice que somos muy holgazanes. Como la mar es agitada por los vientos, así (*el*) hombre es agitado por sus pasiones. Conocen VV. á esa señorita? Sí; aunque no es muy hermosa, es con todo muy amable. Ese jóven nunca aprenderá las matemáticas; sea que no quiera, ó que no pueda, ó ambas cosas, no hace ningun progreso; por tanto, hará mejor dejarlo; cuando estaba en París no era tan holgazan como ahora. Quiere V. ir á mi casa? Si tu padre está allí, no iré; sin embargo, iria si tuviese tiempo. Han oido ustedes su conversacion? No; hablaban muy bajo para que no les



oyésemos; además de eso, la puerta estaba cerrada; de suerte que no pudimos oír una sola palabra. Has visto á la Baronesa? Sí; ha quedado (*was*) muy satisfecha con el vestido; pero aunque me respondiese V. del pago, no le fiaría nada: ya que V. me ha hablado francamente, le diré la verdad; pues bien, en caso que esa señora quiera cambiar el vestido, aguarde V. hasta que yo haya recibido dinero de mi padre. Se hará como V. quiere.

LECCION XLVI.

INTERJECCIONES.—VERBOS COMPUESTOS.

325. Ninguna particularidad presenta el inglés con respecto al uso de las interjecciones, cuya aplicacion exige solamente un conocimiento exacto de la siguiente

Lista de las principales interjecciones.

<i>Oh what pleasure!</i>	Ay qué gozo! qué gusto!
<i>Ah! ah! ah!</i>	Ah! ah! ah!
<i>Well right!</i>	Bien! bueno! perfectamente!
<i>Thank God!</i>	Gracias á Dios!
<i>God bless me!</i>	Válgame Dios!
<i>Oh! oh!</i>	Oh! ay!
<i>Eh! hey! hem!</i>	Ea! hola! he! hem!
<i>Good God! my God!</i>	Dios mio! Jesus mio!
<i>Come on!</i>	Vamos! andando!
<i>Cheer up! go on!</i>	¡Animo! adelante!
<i>Alas!</i>	Ay de mí!
<i>Well done!</i>	Bien hecho! bravo!
<i>Hurra! hurra!</i>	Viva! viva!
<i>Hold your tongue!</i>	Calla! punto en boca!
<i>Murder! murder!</i>	Oh, le matan! al asesino!
<i>Look! there he goes!</i>	Eh! allá va!
<i>Long live the king!</i>	Viva el Rey!
<i>Fye! fye upon! pshaw!</i>	Bah! quita! qué vergüenza!
<i>A fine thing!</i>	Qué bello! qué bella cosa!
<i>How-good it is!</i>	Oh, qué bueno!
<i>By God!</i>	Voto á!....
<i>Damn!</i>	Caramba!
<i>Damn me!</i>	Voto á, si!....
<i>Oh! oh!</i>	Oh! oh! hola, hola!

<i>Zounds!</i>	Por vida de!.....
<i>What!</i>	Qué! cómo!
<i>Take care! beware!</i>	Cuidado! atencion!
<i>Hust! hist! silence!</i>	Chiton! calla! silencio!
<i>Begone! away!</i>	Anda! afuera!
<i>Enough! enough!</i>	Basta! basta!
<i>Softly! slowly!</i>	Despacio! poco á poco!
<i>Encore! again!</i>	Otra vez! que se repita!
<i>Heavens!</i>	Cielos! Virgen Santisima!
<i>What a pity!</i>	Qué lástima!
<i>Bravo! well done!</i>	Bravo! bien hecho!
<i>Be quiet!</i>	Chiton! no moverse!
<i>Hear! hear!</i>	Oid! oid! atencion!

326. Las expresiones *no es cierto? no es así? no es verdad?* y otras análogas con que nos cercioramos de una cosa, se designan en inglés poniendo el auxiliar de la frase, ó el *do* si no hay auxiliar, en la forma inversa á la en que se halla la oracion; es decir, afirmativa si aquélla es negativa, y viceversa: *you are warm, are you not?* usted tiene calor, no es verdad?

Ella volverá pronto, no es así?	<i>She will soon come back, will she not? (ó won't she?)</i>
Usted no ha escrito todavía á su padre; lo ha hecho V.?	<i>You have not yet written to your father; have you?</i>

327. El uso correcto de los VERBOS COMPUESTOS es uno de los puntos que más dificultades ofrece en la lengua inglesa. Generalmente los verbos compuestos se forman de otro simple y un adverbio que le sigue: así de *to go* ir; *to go out* salir; *to go up* subir; *to go in* entrar; *to go down* bajar; de *to look* mirar, *to look for* buscar.

328. Si el objeto ó complemento es un pronombre, precede á la partícula: *do you pick up the book?* recoge V. el libro?; *I pick it up* le recojo; *let me pick up the book* deja que yo coja el libro; *let her pick it up* deja que ella lo coja.

Fórmanse tambien compuestos con prefijos ó partículas que se anteponen á un verbo simple; pero el uso de éstos no ofrece dificultad alguna: así de *come* venir, *become* llegar á ser;

de *understand* entender, *misunderstand* equivocarse; de *take* tomar, *partake* participar.

Los ejemplos que ponemos á continuacion ilustrarán al alumno mejor que todas las explicaciones que pudiéramos darle.

Lista alfabética de ejemplos sobre los verbos compuestos.

<i>Do you abide by what you say?</i>	se atiene V. á lo que dice?
<i>I always abide by your orders</i>	yo observo siempre sus órdenes de usted.
<i>I will account to you for that business</i>	yo le daré razon de aquel negocio.
<i>We act up to our principles</i>	obramos de acuerdo con nuestros principios.
<i>Do you agree to what I say?</i>	conviene V. en lo que yo digo?
<i>We always agree in opinion</i>	siempre somos de un mismo parecer.
<i>We agreed for the price</i>	Acordamos el precio.
<i>Who accounts for your conduct?</i>	quién responde de su conducta de usted?
<i>Do not ask him for any thing</i>	no le pida V. nada.
<i>Every body asks after or about you</i>	todos preguntan por V.
<i>Bale up this cloth</i>	enfarde V. este paño.
<i>Have you barred up the door?</i>	ha asegurado V. la puerta?
<i>They are bawling after you</i>	le están llamando á V. á grandes gritos.
<i>You are a proof against misfortune</i>	usted es capaz de resistir al infortunio.
<i>He is out with every body</i>	está reñido con todos.
<i>The second act is over</i>	se concluyó el segundo acto.
<i>When we looked for him, he was off with himself</i>	cuando le buscamos ya se habia escabullido.
<i>Are you not yet up?</i>	todavía no se ha levantado V.?
<i>I cannot say what o'clock it is, because my watch is down</i>	no puedo decir qué hora es, porque el reloj se ha parado.
<i>I am about an interesting business</i>	estoy ocupado en un negocio interesante.
<i>He is on and off</i>	tan pronto quiere como no.
<i>To bear up to a ship</i>	transportar á un navío.
<i>I bore away the first prize</i>	yo me llevé el primer premio.
<i>You bear too hard upon me</i>	usted me trata con demasiada dureza.
<i>The vessel is bearing away</i>	el buque va marchando.
<i>That fleet bears into this port</i>	aquella escuadra se dirige á este puerto.
<i>Bear off</i>	escápese V.

I can't bear with your bad temper

They were beaten back

I could bear up against misfortune

I have beaten him down

*It is necessary that you beat down
the price*

They are beating to arms

We have beaten them in and out

You shall beat out your brains

*You must beat up the quarters of the
enemy*

*If I am not mistaken, he is beating
about some employ*

Bind up your wound

Do not blab out the secret

He blew out his brains

*The wind has blown down many
trees*

The trees begin to branch out

*There is no motive to break out into
a passion*

*Do not break in upon our conversa-
tion.*

*We were obliged to break down the
gates*

He broke off his discourse

He broke out of jail.

My hands break out every winter

To break open a door

The match has been broken up

Do not break open the box

This was brought about in 1830

*I rewarded those who brought me
off*

*You must endeavour to bring him
over to your side*

*She brought on herself the hatred
of all*

You shall bring up the rear

*You are always bringing up new
fashions*

He is a well-brought-up child

*He pretends to bring down every
body*

Begin to bundle up your clothes

You shall bring forth a male child

The candle is burnt out

no puedo aguantar su carácter de
usted.

fueron rechazados.

pude hacer frente á la desgracia.

le he ganado.

es menester que rebaje usted el
precio.

están tocando generala.

los hemos hecho entrar y salir á
palos.

usted se romperá la cabeza.

deben VV. atacar los cuarteles eno-
migos.

si no me engaño, está pretendien-
do algun empleo.

véndese V. la herida.

no divulgue V. el secreto.

se levantó la tapa de los sesos.

el viento ha derribado muchos ár-
boles.

los árboles empiezan á echar ra-
mas.

no hay motivo para encolerizarse.

no nos interrumpa V. la conversa-
cion.

nos vimos obligados á echar abajo
las puertas.

acabó sin concluir el discurso.

se escapó de la cárcel.

cada invierno se me forman saba-
ñones en las manos.

descerrajar una puerta.

se ha deshecho el casamiento.

no rompan VV. la caja.

esto se efectuó en 1830.

recompensé á los que me salvaron.

deben VV. tratar de atraérselo á
su partido.

ella se acarreó el ódio de todos.

usted mandará la retaguardia.

usted inventa siempre nuevas mo-
das.

es un niño bien educado.

pretende humillar á todos.

empiece V. á ompaquetar sus ves-
tidos.

parirá V. un niño.

se ha acabado la vela.

*If the war breaks out again
This employ brings him in a thousand pounds a year
He breathed his last in my arms*

*That brought him back to his duty
Call in your brother
They called in that law
He called back my servant
You must not call back your word
He called out to me to come back*

*They called me up too late
Call up the bearer of the letter
After the examination, I was called down.
I shall call on you to-morrow
He will call you to account
He has called off my attention
I don't care about that*

*They carry on the business
The sickness will carry him off
Have you cast up the account?
He has cast up his dinner
Don't be cast down, friend
He called off his dogs
They chattered out a way
They cheered up their companion
He cleared away the rubbish
The thing must be cleared up
The weather begins to clear up
The sore begins to close up
The sky was clouded over
How did you come off?
Had he money, he would come off
I don't know how he has come by it*

*He came in when I was going out
We came to an understanding
Come up; come down; come out
Come in, sir; come along with me*

*He came short in his business
The dispute came to blows
She covered over her design
He counts up his gains and losses*

*He crows down his brother
He cries up his goods
I have not cried down your goods*

si la guerra estalla otra vez.
este destino le vale mil libras esterlinas al año.

dió las últimas boqueadas en mis brazos.

eso le hizo volver á su deber.

dí á tu hermano que entre.

revocaron aquella ley.

hizo volver á mi criado.

no debe V. desdecirse.

él me dijo en alta voz que volviese.

me despertaron demasiado tarde.

haz subir al dador de la carta.

después de examinado, me hicieron bajar.

mañana pasaré á su casa de V.

él le hará á V. dar cuenta.

él me ha distraído.

eso no me importa; no se me da nada.

continúan los negocios.

la enfermedad le arrebatará.

ha sumado V. la cuenta?

él ha vomitado lo que ha comido.

no esté V. apesadumbrado, amigo.

él llamó sus perros.

señalaron un medio.

animaron á su compañero.

él removió los escombros.

es preciso aclarar el asunto.

el tiempo empieza á despejarse.

la llaga empieza á sanarse.

el cielo estaba todo cubierto.

cómo ha salido V.?

si tuviera dinero, ya se escaparía.
no sé por qué medio lo ha conseguido.

él entró cuando yo salía.

nos entendimos.

suba V., baje V., salga V.

entre V., señor; venga V. conmigo.

perdió en los negocios.

la disputa paró en golpes.

ella encubrió su designio.

él calcula sus pérdidas y ganancias.

él acobarda ó apoca á su hermano.

él va alabando sus mercancías.

no he desacreditado vuestros géneros.

*He cries him up for a saint
He culled out the best
I have cut down those trees
Who will cut up the turkey?
I cut him short when, etc.
They were going to cut off his head
They wanted to cut off our retreat
His words brought or called in to
light
He was cut off by an early death
We were cast away near that cape
The enemies were cut to pieces*

*He cut down all before him
I differ with you in that
I shall dish up the meat
He did away the objection
She dotes upon him
He drew up the writing
He has drawn away all my friends
He drew upon or on himself his
people's hatred*

*One misfortune draws on another
I drew them asunder
I was drawn in, without, etc.
He drew back a little
The army was drawn up or out
He drank off his glass
She drinks out of a glass
We drove back the enemy
He dropped in at dinner-time
The physician says he drops away
daily*

*Dry up your tears, friend
He ate up the hen, without, etc.
She fainted away at seeing him
I fell in with a friend of mine*

*A spark flew out of the pile
He was going to fall from his word
He fell in my way unexpectedly
It fell out in the year 1800
He fell away every day
When the army fell back.....
His friends began to fall off*

We fell short of our hopes

*He fell in love with her
He fended off the blow
We fetched down their pride
They fought out the battle*

le quiere hacer pasar por santo.
él escogió los mejores.
yo he cortado aquellos árboles.
quién quiere trinchar el pavo?
le corté la palabra cuando, etc.
iban á cortarle la cabeza.
querian cortarnos la retirada.
sus palabras lo manifestaron á las
claras.

le arrebató una temprana muerte.
nafragamos cerca de aquel cabo.
los enemigos fueron hechos peda-
zos ó destrozados.

todo lo arrolló.
en esto no estoy con V.
pondré la carne en los platos.
hizo desaparecer la objecion.
ella le ama con exceso.
él extendió la escritura.
él se ha llevado todos mis amigos.
él se acarreó el ódio de su pueblo.

una desgracia no viene jamas sola.
yo los separé.

me metieron á mí, sin que....
él retrocedió un poco.
el ejército estaba formado.
él apuró su vaso.
ella bebe en un vaso.
rechazamos al enemigo.
él se dejó ver á la hora de comer.
dice el médico que va decayendo
cada dia.

enjuta tus lágrimas, amigo.
comió toda la gallina, sin.....
ella se desmayó al verle.
encontré casualmente á un amigo
mio.

una chispa se desprendió de la pira.
él iba á faltar á su palabra.
tropecé con él inesperadamente.
aconteció en el año 1800.
él iba decayendo cada dia.
cuando el ejército se replegó.....
sus amigos empezaban á abando-
narle.

nos vimos frustrados en nuestras
esperanzas.

se enamoró de ella.
él rechazó el golpe.
humillamos su orgullo.
decidieron ó acabaron la batalla.

*Have you found out the secret?
He always finds fault with it
They are going to fit out a ship
We fell out about a thing of nothing
They flung him out of the house
He followed up his blows
That fell to my lot
He then fell under his master's dis-
pleasure.*

*When did you get up?
He got over the difficulty
We got safely over the river*

*I told him to get away
I know what is going forward
I got it by heart
He got in, she got out, I got down
He got away from me in the crowd*

*He gets on in his studies
I got rid of him at last
How have you got in, out, up,
down?
If I get through it....*

*He is getting better, worse, on, etc.
He got above me in that
I got clear of or free from him*

*He got before me in that
He gave up his claim
He gave up his employment
He gave it over to his brother
He is given over by the physicians
He gave up the ghost
He gave himself up to bad company
He gave out the news
Given under my hand and seal
The mistress gave out the work
He gave me back the money
The trees grow up apace
The child grows up
He grew rich, poor, fat, foolish,
proud, good, etc.*

*It begins to grow into fashion
It began to grow out of fashion
It grows dark; let's be off
He has a mind to go to law
We shall soon go on shore
When we got under sail
Go on with your exercise*

ha descubierto V. el secreto?
siempre le encuentra faltas.
van á equipar un navío.
reñimos por nada.
le sacaron de la casa.
él redobló sus golpes.
esta suerte me tocó.
entónces incurrió en el desagrado
de su amo.
cuándo se levantó V.?
él venció la dificultad.
pasamos en salvo á la otra parte
del río.
le dije que se largase.
ya sé lo que pasa.
lo aprendí de memoria.
él entró, ella salió, yo bajé.
se me escapó entre la muchedum-
bre.
él adelanta en sus estudios.
al fin me deshice de él.
cómo has logrado entrar, salir, su-
bir, bajar?
si salgo con ello ó si lo llevo á
cabo.
él mejora, empeora, medra, etc.
él me aventajó en aquello.
me libré de él ó me desembaracé
de él.
me cogió la delantera en eso.
él renunció á su demanda.
hizo dimision de su empleo.
él lo cedió á su hermano.
los médicos le han desahuciado.
él murió ó exhaló el último aliento.
él se entregó á mala compañía.
él hizo correr la voz.
sellado y firmado de mi mano.
la señora repartió las labores.
él me volvió el dinero.
los árboles crecen muchísimo.
el niño va creciendo.
se enriqueció, empobreció, engor-
dó, enloqueció, se envaneció, se
enmendó, etc.
ya empieza á adoptarse por moda.
empezó á dejar de ser moda.
oscurece; marchémonos.
hace ánimo de pleitear.
luégo bajarémos á tierra.
cuando nos pusimos á la vela.
siga V. con su tema.

*He is gone off
I heard from him last week*

*He would not hear me out
His wound heals up
I help her down stairs
He would help me up
Help me out of this scrape
I shall help myself; eat on
I hit upon the man I wanted*

*He hit out the way
He held by me in the whole
Does he hold on or out yet?
She held out her hand
He held up, down, out, his head
He has imposed on you
I shall inquire about or into it
He inches out his money
I kept them asunder
I can't keep up with you*

*They kept off the enemy
You kept up the farce
Keep on, I tell you
He kicked up a dispute
The war was kindled up
They want to knock in the door
I knocked him down
He knocked off their pay
That will keep a check on him
He kept out of their sight for some
time*

*She laughed out at such folly
He launched out or forth in my
praise*

*He lays it down as a maxim
He lays up money
He lays by a certain sum
They laid in their provisions
She lays out a great deal of money
He lays on them
I laid hold of him by the neck
I lay hold of the present opportunity
I shall lay the plan before them
He was laid aside through envy
That laid my reason astray
I shall lay open the truth
There was none but laid down their
life for so good a king
He lays about to get it*

ha quebrado.
tuve cartas ó noticias de él la se-
mana pasada.
él no quiso oirme hasta el fin.
su herida va curándose.
la ayudo á bajar la escalera.
él queria ayudarme á subir.
ayúdeme V. á salir de este paso.
yo me serviré; vaya V. comiendo.
yo dí con el hombre que necesi-
taba.
él acertó el camino.
él me apoyó en todo.
continúa ó sigue él todavía?
ella tendió la mano.
levantó, bajó, sacó la cabeza.
él le ha estafado á V.
yo me informaré de ello.
él va ahorrandó el dinero.
yo les tenía separados.
no puedo andar con V., no le al-
canzo.

tenian el enemigo á raya.
usted sostenia la broma.
continúa, yo te lo digo.
él suscitó una disputa.
la guerra se encendió.
quieren forzar la puerta.
yo le aterré, dí en tierra con él.
él les quitó el sueldo.
eso le contendrá ó le tendrá á raya.
se tuvo alejado de su vista algun
tiempo.
rióse á carcajadas de tal locura.
él se extendió en alabanza mia.

él lo establece como máxima.
va acopiando dinero.
él pone aparte cierta cantidad.
hicieron sus provisiones.
ella gasta muchísimo dinero.
él los harta de palos.
le agarré por el pescuezo.
me aprovecho de esta ocasion.
les manifestaré el plan.
fué arrinconado por envidia.
eso me descarrió la razon.
yo expondré la verdad.
no habia ninguno que no se sacri-
ficase por tan buen rey.
hace cuantos esfuerzos puede para
obtenerlo.

*She lay in last week
He lay down on the grass
He lay in wait for them
I let the dog loose upon you*

*Who hast let off the gun?
I let him in, out, up, down, etc.*

*She lifts up her head
He lights on a fitter person
You must lock up your dog
He was going to lock me out*

*He has locked up his trunk
He longs for or after it
You must look after my horse
I shall look into the matter
He is looking out for a wife
She was looking out of the window
He was looking for you
You must look to what he says
If he does not leave off such things*

*We shall never lay down our arms
The vessels were laid up in the port*

*He was let into all the secrets
You cannot look at or upon her
They made light of me
He has made over the business to me
He made amends for his faults
Who is able to make it out?
Who has made out the account?
He will make up his loss
She made up to my brother
The thing is made up of, etc.
I made sure of the blow
I made free with your name*

*He made away with himself
I made haste to tell him, etc.
We made for cape Saint Vincent*

*I made head against them
We made it up by means of, etc.
He made off as soon as he saw me
I shall make good my word
Make yourself easy about that*

*They nailed up the cannon
You must note it down*

parió la semana pasada.
él se tendió sobre la hierba.
les armaba asechanzas.
yo desaté ó solté el perro contra usted.
quién ha disparado el fusil?
le dejé entrar, salir, subir, bajar, etc.

ella levanta ó alza la cabeza.
él da con un sujeto más apto.
es preciso que V. encierre su perro.
iba á cerrarme la puerta (para que no entrase).

ha cerrado su cofre con llave.
él lo apetece ó suspira por ello.
tendrá V. que cuidar de mi caballo.
yo examinaré ó indagaré el asunto.
está buscando esposa ó mujer.
ella miraba por la ventana.
él iba en busca de V.
usted ha de atender á lo que dice él.
si no se abstiene de semejantes cosas.

nunca depondrémos las armas.
los buques estaban desarmados en el puerto.

se le inició en todos los secretos.
no puede usted mirarla.
hicieron poco caso de mí.
me ha cedido á mí los negocios.
reparó ó compensó sus faltas.
quién lo podrá acertar?
quién ha sacado la cuenta?
él reparará su pérdida.
se acercó á mi hermano.
la cosa está compuesta de.....
yo aseguré el golpe.
me he tomado la libertad de mencionar nuestro nombre.

él se quitó la vida.
me apresuré á decirle.....
llevamos rumbo para el cabo de San Vicente.

yo le hice frente.
lo compusimos por medio de.....
se largó luégo que me vió.
yo cumpliré mi palabra.
descanse V. acerca de esto, ó no tenga V. cuidado.
clavaron el cañon.
es preciso que lo ponga V. por escrito.

He packed up his clothes
I will not part with him
He parted with his horse
I have past that over
He patched up the matter
He paid down his money
Who paid for the music?
I'll pay him home for it
I have penned it down
He was penned up by the troops
He has picked out the best
He picked up a purse full of gold
You pine at the loss
We should not point at any one

I shall point out the means
He pops in and out
She pines after a husband
He plastered over the affair
You must pluck off its feathers
He was going to pluck out my eyes
Who has plucked up the plant?
He is always poring over books
A lampoon has been posted up
May heaven pour down its blessing!
He poured the wine out of the bottle
The people poured out of the town
To pour one's forces into the enemy's country
He preaches up sedition
He prevailed on me to come

He was so puffed up, that.....
He pulled away his hand
Pull off your hat, stockings, boots, etc.

He has pulled up a tree
She pulled out his eyes
He pulled out his purse, watch, etc.
The houses were to be pulled down
He has put away his servant
We put in at that island
Have you put down that?
He put forth a proposal
He has put off his voyage
I put on my hat, coat, shirt, etc.

His eyes were put out
He has put out his money
Who has put out the candle?
He put the prisoners to death

empaquetó sus vestidos.
 no quiero separarme de él.
 él se deshizo de su caballo.
 lo he disimulado ó descuidado.
 él arregló el negocio.
 pagó en dinero contante.
 quién pagó la música?
 le pagaré en la misma moneda.
 yo he tomado nota de ello.
 se hallaba cercado por la tropa.
 él ha escogido los mejores.
 él recogió un bolsillo lleno de oro.
 usted llora ó siente la pérdida.
 no debemos señalar con el dedo á nadie.
 yo indicaré ó señalaré los medios.
 entra y sale súbitamente.
 ella suspira por marido.
 él tapó ó zanjó la cuestion.
 Será preciso que V. lo desplume.
 él iba á arrancarme los ojos.
 quién ha desarraigado la planta?
 siempre está mirando en los libros.
 se ha fijado un pasquin.
 que el cielo derrame su bendición!
 echó el vino de la botella.
 la gente salía en masa de la ciudad.
 lanzar sus tropas al país enemigo.

él excita á la sedicion.
 me persuadió ó me redujo á que viniese.
 estaba tan hinchado ó hueco, que.....
 él retiró la mano.
 quitate el sombrero, medias, botas, etc.
 él ha arrancado un árbol.
 ella le sacó los ojos.
 él sacó su bolsillo, reloj, etc.
 las casas se habian de derribar.
 él ha despedido á su criado.
 abordamos en aquella isla.
 ha anotado V. aquello?
 él hizo una proposicion.
 ha suspendido su viaje.
 me pongo el sombrero, la casaca, la camisa, etc.
 le sacaron los ojos.
 él ha puesto su dinero á interes.
 quién ha apagado la vela?
 él dió muerte á los prisioneros.

The inhabitants were put to the sword

Put out that word, t's obsolete

He put up the game

He puts up what he gains

I can't put up with such a usage

We put up at the first house we met

I will put him in mind of it

They pitched their camps

He would not be put off

He put on mourning

He plays on several instruments

He plays upon you and me

Have you read out or over the book?

Read out, that you may be heard

Read on

He rides on horseback

The vessel rides at anchor

He will rig out the ship

I shall root out that ill habit

Let them root up the trees

I roused up the sluggard

I must rub off the rust

It serves to rub up the memory

He ruled over the rest

The ship will run aground

He ran away with my daughter

He ran into debt, and could not pay

The barrel ran over

He ran out his property in a short time

He has run up my account

He ran down my goods

The letter ran thus

He ran up, he ran out, he ran down

He has scraped up some money

Scratch out that word

She scratched out his eyes

He searched me out, or he searched after me or he sought me out, or he sought after me.

To seek after an office

I have sent away my servant

He has served out his time

Who will serve out the provisions?

The dinner is served up

I will serve him in his kind

los habitantes fueron pasados á cuchillo.

borre V. aquella palabra, que es anticuada.

él levantó la caza.

él pone aparte lo que gana.

no puedo tolerar tal tratamiento.

nos apeamos en la primera casa que encontramos.

se lo haré presente, ó se lo recordaré.

asentaron sus reales.

no quiso quedar suspenso.

se vistió de luto.

él toca varios instrumentos.

él se burla de V. y de mí.

ha acabado V. de leer el libro?

lea V. alto para que le oigan.

continúe V. leyendo.

él va á caballo.

el barco está surto.

él equipará el navio.

cortaré de raíz ese mal hábito.

que arranquen los árboles.

yo desperté al dormilon.

es preciso que yo quite el moho.

sirve para aguzar la memoria.

él dominaba á los demas.

el navio varará.

él me robó la hija.

contrajo deudas y no las pudo pagar.

el barril rebosó.

él dispó sus bienes en poco tiempo.

me ha aumentado la cuenta.

él menospreciaba mis géneros.

la carta decia así.

subió, salió, bajó corriendo.

él ha juntado algun dinero.

borre V. aquella palabra.

ella le sacó los ojos.

él anduvo en busca de mi paradero, anduvo indagando, etc.

pretender un empleo.

yo he despedido á mi criado.

él ha acabado su aprendizaje.

quién quiere repartir los comestibles?

la comida está ya servida.

le pagaré en la misma moneda.

*That will not serve my turn
I set about it, but could do nothing
Those who sat on his trial, were
very severe
You can't set it going*

*He was set aside for something
The cold will soon set in
Set that apart till you get more.*

Set that down in your book

*He set off, or he set out
He set sail on monday last*

*They set the house on fire
A simple dress sets off or out beauty*

*I set him at defiance
He sets up for a poet
He set up a shop in New street
They set up the tree of liberty
They set on us with such fury.....
He set on the mob
He shut up his shop
I had her shut up in a convent
He sat up in the bed
I sat up last night
Her company makes the cares of
the world sit easy on me
Let us sit down to table.
He will sit upon your skirts.
He slipped away from us
He slipped down from the window
I slipped in to her room
She slipped out when she saw me
She slipped out some words
I slipped on my shoes, boots, etc.
He sneaked off or away*

*He has spell out the sense of that
inscription*

*He was spent with toil
Candles spend fast in a current of
air.*

*He spins out the time
They spirit up the insurgents
You spur him on to that
We spy out others' faults
He sunk under the weight of his ca-
lamities
I stood by, when he said so*

eso no bastará para mí.
me puse á hacerlo, pero no pude.
los que sentenciaban su causa eran
muy rígidos.
usted no puede ponerlo en movi-
miento.

fué exonerado por alguna cosa.
pronto entrará el frío.
ponga V. eso aparte hasta que
gane más.

ponga V. esto por escrito en su
libro.

él partió, ó se puso en camino.
él se puso á la vela el domingo
pasado.

pegaron fuego á la casa.
un vestido sencillo adorna la bel-
dad.

yo le desafié ó le provoqué.
la echa de poeta.

puso tienda en la calle Nueva.
plantaron el árbol de la libertad.
nos atacaron con tanta furia.....
excitó al populacho.

él levantó la tienda.
la hice encerrar en un convento.
él se incorporó en la cama.

velé anoche, ó no dormí anoche.
su compañía hace que me sean lle-
vaderos los males de la vida.

Sentémonos á la mesa.
No le dejará ni á sol ni á sombra.
él se nos escapó callandito.

él se escurrió por la ventana.
entré callandito en su cuarto.

se escurrió al verme.
se le escaparon algunas palabras.
me puse los zapatos, botas, etc.
se fué sin decir nada, ó á la fran-
cesa.

ha descifrado el sentido de esa
inscripción.

estaba rendido de fatiga.
las velas se consumen rápidamente
en una corriente de aire.

él va alargando el tiempo.
excitan á los insurgentes.
usted le estimula ó le incita á ello.
notamos las faltas ajenas.
sucumbió al peso de sus calami-
dades.

yo estaba presente cuando él lo dijo

I shall stand by you, sir
A letter sometimes stands for a word

We then stood off
Stand out of my way
I stand to my word
That stands with your interest
Things which start from nature's
common rules

To start wine into another cask
He started up on seeing me
I shall stay for you here
He stole away from the rest
I shall see into the cause of his
sadness

We stole on towards the place
They stole upon us
Will you step in, out, up, etc.?
His mind sticks between hope and
fear

He sticks at every thing
His shirt stuck to his back
Some one stuck up the paper
Stir up the fire. He stirred up the
people

You must not stir out to-day
You stop up the hole
He stretched out his arm
He struck off or out my name

We struck up the bargain
The musicians struck up
He struck out three of my teeth
He struck out new plans
They struck off his head
He strips off his coat
He does not know how to sum it up
They swept off or away every thing
They now sued for peace
He saw into or through their inten-
tions

He sent me word it was true
I shall take you along with me
He takes no notice of what I say
I took leave of them all
He took a fancy to the lady
He has taken the watch asunder
He was going to take away my life
I took down his pride
Take down your hat
To take down a speech
He has taken me in

yo le secundaré á V., señor.
 una letra á veces reemplaza una
 palabra.

hicimos entónces rumbo por fuera.
 apártese V., ó quítese del paso.
 yo cumplo mi palabra.
 eso es compatible con su interes.
 cosas que se apartan de las reglas
 ordinarias de la naturaleza.
 trasegar vino á otro tonel.
 levantóse bruscamente al verme.
 le aguardaré á V. aquí.
 él huyó de los demas.
 investigaré la causa de su tristeza.

nos dirigimos poco á poco al sitio.
 nos cogieron de improviso.
 quiere V. entrar, salir, subir, etc.?
 su ánimo fluctúa entre la esperan-
 za y el temor.

cualquiera cosa le detiene.
 tenía la camisa pegada al cuerpo.
 alguno fijó el papel.
 atice V. el fuego. Él agitó al pue-
 blo.

usted no ha de salir hoy.
 usted tapa el agujero.
 él extendió ó alargó su brazo.
 él borró mi nombre, ó lo quitó de
 la lista.

al instante hicimos trato.
 ya templaban los músicos.
 me hizo saltar tres dientes.
 forjó ó ideó nuevos planes.
 le quitaron la cabeza.
 se quita la casaca.
 él no sabe sumarlo.
 todo lo llevaron en pos de sí.
 ya solicitaron la paz.
 él penetró sus intenciones.

me envié á decir que era verdad.
 le llevaré á V. conmigo.
 no hace caso de lo que digo.
 me despedí de todos.
 se apasionó de la señora.
 él ha desmontado el reloj.
 iba á quitarme la vida.
 bajé ó humillé su orgullo.
 quítese V. el sombrero.
 tomar por escrito un discurso.
 él me ha engañado ó estafado.

*He has taken off your signature
He takes him off completely
Take yourself off, if you please*

*He has taken out his watch
Your hat fell; take it up
We were taken up for nothing
He took me up short
He has taken up with another woman
He took it to pieces
He took to study
He took to his heels or feet
He took in his sails
To take one's self off
He taxes off his friends
He has never taken up arm against
us
The french took up the fashion*

*If you are not taken up at present
Mary, take up the dinner
When I took a survey of the country
He took up his abode in that country
You must take heed
He was much taken with her
He took the thing amiss
The author takes notice that.....
I took a journey last year
They were about taking the field
He was taken ill last night
We were obliged to take in the sails
They threw off the yoke
He threw away his money
He threw by his coat, tho' it was new*

*He has thrown up his employment
He threw up a great quantity of
blood
Turn up and down the leaf
He has turned off or away his ser-
vant
I turned him out of doors
It turned out contrary to my hopes
He could not tear himself away
from her
She turned away or aside her head
He deserves to be torn asunder
I turned them back
I found him turned over to grief
To turn over a new leaf
To turn over the fault to one
To turn up a gown*

él ha contrahecho su firma de V.
él le remeda perfectamente.
quitate de ahí, ó apártate, si quie-
res.

ha sacado su reloj.
ha caído tu sombrero; recógelo.
fuimos arrestados por nada.
él me cortó la palabra.
se ha aficionado á otra mujer.
él lo deshizo ó lo hizo trizas.
él se dió al estudio.
él tomó las de Villadiego.
disminuyó su velamen.
poner piés en polvorosa.
remeda á sus amigos.
nunca ha empuñado las armas
contra nosotros.
los franceses adoptaron ó siguie-
ron la moda.

si no está V. ocupado ahora.
María, quita la comida del fuego.
cuando tendí la vista sobre el país.
fijó su residencia en aquel país.
es preciso que V. ande alerta.
quedó muy prendado de ella.
llevó la cosa á mal.
el autor refiere ó dice que.....
hice un viaje el año pasado.
estaban para entrar en campaña.
anoche enfermó.
nos fué preciso aferrar las velas.
sacudieron el yugo.
echó ó malgastó su dinero.
dejó ó echó por inútil la casaca,
aunque era nueva.
ha hecho dimision de su empleo.
arrojó mucha sangre por la boca.

despliega y pliega la hoja.
él ha despedido á su criado.

le eché de casa.
no salió como yo esperaba.
no pudo separarse de ella.

ella volvió ó apartó la cabeza.
merece que le hagan tajadas.
les hice volver.
le encontré entregado al dolor.
cambiar de conducta.
echar la culpa á otro.
arremangar un vestido

<i>The captain caused him to be thrown over board</i>	el capitán le hizo arrojar al mar.
<i>The temple was thrown down</i>	el templo se echó á ó por tierra.
<i>Wait for me, and I shall wait on them</i>	aguárdame y yo pasaré á su casa de ellos.
<i>He waited upon his master with the greatest care</i>	servía á su amo con el mayor esmero.
<i>He warded off the blow</i>	él evitó ó apartó el golpe.
<i>He has worn out his clothes</i>	él ha gastado sus vestidos (usándolos).
<i>His teeth are worn out</i>	tiene los dientes gastados.
<i>The one weighs down the other</i>	el uno pesa más que el otro.
<i>Wind up your watch</i>	da cuerda á tu reloj.
<i>I write down what you say</i>	pongo por escrito lo que V. dice.
<i>He wrote out another copy</i>	sacó en limpio otra copia.
<i>He worked out his crime</i>	él expió su delito.
<i>He went abroad very young</i>	fué á viajar al extranjero muy jóven.
<i>He winks at his faults</i>	le disimula las faltas.
<i>He waited on her to her capital</i>	la acompañó hasta su capital.
<i>He yielded himself up to his blind passion</i>	se entregó á su ciega pasión.
<i>To yield up a city</i>	entregar una ciudad.
<i>To yield to entreaties</i>	ceder á súplicas.

<i>alienated</i>	enajenado	<i>set off</i>	se pusieron en
<i>inwardly</i>	interiormente		marcha
<i>to issue</i>	emanar	<i>pitch-fork</i>	horca, gario
<i>team</i>	yunta	<i>flail</i>	mayal, pala
<i>to unload</i>	descargar	<i>public house</i>	taberna
<i>truss</i>	haz, manojo	<i>to treat</i>	obsequiar
<i>clutch</i>	garra	<i>lunch</i>	merienda
		<i>engaged</i>	contratado

Tema 46.

Do you see that tree, which grows yonder? Yes, I do, though I did not see it at first. Hear me, oh Lord! for thy loving kindness is great. Oh! I have alienated my friend; alas! I fear for life. Oh virtue! how amiable thou art!

Ventriloquy is the art of speaking inwardly without any apparent motion of the lips or other organs of speech, and of disguising the voice so as to make it appear that of another person, and to issue from another place. Some years ago there was in England a man

named Hoskins, who possessed this art in a very eminent degree, and by the aid of it frequently amused himself at the expence of others. He was once travelling on foot in the country, and *overtook* on the road a carter driving a team with a loaf of hay. After walking some time and conversing with the countryman, Hoskins, imitated the *crying* of a child. As there was not any child to be seen, the carter appeared surprised, and asked Hoskins if he had not heard it; he replied, Yes, and almost at the same instant the cry was repeated. It appeared this time to come from under the hay in the cart, and the ventriloquist insisted that the carter had concealed a child there. The poor fellow, astonished and alarmed, stopped his horses and unloaded the cart *truss* by truss; no child however was found, and he reloaded it; which he had scarcely done when the cry was again distinctly heard. The countryman, frightened *out of his wits* (*hasta perder el juicio*), immediately *took to his heels* (*tomó soleta*), and running to the nearest village, told the villagers that he had met the devil on the road, and begged them to go and assist him to recover his cart and horses which he had left in his *clutches*. The peasants immediately *set off* armed with pitch-forks and flails and soon arrived in sight of the supposed devil, who having a wooden leg could not *run away*. After some difficulty, he persuaded them to let him approach and convince them that he was really a human being. They were a long time incredulous, and the experiments he made of his art increased their belief in his diabolical character. At length, fortunately for Hoskins, the village curate arrived, and explained the matter to the satisfaction of the peasants, who then agreed to accompany the ventriloquist to the next public house, where he treated them with beer and a *lunch*. Soon after this, Hoskins was engaged at several of the London theatres, where he exhibited his arts to the astonishment of the multitude, as ventriloquy was at that time almost unknown, even in the metropolis.

LECCION XLVII.

RÉGIMEN DE LOS ADJETIVOS.

329. Las preposiciones *de* ó *por* que siguen á un adjetivo se traducen por *to* delante de infinitivo y por *of* delante de

sustantivo: *I am curious to know more* estoy curioso por saber más; *I was very impatient to see you* estaba impaciente de ver á V.; *I am very glad to see you* estoy muy contento (me alegro) de ver á V.; *this general was too ambitious of glory* este general era demasiado ambicioso de gloria.

330. Hé aquí la lista de los adjetivos que rigen con regularidad ciertas preposiciones. Los marcados con * conservan el mismo régimen delante del gerundio.

abandoned TO abandonado á
abhorrent TO, FROM contrario á
abominable TO abominable á
 * *absent* FROM ausente de
acceptable TO agradable á
accessory TO cómplice de
accountable TO.... FOR responsable á.... de

acquainted WITH conocido de
adapted TO adaptado á
adequate TO proporcionado á
adjacent TO adyacente á
agreeable TO agradable á
alienate FROM extrañío á
ambitious OF ambicioso de
amenable TO responsable ante
analogous TO análogo á
angry WITH..... AT incomodado con..... por

antecedent TO anterior á
anxious ABOUT, FOR inquieto por
applicable TO aplicable á
apprehensive OF, FOR temeroso de
appropriate TO propio para
attached TO aficionado á
attentive TO atento á

averse TO, FROM enemigo de
bare OF desnudo de
bigoted TO partidario fanático de
capable OF capaz de
careful OF, FOR cuidadoso de
careless OF, ABOUT indiferente hácia

clear OF exento de
compelled TO obligado á
composed OF compuesto de
concerned AT, FOR interesado en
congenial TO, WITH simpático á

conscious OF sabedor de
consonant TO, WITH conforme á
contiguous TO contiguo á
contrary TO contrario á
conversant IN, WITH, ABOUT ver-sado en

correspondent TO conveniente á
deficient IN falto de
dependent ON, UPON subordinado á
derogatory TO, FROM derogante de
descended FROM procedente de
deserving OF merecedor de
desirous OF deseoso de
destined TO destinado á
destitute OF desprovisto de
different OF FROM distinto de
disabled FROM incapaz de
disagreeable TO desagradable á
disappointed OF engañado en
disengaged FROM libre de
disgusted OF AT, WITH disgustado de

dissatisfied WITH descontento con
distinct FROM distinto de
distrustful OF desconfiado de
divested OF despojado de
eager IN, FOR, AFTER impaciente de

embellished WITH adornado con
emulous OF émulo de
enamoured OF enamorado
endeared TO querido de
endowed WITH dotado de
endued WITH revestido de
envious OF, AT envidioso de
equal TO, WITH igual á
equivalent TO equivalente á
estimated AT apreciado en

estranged FROM alejado de
excluded FROM excluido de
exclusive OF exclusivo de
expert ° IN, AT hábil en
exposed TO expuesto á
expressive OF expresivo de
familiar TO, WITH familiar con
fearful OF temeroso de
fond ° OF apasionado por
foreign TO, FROM extraño á
free FROM libre de
friendly TO amigable hácia
fruitful IN, OF fértil en
full OF lleno de
glad OF, AT contento de
grateful TO agradecido á
healed OF curado de
impatient AT, FOR impaciente por
impenetrable BY, TO impenetrable á
impervious TO impermeable á
inaccessible TO inaccesible á
incapable ° OF incapaz de
incentive TO incentivo para
inconsistent * WITH incompatible
 con
independent OF, ON independiente
 de
indulgent TO indulgente con
insensible TO, OF insensible á
inseparable FROM inseparable de
intent ° ON, UPON atento á
intimate WITH familiar con
inured TO endurecido en
invested WITH investido de
irritated AGAINST, BY..... AT irrita-
 do con..... por
jealous OF celoso de
known TO sabido de
laden WITH cargado de
level WITH á nivel con
liberal TO, OF liberal con
loaded WITH cargado de
made OF hecho de
mistrustful OF desconfiado de
necessary TO, FOR necesario á

neglectful OF descuidado de
obedient TO obediente para, á
observant TO atento á
obvious TO evidente á
offensive TO ofensivo á
opposite TO opuesto á
partial TO parcial con
patient WITH, OF sufrido con
peculiar TO peculiar á
pleasant TO agradable á
pleased WITH contento de
possessed OF poseído de
predisposed TO predispuesto á
preferable TO preferible á
prior TO anterior á
productive OF fecundo en
profitable TO ventajoso á
prone TO propenso á
proud OF orgulloso de
replete WITH lleno de
reproached ° FOR, WITH reconve-
 nido por
rich IN rico en
rid OF libre de
satiated ° WITH harto de
sensible OF, TO sensible á
sick ° OF enfermo de
significant OF expresivo de
similar TO semejante á
skillful IN, AT hábil en
solicitous ABOUT, FOR solícito de
sorry FOR afligido por
submissive TO sumiso á
suitable TO, FOR conveniente para
sure OF seguro de
surprised AT sorprendido de
suspected ° OF, BY sospechoso de
thankful FOR agradecido á
troublesome TO molesto para
true TO fiel á
useful FOR útil á
void OF desprovisto de
weary ° OF cansado de
worthy OF digno de

to look tener cara
 stage-coach diligencia
 to hide ocultar
 to come up subir
 to search examinar
 to load with acusar de

drawing-room salon
 to address dirigirse
 bank-note billete de banco
 to make amends indemnizar
 no excuses no se excuse V.
 highly altamente

Tema 47.

Lord Booby was surprised at John's familiarity; he was also surprised to hear him talk in that way. You look much better to-day: I am glad to see you. He is not careful enough of his money. You ought to be careful not to displease your mother. Cousin Tom was too ambitious of glory but John was not ambitious to serve his country.

A few years ago some persons were travelling in a stage-coach towards London, and at the approach of night they began to express their fears of being attacked by highwaymen (*salteadores de caminos*). One gentleman said he had ten guineas about him (*consigo*) and did not know where to hide them for safety. A lady who sat next to him in the coach advised him to conceal them in his boots, which he immediately did. Soon after a highwayman came up and demanded their purses: the lady told him that she had no money but that if he would search that gentleman's boots he would find ten guineas. The astonished traveller was obliged to submit, and lost his money; but as soon as the robber was gone, he loaded the lady with abuse, declaring she was a confederate of the thief. She acknowledged that appearances were against her, but added that if the travellers would all do her the honour to dine with her on the following day, she would explain, to their satisfaction, her conduct which appeared so mysterious. They consented, and after partaking of a magnificent dinner, the lady conducted them to the drawing-room, where, showing a pocketbook (*cartera*) she said, 'There is an apology for my conduct of last night; it contains bank-notes for several hundred pounds. Then addressing herself to the gentleman.' 'Sir, said she, if I had not directed the highwayman's attention to your ten guineas, I should have lost my bank-notes. I therefore beg that, to make you amends for your loss and vexation, you will accept one of a hundred pounds. No excuses, sir, for I consider myself fortunate in saving the others at that price.' The travellers were highly pleased with the lady's generosity, and complimented her on her presence of mind.

LECCION XLVIII.

RÉGIMEN DE LOS VERBOS.

331. Los verbos ingleses exigen de ordinario *to* delante de infinitivo: *I am willing to go there* quiero ir allí. Algunos no exigen dicha partícula (R. 232), y otros exigen en gerundio el verbo que en castellano va en infinitivo (R. 235). *It is not worth while going there* no vale la pena de ir allí; *he declines speaking to me* rehusa hablarme; *he left off reading when I entered* cesó de leer cuando yo entré.

Otros pueden regir infinitivo con *to* ó gerundio; como *begin* empezar, *discontinue* descontinuar, *forget* olvidar, *remember* acordarse, *avail* servir, *dislike* no gustar, *fail* faltar, *recollect* acordarse, *will you continue to read* ó *reading?* quiere V. continuar leyendo? *You forget to write to me* ó *writing to me* olvidada V. escribirme (V. R. 235).

332. Hé aquí la lista de los verbos que rigen con regularidad determinadas preposiciones:

to abound WITH, IN abundar en
to abridge OF, FROM privar de
to abstain FROM abstenerse de
to abut ON, UPON confinar con
to accept (OF) aceptar
to accommodate WITH proveer de
to account FOR dar cuenta de
to accuse OF acusar de
to acquaint WITH instruir de
to acquiesce IN consentir en
to adjourn TO retirarse á
to admit (OF) permitir
to agree ° WITH convenir con
to agree TO consentir en
to aim ° AT aspirar á
to alienate FROM apartar de
to animadvert ON, UPON censurar
to answer FOR responder de

to apologize FOR excusarse de
to appeal FROM apelar de
to approve (OF) aprobar
to array WITH, IN revestir de
to arrive AT, IN llegar á
to ask ° OF..... FOR pedir á.....
to associate WITH reunirse á
to atone FOR..... TO expiar..... con
to attain (TO) llegar
to attend TO ocuparse de
to attend ON, UPON acompañar
to ballot FOR votar en, por
to bargain FOR tratar de
to beg ° OF pedir
to beguile OF seducir
to believe IN creer en
to bereave OF despojar de
to bestow ON, UPON dar

to betray TO vender á
to blame FOR vituperar por
to blush ° AT avergonzarse de
to boast OF jactarse de
to border ON, UPON confinar con
to brag OF alabarse de
to call ON, UPON, AT pasar por
to care ° FOR cuidarse de
to carp AT censurar por
to catch (AT) apoderarse de
to caution AGAINST advertir de
to charge WITH acusar de
to charge ON sentar en cuenta
to coalesce WITH coaligarse con
to comply WITH acceder á
to confer ON, UPON conferir á
to confide IN confiar en
to congratulate ON, UPON felicitar de
to connect WITH unirse á
to consist OF constar de
to consist WITH ser compatible con
to contest IN, WITH rivalizar en
to copy FROM, AFTER copiar de
to correspond TO, WITH corresponder á
to covenant FOR estipular
to cure OF curar de
to deal IN comerciar en
to deal WITH obrar con
to debar OF, FROM excluir de
to defend FROM defender de
to defraud OF defraudar de
to demand OF demandar de
to depend ON, UPON depender de
to derogate FROM derogar
to desist FROM desistir
to detach FROM separar de
to detract FROM infamar
to deviate FROM desviar de
to devolve ON, UPON devolver á
to differ WITH diferir
to disagree WITH contrariar á
to disapprove (OF) desaprobador
to discourage FROM disuadir de
to dispense WITH dispensar de
to disqualify FOR, FROM incapacitar para
to dissent FROM disentir de
to distinguish FROM, BETWEEN distinguir de
to divide BETWEEN repartir entre

to dote ON, UPON chochear con
to doubt OF, ABOUT dudar
to emerge FROM sobresalir de
to employ IN emplear en
to encounter (WITH) encontrarse con
to encroach ON, UPON abusar de
to endeavour ° AFTER esforzarse por
to engage IN ocuparse en
to enjoin ° ON, UPON encargar
to enter INTO entrar en
to enter UPON emprender
to fawn ON, UPON adular
to feed ON, UPON alimentarse de
to fight WITH, AGAINST pelear con
to free FROM librar de
to frown AT, UPON mirar con ceño
to glance AT, UPON echar una mirada.
to glow WITH brillar
to grapple WITH luchar con
to grieve ° AT, FOR afligirse de
to guard AGAINST guardarse de
to hanker AFTER, FOR ansiar
to hinder FROM impedir
to hiss (AT) silbar
to impose ON, UPON engañar
to incorporate INTO, WITH incorporar á
to inculcate ON, UPON inculcar
to indulge IN, WITH entregarse á
to initiate INTO, IN iniciar en
to inquire TO informarse de
to insinuate INTO insinuar en
to insist ON, UPON insistir en
to inspire WITH inspirar
to instruct ° IN instruir
to insult OVER triunfar de
to interfere WITH intervenir con
to intermeddle WITH mezclarse en
to introduce INTO introducirse en
to intrude ON, UPON entrometerse
to jeer AT mofarse de
to knock AT llamar á
to laugh AT reirse de
to live ON, UPON vivir de
to long FOR, AFTER ansiar por
to lord OVER dominar
to meddle WITH ingerirse en
to meditate ON, UPON meditar
to meet (WITH) encontrar

to mingle WITH mezclarse con
to minister TO ayudar
to mix WITH mezclarse en
to object TO, AGAINST objetar á
to obtrude ON, UPON imponer
to offend AGAINST dañar á
to operate ON, UPON obrar
to part WITH, FROM separarse de
to partake OF tomar parte en
to participate IN, OF participar
to pay FOR..... TO pagar..... á
to penetrate INTO penetrar en
to persevere IN perseverar en
to pitch UPON, ON escoger
to play ON, UPON tocar
to plunge INTO sumergirse
to pray TO rogar
to prefix TO anteponer
to prepare ° FOR prepararse
to present WITH regalar
to preserve FROM preservar de
to preside OVER presidir á
to press ON, UPON insistir en
to presume ° ON, UPON presumir de
to prevail ON, UPON, WITH lograr,
 persuadir
to prevent FROM evitar
to prey ON, UPON hacer presa
to profit BY aprovecharse
to protect FROM proteger
to provide WITH proveer de
to quarrel WITH armar pendencia
to reconcile TO reconciliar con
to recover FROM restablecerse
to reduce TO reducir
to reflect ON, UPON reflexionar sobre
to refrain FROM contenerse
to rejoice ° AT, IN alegrarse de
to release FROM descansar
to relieve FROM aliviar de
to remove FROM alejar de

to repent (OF) arrepentirse
to request ° OF pedir
to reproach WITH echar en cara
to resolve ° ON, UPON resolver
to rest FROM descansar
to restore TO devolver
to restrain FROM refrenarse de
to retire FROM retirarse de
to rob OF despojar de
to rule OVER reinar sobre
to saturate WITH saturar de
to save FROM salvar
to seek ° FOR buscar
to seize ON, UPON apoderarse de
to sink INTO, IN sumergirse en
to smile AT, ON, UPON sonreirse de
to snap AT tirar á morder
to snatch AT tratar de coger
to sneer AT burlarse de
to stay FROM impedir
to steal FROM robar á
to strip OF, FROM despojar de
to strive WITH, AGAINST luchar con-
 tra
to substitute FOR sustituir á
to subtract FROM sustraer á
to sympathize WITH simpatizar
to taste OF oler á
to tax WITH, FOR acusar de
to thank FOR dar gracias por
to think OF, ON, UPON, ABOUT pen-
 sar en
to threaten ° WITH amenazar con
to touch (ON, UPON) tocar
to trust (IN, TO) fiarse en
to upbraid (WITH) reprochar
to value ON, UPON estimar en
to vest WITH investir de
to wait FOR esperar
to weep AT, FOR llorar por

livelyhood
bramin
pawns
square

vida
 brahman
 peones
 casilla

chessboard
to perform
incautiously
sight

tablero
 cumplir
 incautamente
 vista

Tema 48.

Are you astonished at what I have done? No sír; do not laugh at me; but I profited by your lessons; so I could gain my livelyhood by teaching Greek. Of what are you thinking? I say that he triumphed over his enemies; but he does not care for it. This country abounds with fruit. On what are you reflecting? We say that she is animated with good feeling towards you. Yes; but I cannot comply with her mother's wishes; nevertheless she is endowed with the greatest talents. When will you call upon me? I don't know; but now I will tell you a story.

The delightful game of chess was invented, it is said, by a Bramin, named Sissa, in order to amuse a very tyrannical prince, and, by giving him something to occupy his mind, to prevent him from exercising so much cruelty upon his subjects. Showing him also that the king though the most important piece in the game, cannot attack or even defend himself, without the assistance of his pawns, that is to say, his people. The monarch was enchanted with the game and asked the Bramin what he should give him as a recompense for having taught him to play it. The latter profited by the opportunity to give him another lesson. My prince, said he, if you count, you will find that there are 64 (sixty-four) squares on the chessboard; all the reward I ask is that you will give a grain of wheat for the first square, two for the second, and continue doubling the number up to the last. Oh! said the prince, if your demand is so moderate, it will be easily satisfied; make the calculation, and bring it me to-morrow morning. The Bramin did so, and the prince was greatly astonished at finding that he had promised more than he was able to perform, and that all the granaries in his kingdom did not contain a sufficient quantity of wheat to pay the debt he had so incautiously contracted. This, at first sight, appears incredible; we therefore recommend our pupils to make the calculation, in order to convince themselves.

(Para corregir.)

Did you rejoice of seeing your aunt? I am obliged to you of your kindness. I met your brother yesterday, but I could not prevail of

him to stay. Do you wait any body? No, Sir; I am charmed of your company. Deign speak to me. He appears not to be able do it. In what are you thinking? I am thinking in nothing. Let us agree at one thing. No Sir; I cannot part of that horse. Have you called by our sick friend? Yes; he was surrounded of his family. Do you approve his conduct? No, madam; he was taxed of ingratitude. I depend of my uncle; though I cannot bear with his importunities

LETTERWRITER'S MANUAL.

1.—LETTERS OF INVITATION, ACCEPTANCE, REFUSAL.

Mr. and Mrs. A..... present their respects to Mr. and Mrs. D..... and beg they will have the kindness to honour them with their company at dinner on Tuesday next, at six o'clock.

Mr. and Mrs. A..... present their best compliments to Mr. and Mrs. B..... and trust they will favour them with their company at dinner, on Tuesday next, at five o'clock.

My dear Sir,

Will your engagements allow you to come and dine with us on Monday next at six o'clock? I should be most happy to introduce you to one of my relations, who has just arrived.

Please to accept our kindest regards.

Mr. and Mrs. D..... request Mr. E..... to do them the favour of dining with them on Wednesday next, at six o'clock, and also beg him to accept their best compliments.

My dear Mr. M.....

Pray, be so extremely kind as to pay us a visit to-morrow evening. We shall have Mr. F..... and a few other persons, who will be most

happy to make your acquaintance. There will be but a very small party. Please to remember us most kindly to Mrs. M....., and most affectionately kiss for us your charming little girl.

Your most devoted friend.

Monday.

Mr. and Mrs. A..... request Mr. B..... to honour them with their company for the evening on Thursday next, Tuesday.

Madame de M. has a box at the Français to day. The pleasures of the evening will be doubled for her if she can have the happiness of enjoying it with Madame de P..... to whom she offers one or even two places.

Mrs. de M..... will have two violins and a few dancers on Sunday evening; she would be most happy if Mrs. and Miss de L..... would embellish her little fête by their presence, and she has the honour to request they will.

You said the other day, Miss, that you preferred dancing to all other amusements: this remark has emboldened me to request that you will do me the honour of passing next Tuesday evening with me. My mother allows me to offer the pleasure of a dance and a comfortable tea to a few of my female friends. My piano master will play us a few country-dances and gallops, and my brother has obtained from school, for himself and two cousins, the permission to stay out till eleven. My mother says that she dare not invite your mother to such a *fête*, but that if she would be kind enough to come, we should be very grateful for the favour. Pray persuade her: you need not go home so early then.

I have the honour to be, Miss, your most humble and most obedient servant.

Mr. and Mrs. D..... present their compliments to Mr. and Mrs. A..... and beg to say that they are happy to accept their kind invitation.

Mr. F..... begs to present his most respectful compliments to Mrs. de C.... He will have the honour to accept the invitation with which she has condescended to favour him.

Mr. G..... grateful for the favour conferred by the Marchioness of R..... has the honour to accept her Ladyship's kind invitation.

Mr. C..... is most happy to accede to the invitation he has had the honour to receive from Mrs. D....., and begs her to accept his acknowledgments.

Mr. L..... has the honour to accept the invitation for Thursday next, which Mr. P..... has been so extremely kind as to send him.

Mr. and Mrs. D..... much regret that previous engagements prevent them from accepting the flattering invitation of Mr. and Mrs. A..... for Tuesday.

Mr. B..... begs Mrs. H..... to accept his thanks and the expression of his regret that, being already engaged, he is unable to avail himself of the invitation with which he has been honoured.

Sudden indisposition deprives Mr. K..... of the honour of passing the evening at Mrs. N.....'s, and he begs her to accept the expression of his great regret.

Business of the utmost importance will not permit Mr. O..... to take advantage of the invitation Mrs. R..... has so kindly favoured him with; he trusts she will accept his apology and most respectful homage.

2.—NOTES AND LETTERS ON BUSINESS, ORDERS,
AND REQUESTS.

Mr. R..... has something of great importance to communicate to Mr. D..... He requests him to fix a day and hour for an interview. Mr. R..... hopes that M. D..... will pardon his importunity.

The Countess of M....., being indisposed, requests Mrs. B..... will be so good as to call upon her ladyship; or, if this be contrary to her practice, to send her first hand instead.

I request Mrs. X..... to send my blue reps dress the day after to-morrow; the minister's dinner party is to be a day earlier.

I should be greatly obliged if I could have my dress by four o'clock.

I beg Mr. T..... will have the kindness to call on me next Monday morning, or to send one of his best workmen.

I should be very much obliged.

Just at the moment Mr. T..... was leaving home to keep the appointment which Mr. V..... had been so kind as to make with him, very important business compelled him to forego the pleasure he had anticipated. He hopes to have the honour of being indemnified to-morrow at the same hour, if Mr. T..... has not changed his mind.

Mr. A..... begs leave to present his compliments to Mr. G....., and to request he will do him the favour of sending a ticket to see the agricultural exhibition.

Mrs. F..... would feel extremely grateful if Mr. de C..... would have

the kindness to obtain for her and her party the permission to go over the Museum of Versailles on a private day.

Mr. A....., who has arrived in Paris from Madrid within the last week, hopes Mr. de L..... will be so good as to give him the most obliging proof of hospitality by granting him permission to go over the Gobelins manufactory.

Mr. D..... begs to remind Mr. F..... that he was so kind as to promise him a ticket to see the exhibition of pictures. Mr. D..... is anxious to avail himself of Mr. F.....'s kind offer, and has the honour to thank him most sincerely.

Mr. X....., though he has not the honour to be known to Mr. B..... still presumes to hope that he will be so good as to allow him to see his studio, and requests the favour of admission.

Sir, knowing your liberality in admitting strangers to see your picture gallery, I venture to request that you will confer that favour on myself, and give the instructions necessary for my admission.

Please to accept the homage of the profound respect with which I have the honour to be,

Sir,

Your obedient humble servant.

Mr. O....., just arrived from Toulouse, has called upon the Countess of S..... Not having had the honour to see her ladyship, he did not leave the letters and the little box which Mrs. de P..... recommended him to deliver into the Countess of S.....'s own hands. Mr. O..... will call again to-morrow at two o'clock, when he hopes to be more fortunate.

Sunday July 25.

Mr. G....., having to start on Saturday next for Brest to take ship immediately for Guadaloupe, has called on Mr. de R..... for his letter and commissions. Mr. G..... does not know whether his business will allow of his calling again on Mr. R....., and therefore requests him to be so good as to send his commissions to the..... hotel, and Mr. de R..... may rely on the zeal and punctuality with which they will all be attended to.

Tuesday, December 8.

Sire,

An audience of your Imperial Majesty is a favour that one can scarcely indulge the hope of obtaining. I venture, however, relying on the boundless condescension the Emperor displays to all his subjects to solicit the honour of being heard for a moment; and I humbly request the favour of a permission to appear before him.

I am with the utmost respect,

Sire,

Your Imperial Majesty's most humble and most devoted servant
and subject.

To His Royal Highness the Prince of C.....

Sir,

I should not have presumed to solicit the favours of Your Royal Highness, had I not known the interest Your Royal Highness has always taken in the old servants of the crown.

The place of..... is now vacant: I am able to give the necessary securities, and I should have some reason to hope that I might be appointed to the office if Your Royal Highness deigned to inform the Minister of Finance that my appointment would be pleasing to Your Royal Highness.

Pardon me, Sir, if I call your attention for a moment to the father of a family who sees the future prospects of his children compromised by his want of fortune, and who has some hope of assuring their welfare, if he can obtain the protection of Your Royal Highness.

I am with the most profound respect,

Your Royal Highness's most obedient and most humble servant.

My Lady,

You were so kind as to offer me your protection with Mr. de P....: will your ladyship allow me to request it now? Mr. P.... is one of the professors named for my examination, and I am told that his influence is such as to decide the opinions of his assessors. I have studied with all my might; but on the eve of my examination, I tremble with fear, and I have an especial dread of Mr. P.... Deign, Madam, to write to him in my favour, that he may not stop me at the first moment of embarrassment, and I shall hope to succeed. I should never have ventured to make this application had you not given me orders to do so.

Accept, Madam, the expression of the respectful sentiments with which I have the honour to be.

Your ladyship's most humble, most obedient servant.

3.—LETTERS OF THANKS.

Sir,

The slight service I have endeavoured to render you was really undeserving of the grateful feelings with which you assure me it was received; and you ought to leave me the satisfaction of having done what you wished without using a compliment that I did not expect. Rest assured, Sir, that I shall always be ready to prove to you by deeds, how truly I am,

Sir,

Your most devoted servant.

Sir,

I have received your letter, and it convinces me that I have not to deal with an ungrateful person; never have I seen anything so agreeable and so obliging; any one must be perfectly free from vanity to remain insensible to praise like yours. I assure you therefore that I am delighted to find you have so favourable an opinion of my heart; and I again assure you, without the least intention of giving compliment for compliment, that I feel an esteem for you which far exceeds the language generally used to express our thoughts.

Your most devoted.

I have just received your letter of the 4th of July, Sir, by which I am apprised of the favour the king has been graciously pleased to confer on me through your intercession. This last kind service, and the interest you have ever shown in my behalf have so wrought upon my feelings that I am unable to express my gratitude. Help me, Sir, I implore you, to thank you as I ought; say to yourself that I feel for you all the gratitude and friendship that a good heart can experience when loaded with benefits and attentions. I shall leave this place at an early day for Paris. How happy I should be if I could tell you in person that no one can ever be more truly yours than

Your humble, etc.

General, I have directed Mr. D..... to pay you the sum of nine hundred and forty-five francs in gold. I beg you at the same time to accept my thanks. The service you rendered me, though coming most oportunely, affected me much less than the extreme kindness of manner which accompanied it. I feel that in returning you the money I do not acquit myself towards you, and unfortunately I can never be of any service to you. But my gratitude, powerless as it may be, is not by any means oppressive, and I feel a pleasure in remaining under an obligation as long as I live.

4.—LETTERS OF CONGRATULATION, FOR NEW-YEAR'S DAY.

Sir, it was impossible for me to receive any more pleasing intelligence than that of your last succes at the Academy of Sciences. It must be extremely gratifying for you to have obtained the votes of the many scientific men of every kind composing that body. Nor is it less honourable for its members to have conferred the distinction on merit so signal as yours; it is on this merit that we congratulate you, and the Academy must be congratulated on the equity of its judgment.

Accept, Sir, the homage of the most profound respect which I feel for you and which you so well deserve.



I am extremely obliged to you, Sir, for the part you had the kindness to take with respect to the favour the King has been pleased to confer on me. I trust that it will afford me frequent opportunities of proving to you my grateful sense of the obligation, and how truly I am, etc.

My Lord,

I am aware that letters of this season are considered tedious; but I feel bound to trouble you, and I shall never find fault with a custom which affords me the honour of once more assuring you of my gratitude. You know how much I am indebted to you, my Lord; but you cannot imagine with what pleasure I remember it: excuse me, therefore, if I take advantage of every available opportunity to offer you my good wishes, and give expression to the respectful sentiments with which I have the honour to be,

Your Lordship's most obedient servant.

5.—LETTERS OF CONDOLENCE.

I was extremely annoyed, Madam, to learn the unfortunate issue of your lawsuit, for I am most sincerely attached to you. However, take heart against bad fortune; you are rich enough to lose this suit without serious inconvenience: do not let it affect your health; take care of yourself, and believe that if you outlive your adversaries, they will be the parties who have lost the suit.

Sir,

Believe me when I say that I have learned with deep affliction the loss you have experienced in the death of your sister. She was a talented young lady whom everybody esteemed and courted for her agreeable society. It is a pious duty for you, in these painful circumstances, to accept all the consolations that friendship, and religion especially, can supply in such dreadful trials; and reluctant as I am, Sir, to revive your grief, I feel too desirous of showing

the interest I take in whatever concerns you, to persevere on this occasion in a silence which you might possibly regard as a sign of indifference.

I have the honour to be, with the most profound regard,
 Sir,
 Your afflicted servant.

Alas! my dear friend, I did not expect to mourn over anything but my-own infirmities. What a subject for tears, and what a loss I have just suffered, good God! Who can replace a friend of such worth, virtue, kindness and fidelity, as the Count de L.....? Console me, my dear friend, if consolation be possible. Among the numerous benefits conferred which will make me regret him as long as I live, the one for which I feel most grateful is that he procured me a friend like yourself. It is in your friendship that I may hope to find, if such a thing be possible, something to make amends for the loss my heart mourns over. Where can I look for another protector, so stouich, so virtuous as this respected nobleman?

Adieu! I am afraid the tears which flow from my eyes will blot out what I write to you. I embrace you, my dear friend, and I salute all your amiable family.

I am grateful, as I ought to be, for the proofs you give me of your continued friendship on the bereavement I have lately suffered by the death of my only son. Indeed, Sir, nature unaided cannot bear up against such trials, and we have great need of assistance to support the weight of so heavy a blow. I trust, Sir, that you will be thoroughly persuaded of my gratitude for your kindness, and that no one can be more attached to you than I am.

Your, etc.

6.—LETTERS FOR REBUKING AND EXCUSING.

Why do you not send me an answer, Madam? for you have received the letter I wrote to you on arriving here. I will not indulge

in lengthened reproaches, perhaps you do not deserve them. If you do, I had rather leave you to the reproaches of conscience than give way to complaint. Seriously, Madam, pray inform me what keeps you from writing: I would rather believe the cause were some trifling indisposition than any diminution of your affection for
Your, etc.

Boast no more that you know what friendship is, Sir: I have not written to you for the last six months because I have not left my bed all winter, and I have not received the least proof that you ever think of me. I see well that I might be dead two or three years without causing you any uneasiness, if my ghost did not go to reproach you for the neglect. Mind what you are about, as such a thing may possibly happen, for I think that my friendship would endure beyond the grave.

Sir,

I am very idle when the only matter is sending compliments to friends, or assuring them that I still love them. I think they ought never to entertain a doubt on the latter point: and as to the other, it seems to me they are of little importance either to writer or receiver: such are my reasons good or bad, and I give you them without any modification. The case is far different when I can do a service to one I love so much as you, and to whom I am so nearly related. Let me know how I can be of use to you, Sir, and you shall see with what alacrity I exert myself to prove my affection for you.

Will you once more deign, my dear friend, to take me into favour, after such abominable negligence as mine? I am fully sensible how very wrong it is, and I ask your pardon for it with all my heart. After all, however, when I offend you by my ill-timed delay, I think you are still the happiest of the two. You exercise towards me the sweetest of all the virtues of friendship, indulgence; and you enjoy the pleasure of fulfilling the duties of a perfect friend, whilst I have only the shame and self-reproach arising from the impropriety of my conduct towards you. You must at least understand thereby that I do not seek to disculpate myself in any way. I would much

rather owe my pardon solely to your kindness than seem to excuse myself by any subterfuge. Command whatever your heart shall dictate with respect to the culprit and the punishment, you shall be obeyed. I only except one kind of punishment, which it would be impossible for me to bear; that is, the diminution of your friendship. Let me retain that entire, I implore you, and remember that I shall always be your affectionate friend, even though I should become unworthy of claiming you as mine.

7.—LETTERS OF ADVICE.

To Thomas Jefferson Smith.

Monticello, Feb. 2, 1825.

This letter will be to you as one from the dead (1). The writer will be in the grave before you can weigh its counsels. Your affectionate and excellent father has requested that I would address to you something which might possibly have a favourable influence on the course of life you have to run, and I too, as a namesake, feel an interest in that course. Few words will be necessary, with good dispositions on your part. Adore God. Reverence and cherish your parents. Love your neighbour as yourself, and your country more than yourself. Be just. Be true. Murmur not at the ways of Providence. So shall the life into which you have entered, be the portal to one of eternal and ineffable bliss. And if to the dead it is permitted to care for the things of this world, every action of your life will be under my regard. Farewell.

I am very sorry, my dear brother, that I have nothing but good wishes to offer you this year. I have not yet paid all my debts, and you must be sensible that such is the first use I ought to make of my pension. With a little economy, you might live at your ease. Your dissipation grieves my heart! Bid adieu to pleasures; they are

(1) Jefferson was 82 years of age when he wrote this letter.

a hundred times more expensive than real wants.... Pardon this homily as from a friend. I shall not be happy unless you are so, and you will only be happy in so far as you are virtuous.

8.—LETTERS OF INTRODUCTION.

Your ladyship is so exceedingly kind that I make no apology for at once requesting that you will take under your protection Miss Sarah B....., a sweet young Englishwoman who will have the honour to hand you this letter. Miss Sarah is the youngest of twelve children and is now nineteen years of age. No fortune can be equal to the requirements of such a case; so, though of good family, Miss Sarah is anxious to be profitably employed. She knows something of French, is well versed in her own language and drawing, and qualified to superintend the study of music and Italian. As to her principles and conduct, you may judge her by her face, and you see what that says. I wish you to obtain her a situation as governess. The English language (of which she knows all the best authors) and drawing ought to procure her a thousand francs a year; but her mother would be satisfied with less if she were engaged in a family who appreciated the merits of the young lady, whom I can recommend to you *with the utmost confidence*.

I say no more, as I am addressing the very genius of active kindness, except, Madam, that no person has a juster claim than myself to the title of

Your ladyship's admirer and humble servant.

Sir,

One Mr. Leroux-Durant has requested me by letter to introduce him to you. He thinks that I enjoy no little credit with you; but I am not certain that he may not be mistaken. In any case I do as he desires me, and I pray you to render him whatever service you can. He has genius and talent of several kinds; I have tried him at Ussé, where he stayed long enough for me to judge of his capacity. I shall be obliged, sir, by the trouble you may take to find him a situation that may place him more at his ease than he is at present.

I am persuaded he will acquit himself well of whatever you may entrust to his management. I am, etc.

Pray do not fail, sir, on receiving this letter to give a situation to the person whose petition is enclosed. The name is blotted out, but that makes no difference; grant the request all the same; it is for the best-looking fellow in the world. I have not seen him or known him; he is recommended to me by a person equally unseen and unknown, and I am indebted for all this to my cousin german. For the sake of cousinship I request you will write to me seriously declaring that what I ask is impossible, so that I may show and read to him your letter.

9.—COMMERCIAL CORRESPONDENCE.

Lille, June 10, 48.....

Draft for 346 francs.

Sir,

At fifteen days' sight, please to pay this my first of exchange, to the order of Mr. Désir, for the sum of three hundred and forty-six francs, value received in merchandise (in cash, in manuscript) and place it to my account.

Your humble servant,

BRISTOLLES.

To Mr. Mussard, merchant, rue Saint-Martin, Paris.

Lyons, Septembre 14, 48.....

Draft for 4.500 francs.

Sir,

At triple usance, please to pay this my first of exchange to mister Lenormand or his order, the sum of fifteen hundred francs for value received, which you will pass to my account, as per advice from your humble servant,

ADAM.

To Mr. Girard, bookseller, Havre.

On the 31st of March next I promise to pay to Mr. Dorigny, or his order, the sum of four hundred and fifty francs, value received in merchandise.

Brussels, May 15, 18.....

HUMANN.

Pay to the order of Mr. Garnier for value received in goods.
Received,

GARNIER.

Amiens, Nov. 5, 18.....

Draft for 1.500 francs.

Sir,

At sight please to pay this my sole bill of exchange, to the order of Mr. Simon, the sum of fifteen hundred francs, value received from Mr. Masson, and pass it to my account, your humble servant,

ÉMERILLET.

To Mr. Berrard, woollendraper, 12, rue Duphot, Paris.

I hereby acknowledge that I owe and promise to pay on the 30th of September next, to Mr. Loiseau, the sum of one hundred francs which he lent me on an emergency.

Nimes, March 23, 18.....

LÉVY.

Rouen, March 3, 18.....

To Mr. R., Paris.

Having been engaged for many years in banking and collecting bills in the country, I venture to offer you my services, sir, for the collecting of bills you may have outstanding in any part of France.

I inclose you my scale of charges of collecting, which I trust you will find so moderate as to induce you frequently to send me remittances; you shall receive the value by return of post.

I have the honour to subscribe myself, etc.

Bordeaux, April 2, 18.....

Messrs. T. and C. of Lyons.

Your circular of the 1st of June has come to hand. We have taken note of your signature that we may have recourse to your services in case of need.

We wish for nothing more, gentlemen, than to transact business with your house. Our place, you are aware, does a good business on advantageous terms in all the productions of your district, especially in oils, which are here in great demand at a high figure.

We should be certain of an immediate sale for twenty tons at the rate of..... the current price of the day. We think this figure high enough to induce you to send us a lot. That you may know the precise amount of expense we send you herewith an imaginary account-sale, and add the current price of our own articles.

We are anxious, gentlemen, that this proposal should appear to you a favourable opportunity for us to commence business relations, which would be a source of great pleasure to us, and we will neglect no means to extend them.

We have the honour to be your, etc.

We have received the very obliging letter you did us the honour of addressing to us on the 25th of May last, and we beg you, in the first place, to accept our thanks for the offers of service you have been pleased to make.

Be assured that we shall have great pleasure in availing ourselves of it, and shall have recourse to your assistance whenever an opportunity presents.—For the moment, however, the complete stagnation that prevails in banking affairs will not allow us to open an account with you, for, being often embarrassed to maintain the numerous connections we have had for years with your town, we should be quite unable to find the necessary elements for establishing new ones.

We hope this state of things will soon change, and that we may ere long be able to prove our readiness to take advantage of your services.

Allow us, Sir, in turn, to offer you our services and to assure you that they are entirely at your command.

With the highest respect, we remain your most humble servants.

We have received your letter of the 3^d ult., in which you inform us that you have not been able to complete, within our limits, the purchase of 50 tuns of camelina oil.

On receiving the present, please to purchase on our account on the most favourable terms you can, 50 tuns of the same article, and forward it immediately by waggon.

If, for it to start immediately, it should be necessary to complete the load, we authorise you to buy the additional quantity; this lot is wanted to make up a delivery in October, the manufacturer at Caen not having been able to supply all in time. Our customer requires prompt delivery; so there is not a moment to lose.

The price current of Lille, just come to hand, quotes this sort at 408,50 to 409; we think you will be able to get it under 410.

Draw upon us for the amount at your own convenience, after advice.

Believe us to remain, Sir, most cordially yours.

Sir,

We have the honour to inform you that our Mr.*** wishing to leave business, retires from our firm from this day forth. His retirement, while we deeply regret the loss of his cooperation and experience, will make no change whatever in our business, nor in the friendship which has ever united us.

Please to accept the assurance of our profound respect.

Sir,

Having suffered severely from the events of 18..... and 18..... which were so fatal to business, I was then under the painful necessity of suspending my payments and making an arrangement with my creditors.

Far from being dispirited by so sad a misfortune, I took new courage, persuaded that with activity, aided by the confidence still

reposed in me, I should succeed in indemnifying my creditors for the considerable losses they had suffered through me.

My anticipations have been fully realised, I have attained the object of my desires, and have the inexpressible satisfaction of announcing to you, sir, that the Imperial Court of Paris, in a public sitting of the 8th instant, has pronounced my rehabilitation.

Happy to have been thus able to justify the confidence of my creditors, I now presume to request its continuation, assuring you, sir, that my efforts shall always tend to make me worthy of it.

I have the honour to be, Sir,

Your most humble and most obedient servant.

If it should be in your power to give us any information as to the confidence that may be placed in the house whose name is hereto annexed, you would greatly oblige us; we think that your connection with the town where it is established will enable you to procure us what we desire with promptitude and certainty. You may rely on our discretion, and please to accept our sincere thanks beforehand.

Please to believe us, with the utmost respect, yours most cordially.

In confirmation of our last, we have the honour to inform you of the arrival in our port of the *Neptune*, captain Damigny, from Bristol, laden with a miscellaneous cargo, comprising among other articles, 373 faggots of iron, the samples of which we have not yet received. We shall endeavour to procure them at once, that we may be able to give you more complete information.

We have the honour to subscribe ourselves yours sincerely.

I have long waited in vain for you to come and verify the quality of the wines sent to me on your account. The following is the result of the examination.

The wines are of pretty good flavour, but they don't sparkle much, and a great portion is not clear, though they have been sent only a fortnight. I leave you to judge what they will be in a month's

time. The absence of limpidity is, you know as well as myself, so capital a defect in champagne as to render it quite unsaleable. What I propose to you is, that your champagnes shall be unpacked and laid in stacks, and a fortnight after, I will pick out all the bottles that have cleared.

As you have no doubt intended to serve me well, and act honourably towards me, I must think you will accede to this offer. Till some arrangement is made, I have declined paying the bill your agent has drawn on me; first, because it came much too soon, even before the goods had arrived, next because it was not authorised by me, and, lastly, as being contrary to our especial agreement.

These difficulties are very unpleasant, but the whole blame lies with your agent, who sends off inferior goods.

I have the honour to subscribe myself, etc.

We have received the letter you did us the honour to write on the 7th instant, with the invoice of the goods you have forwarded us, amounting to:

Fr. 7.860,30 c., which we have placed to your credit.

We also send you in this envelope:

fr. 4.000	now due.
3.244	on July 15.
900	at sight.
4.847,42	at 10 days' sight.

Total, fr. 6.928,42 c., which please to place to our account and acknowledge.

We remain, Sir, yours most truly.

About nine months since, in consequence of an urgent request from yourself, I consigned to you 42 chests of refined borax for you to dispose of to the best advantage for me.

Since that time, I have not heard a word from you on the subject, at which I am exceedingly surprised.

I trust that, by return of post, you will explain the cause of this

long silence and give me reason to hope that the business will be satisfactorily concluded after remaining so long unsettled.

Believe me, Sir, sincerely yours.

On arriving from Beaucaire, I found the letter that you did me the honour to write on the 5th inst. I had indeed forgotten that your accounts were due. Having bought much more than I intended, I have had heavy payments to make during the last months and the present.

I pray you to excuse me, and to settle what I owe, please to draw on me for half the balance due, amounting to fr. 6.628, 6 c., on 45th September next, and for the other half at the end of the same month. Your signature shall be duly honoured, you will make out our current account according to this arrangement, and forward it to me, if you please, when advising of your proceedings.

Believe me yours most respectfully.

We have the honour, Sir, to send you inclosed an abstract of our account current, up to the 31st of December, presenting a balance in our favour of:

Fr. 272.188,55 c., which we have again placed to your debit. Please to examine the above and let us know whether you find it correct.

With the utmost respect we remain yours, etc.

Availing ourselves of your kindness we request you to grant us a letter of credit for two thousand five hundred francs in favour of Mrs. M....., widow, of Lille, on your friends at Nice, Milan, and Rome.

We acknowledge ourselves responsible to you for this sum and will settle with you for the same, as well as all expenses, on presentation of the receipts of the said lady.

With the utmost respect we remain, Sir, your most devoted servants.

I have the honour, Sir, to acknowledge the receipt of the remittance you forwarded of:

Fr. 33.784,45 c., in different bills on your town; I will see that they are entered to your credit in the account I have opened for the purpose. I debit you, per contra, with the

Fr. 6.000 you have received from my cashier.

The conditions of the account are fixed as follows: interest on my advances at the rate of 4 per cent per annum, and commission one third per cent.

Entirely devoted to your orders, I remain, Sir, yours most truly.

At the close of the year it is our custom to strike a balance of all our accounts; consequently, we send you inclosed an abstract of yours, with a balance in our favour of fr. 2.917,85 c.; we beg you will examine the same; please to acknowledge its accuracy and see that your books are in conformity therewith.

We shall be happy to receive at this moment any remittances it may suit you to make.

Awaiting your commands, we remain yours most cordially.

We have to request, Sir, that you will be kind enough to send us bills for our deliveries of iron in the months of September, October, and November inst., that is to say about 245.845 francs, to come due in May, June, and July next. We have occasion for these bills, and we rely on your usual readiness to oblige, although the delivery for November, which is still on the sea or in port, has not yet reached you.

We have the honour to remain most cordially yours.

We duly received your letter of the 13th October ult. Since then, our relations have been completely suspended; we very much regret it should be so. Nevertheless none can be more disposed than ourselves to pay every attention to your orders. Pray endeavour to give a little animation to our intercourse; we shall be exceedingly obliged to you.

Hoping that such will be the case, we remain most truly yours.

The present will be handed to you by Mr. D.

Having wound up the affairs of his business to return to his own country, Mr. D., who is attached to us by the bonds of an intimate friendship, has been pleased to accept our introduction to you, Sir, and we recommend him to you with so much the more pleasure, as we know that it will not be in vain.

Have the kindness to do, sir, for the gentleman we recommend to you, whatever your friendship for ourselves may suggest, whether by giving him a most friendly reception or by assisting him in any way occasion may require.

In case Mr. D. should require any advance of cash, you will have the goodness to supply him.

We beg you, sir, to accept beforehand our warmest thanks, and believe us most cordially yours.

We should have been most happy to do you the service you ask, but the state of affairs rendering it absolutely necessary for us to unite all our resources, we could not possibly accept your renewal unless you gave us, in specie, at least one half of the amount of your bill that falls due at the end of March.

In the contrary event, Sir, we regret to inform you that we shall allow your bill to be protested and then take every necessary measure to insure its payment.

We have the honour to remain your humble servants.

In answer to the letter with which you honoured us on the 29th of last month, we send you herewith, as you desired, an abstract of your current account with us, down to the 31st of last month, and balanced at that date by:

Fr. 483 in our favour. You will please, for the sake of regularity, to let us know whether you find it correct.

On the occasion of the new year, we beg to offer you our best wishes for your prosperity, and so remain, with the utmost cordiality, yours most truly.

SEGUNDO CURSO.

~~~~~

## PART I.

—

### CATECHISM

OF

### ENGLISH GRAMMAR.

---

What is Grammar?

The art of expressing our thoughts clearly and correctly.

How is grammar divided?

Into *four* parts; namely, *orthography*, *etymology*, *syntax*, and *prosody*.

What is orthography?

The art of writing words with the proper and necessary letters.

What is etymology?

The history of words; or that part of grammar which treats of their origin, nature and derivation.

What is syntax?

Syntax teaches us how to place our words properly together in sentences.

What is prosody?



Prosody teaches us the art of accenting and pronouncing words with propriety ; and the laws of versification.

Of what is grammar composed?

Of letters, syllables, words, and sentences.

How many letters have we?

Twenty-six.

How are they divided?

Into vowels and consonants.

Which are the vowels?

*A, e, i, o, u*, and sometimes *w* and *y*.

When are *w* and *y* consonants?

When they begin a word or syllable, but in every other situation they are vowels.

Which are the consonants?

*B, c, d, f, g, h, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, x, z*, and sometimes *w* and *y*.

What is meant by a vowel?

A vowel is a letter that makes a full and perfect sound of itself, without the help of any other letter.

What is meant by a consonant?

A consonant is a letter that cannot be sounded without the help of a vowel.

When are *w* and *y* consonants?

When they begin a syllable, as in *when, wing, young*.

Which of the consonants deserve our most particular attention?

The consonants *c* and *g*.

How is the consonant *c* sounded before the vowels *a, o, u*?

It is pronounced hard, like as in *cat, cot, cut*.

How is *c* sounded before *e, i, and y*?

*C* before *e, i, y*, is sounded soft, like *s*: as *cell, city, cygnet*, pronounced *sell, sitti, signet*.

How is the consonant *g* pronounced before *a*, *o*, *u*?

*G* before *a*, *o*, *u*, is sounded hard; as in *garland*, *goblet*, *gunner*.

How is *g* pronounced before *e*, *i*, and *y*?

It is sounded sometimes hard, and sometimes soft, as in *gelding*, hard, and in *gender*, soft; but generally it is sounded soft.

How are the letters *ch* generally pronounced?

For the most part as in *Spanish*, as *Chair*, *chose*, *March*, *starch*, but in foreign words these letters are pronounced like *k*, as in *Archippus*, pronounced *Ar-kip-pus*, *chorus*, *catechism*, pr. *kátikizm*, *chemistry*, *monarch*, *tetrarch*; except the French *ch*, which sounds like *sh*, as *chaise*.

Are not the letters *ch* sometimes silent?

Yes, as in the word *schism*, pronounced *siʒm*.

How are the letters *gh* pronounced?

At the beginning of words they are pronounced hard, as in *ghost* (*gost*); at the end of a word, soft, as in *laugh* (*laf*); sometimes they are silent, as in *sigh*, pr. *sái*, *neighbour*.

How is *gn* sounded at the beginning and at the end of words?

The *g* is not sounded at all: *gnash*, *reign*, *sign*, pr. *ren*, *sain*.

Is the letter *k* sounded before *n* in the same syllable?

No, it is mute: *knee*, *knife*, *know*.

Is not the letter *l* silent between *a* or *o* and *k* in the same syllable?

Yes, as in *talk*, *walk*, *folk*. It is also silent between *a* and *m* in the same syllable: *calm*, *palm*; but is pronounced in *realm*.

*N* has two sounds; the one pure; as *man*, *net*: the other a ringing sound like *ng*: *thank*, *banquet*, *writing*, *speaking*.

*S* has two different sounds; a soft sound like *z*: as *bosom*, *dismal*; and a sharp hissing sound; as *saint*.

Is the letter *w* sounded before an *r* at the beginning of words?

No, it is silent: *wrangle*, *write*, pr. *rangl*, *rait*.

How are the letters *ph* sounded?

*Ph* always sound like *f*, as in phoenix (*fenix*), *Joseph*; except in these two words, nephew and Stephen, pronounced *neviu*, *stivn*; and where they are divided, as in shep-herd, then each letter has its own separate sound.

When is the letter *p* silent?

*P* is silent before *s*, as in psalm, psalter, pronounced *sam*, *sölter* (See R. 39).

How is the letter *x* pronounced?

*X* has two sounds, one like *ks*, and the other like *gz*, as heard in these words, mix and example, pronounced *miks* and *egzamp<sup>l</sup>*. *X* at the beginning of words is pronounced like *z*, as in Xenophon.

What is Orthography?

Orthography is the art of writing words with the proper and necessary letters.

What is the best mode of learning Orthography?

By reading and copying a great deal, and by never spelling a single word without knowing what letters are to be used; for which purpose you will refer either to your dictionary or to your teacher.

Is it necessary to learn orthography?

Yes, most assuredly: nothing is so essential to a good education, and every one should strive to make himself master of it; for bad spelling is a great proof of ignorance.

What is spelling?

The right division of words into syllables.

What is a syllable?

The sound of one or more vowels, with or without the help of any other letter, as *a*, *am*, *art*.

Is there always a vowel in a syllable?

Yes: no syllable can be formed without a vowel.

Is there any more than one vowel to a syllable?

Yes: there are sometimes two or three, as in *beat*, *beau*, pr. *bó*, *bought*.

What do you call the vowels *ea* in *beat*?

A diphthong, because a diphthong is the meeting of two vowels in one syllable: *boy*, *sound*.

What do you call *eau* in *beau*?

A triphthong, because a triphthong is the meeting of three vowels in one syllable: *beautiful*.

What is a monosyllable?

A word of one syllable; the *cat bit the dog*.

What is a dissyllable?

A word of two syllables, and a trisyllable, a word of three syllables: *sister*, *consonant*.

What is a polysyllable?

A word of four or more syllables: *admiration*.

1. A single consonant between two vowels, must be joined to the latter syllable: as, *de-light*; *re-source*: except the letter *x*, as, *ex-ist*; and likewise words compounded; as, *up-on*; *dis-ease*.

2. Two consonants proper to begin a word, must not be separated; as, *fa-ble*. But when they come between two vowels, and are such as cannot begin a word, they must be divided; as, *ut-most*; *in-most*; *un-der*; *cof-fin*.

3. When three consonants meet in the middle of a word, if they can begin a word, and the preceding vowel be pronounced long, they are not to be separated; as, *de-throne*.

But when the vowel of the preceding syllable is pronounced short, one of the consonants always belongs to that syllable, as, dis-tract; dis-prove.

4. When three or four consonants which are not proper to begin a syllable, meet between two vowels, such of them as can begin a syllable, belong to the latter, the rest to the former syllable, as ab-stain; hand-some; parch-ment.

5. Two vowels, not being a diphthong, must be divided into separate syllables, as, cru-el; so-ci-e-ty.

6. Compound words must be traced into the simple words of which they are composed; as, ice-house; never-the-less.

7. Grammatical, and other particular terminations, are generally separated: as, teach-est, teach-er; good-ness; falsehood.

Some of the preceding rules may be liable to exceptions.

How many sorts of words, or parts of speech, are there in the English language?

Nine; the Substantive or Noun, the Article, the Adjective, the Pronoun, the Verb, the Adverb, the Preposition, the Conjunction, and the Interjection.

What is an *Article*?

An article is a word used before substantives to denote their signification; as *a* man, *the* man.

How many articles are there in the English language?

Two: *an* or *a*, and *the*. *An* or *a* is styled the indefinite article. *An* used only before a vowel, and before a silent *h*; as, *an* egg, *an* hour: if *h* be sounded, *a* only is to be used; as *a* hand, *a* heart; *a* book, *a* pen; the son of a king.

How is the article *the* used?

*The* is used before either vowels or consonants; as, *the* egg, *the* hour, *the* boy, *the* girl.

The article *the* is called definite, as it ascertains what par-



particular thing or things is or are meant; as, there goes *the man* with *the apples*; meaning some particular man and apples alluded to, or that were spoken of before; the son of the king; the son of a king; a son of the king: thou art a man; thou art the man.

What is a *Substantive*, or Noun?

A substantive, or noun, is the name of any thing that exists, or of which we have any notion; as *London, man, virtue.*

How are substantives known?

A substantive may be known by prefixing the words «*I speak of*», and whatever word then completes the sense is a substantive; as *I speak of* virtue, wisdom, gold.

How are substantives divided?

Substantives are divided into proper and common.

What is a proper name, or substantive?

A proper name, or substantive proper, is the name given to men, kingdoms, cities, towns, mountains, or rivers; as *George, London, Thames, Spain.*

What is a substantive common?

A substantive common is that which belongs to all of a kind; as, a *man, city, river, country*; he is the *Cicero* of his age; he is reading the lives of the Twelve *Cæsars*.

What is to be considered in substantives?

Gender, number, and case.

What is meant by gender?

The distinction of sex.

How many genders are there?

Four: masculine, feminine, common, and neuter.

OBSERVATION. Some substantives of the neuter gender become, by a figure of speech, masculine, others feminine; such as, the *sun, time, death, sleep, and love*, which are

masculine; and the *earth, moon, church, nature, fortune, etc.*, feminine.

What is meant by the masculine gender?

The masculine gender refers to animals of the male kind; as *man, horse, bull.*

What does the feminine gender signify?

The feminine gender refers to animals of the female kind; as, *woman, mare.*

What words are of the common gender?

Such as include both genders; as, *parent, friend, sparrow, cat.*

What words are of the neuter gender?

Those which denote things of neither sex; as, *house, stone, happiness, table.*

How many methods are there to express the difference of sex?

Three. 1. By different words; as,

| Male.            | Female. | Male.  | Female. |
|------------------|---------|--------|---------|
| Bachelor         | maid    | Lad    | lass    |
| Boar             | sow     | Milter | spawner |
| Bullock or Steer | heifer  | Ram    | ewe     |
| Drake            | duck    | Sloven | slut    |
| Friar            | nun     | Stag   | hind    |
| Gander           | goose   | Uncle  | aunt    |
| Hart             | roe     | Wizard | witch   |

2. By a difference of termination; as,

| Male.         | Female.        | Male.     | Female.     |
|---------------|----------------|-----------|-------------|
| Administrator | administratrix | Landgrave | landgravine |
| Adulterer     | adulteress     | Sultan    | sultanness  |
| Hero          | heroine        | Tiger     | sultana     |
| Hunter        | huntress       | Widower   | tigress     |
| Host          | hostess        |           | widow       |

3. By a noun, pronoun, or adjective, being prefixed to the substantive; as,

|                   |                     |
|-------------------|---------------------|
| A he-bear         | A she-bear          |
| Male descendants. | Female descendants. |

The words *parent*, *child*, *cousin*, *friend*, and others, are used for males or females.

What is *number*?

The distinction of one from many.

How many numbers have we?

Two; the singular and the plural.

What does the singular number express?

The singular number expresses but one object; as a *boy*, a *book*, a *girl*, a *cat*.

What does the plural mean?

More than one; as *boys*, *books*.

How is the plural number formed?

The plural number, in general, is formed by adding *s* to the singular; as *boy*, *boys*; *book*, *books*.

How is the plural number formed when the singular ends in *x*, *ch*, *sh*, *ss*, or *v*?

Here the pronunciation requires that *es* be added to the singular; as *box*, *boxes*; *church*, *churches*; *brush*, *brushes*; *kiss*, *kisses*; *hero*, *heroes*.

OBSERV. But if the *ch* be heard like *k*, it takes *s* only in the plural, as *monarch*, *monarchs*.

How do words that end in *f* and *fe* form their plural?

In general, for the sake of pronunciation, these terminations are changed into *ves*; as,

| Singular. | Plural.       | Singular. | Plural.        |
|-----------|---------------|-----------|----------------|
| Calf      | <i>calves</i> | Self      | <i>selves</i>  |
| Half      | <i>halves</i> | Thief     | <i>thieves</i> |
| Knife     | <i>knives</i> | Shelf     | <i>shelves</i> |

Do the following words, which end in *f*, make their plural by this change of termination; namely, *hoof*, *roof*, *proof*, *grief*, *dwarf*, *mischief*, *handkerchief*, *relief*?

No: these words form their plural regularly, by adding *s*, as *hoof*, *hoofs*, etc.

How do substantives which end in *ff* form their plural?

Substantives ending in *ff* have the regular plural: as *muff*, *muffs*; *ruff*, *ruffs*.

How do substantives form their plural that end in *y*?

If the *y* be preceded by a consonant, it is changed into *ies*; but if by a vowel, it is not changed; as *fly*, *flies*; *baby*, *babies*; *key*, *keys*, *day*, *days*.

How do the following form their plural; namely, *child*, *man*, *woman*, *ox*, *brother*?

These form their plural by making the termination in *en*; as *child*, *children*; *man*, *men*; *woman*, *women*; *ox*, *oxen*; *brother*, *brethren*, or *brothers*.

Are not some words used alike in both numbers?

Yes: as *deer*, *sheep*, *swine*, *fern*, etc.

How do we distinguish the singular from the plural in these words?

By putting the article *a*, or the number *one*, before the singular; as *a deer*, *one deer*, *a sheep*, *one sheep*.

Have all words a singular and plural number?

No: some have no singular; as *ashes*, *bowels*, *bellows*, *tongs*, *snuffers*, etc.; and others no plural; as *wheat*, *pitch*, *gold*, *sloth*, *pride*, etc.

Are not some words very irregularly formed?

Yes, the following: namely,

| Singular. | Plural. | Singular. | Plural.    |
|-----------|---------|-----------|------------|
| Die       | dice    | Penny     | pence      |
| Louse     | lice    | Foot      | feet, etc. |

How do some words form their plural?

By the difference of their termination; as,

| Singular. | Plural.  | Singular. | Plural. |
|-----------|----------|-----------|---------|
| Crisis    | crises   | Genius    | genii   |
| Diæresis  | diæreses | Radius    | radii   |
| Emphasis  | emphases | Stratum   | strata  |

The following words are construed as plural nouns : *pains, riches, alms, politics*, with other names of sciences.

What is meant by *case*?

The situation of a substantive.

How many cases have substantives?

Four; the nominative, the genitive, the accusative, and the vocative.

OBSERV. The genitive case is sometimes called the *possessive*, and the accusative is also called the *objective*.

What is the nominative case?

The nominative case represents the being or thing that acts, and comes before the verb; as «George loves play»; *George* is the nominative case.

What is the genitive or possessive case?

The genitive or possessive case implies property or possession, and has for its sign the preposition *of*; as «the love of God»; or has an apostrophe, with the letter *s* coming after it; as «God's love»; the house of my father or my father's house; an elephant's tooth.

Is not the apostrophic *s* omitted when the singular ends in *ss*?

Yes: as «For goodness' and righteousness' sake».

When several names are coupled together in the possessive case, is the apostrophic *s* added to each?

No: it is joined to the last only, and understood at the rest; as « *John, Thomas, and Robert's* house ».

When the name of the possessor consists of more than one word, where is the 's put?

At the end of the last of those words: as, the queen of England's palace.

Is not the name of the thing belonging often left out after the sign of the possessive?

Yes; as, this book is my sister's; that hat is Richard's; a servant of the queen's.

What is the accusative or objective case?

The accusative case generally follows a verb active or a preposition; as « I love George »; A wise man controls his passions; « George is in school. »

What is the vocative case?

The vocative case is known by calling or speaking to; as « George, come hither »; *George* is in the vocative case.

Why is the vocative necessary?

Because it is that case in which every person speaks. Every other connection in which the substantive is placed is formed by prepositions.

Is the apostrophic *s* added when the noun ends in *s*?

No: as « On eagles' wings »; « the drapers' company »; the princess' apartments.

What is an *adjective*?

An adjective is a word joined to a substantive to express its quality; as « a *good* boy »; « a *graceful* girl ».

Do adjectives undergo any change?

Yes: in order to express an increase or decrease of the property or quality of a substantive; adjectives have three significations, commonly called degrees of comparison; namely, the positive, comparative, and superlative.

How are these degrees formed?

From the positive state of the adjective.

What is the positive state of the adjective?

The positive is the first state of the adjective, that expresses the propriety or quality simply, without any increase or diminution; as *good, wise, great, sweet* oranges.

What is the comparative degree?

The comparative degree increases or diminishes the positive in signification; as *greater, smaller*; and is formed by adding *r* or *er*: this orange is sweeter than that.

What is the superlative degree?

The superlative degree increases or diminishes the positive to the utmost; as *largest, smallest*; and is formed by adding *st* or *est*: mine is the *hardest* pen.

Is not the consonant before *er* or *est* sometimes doubled?

Yes; whenever the positive is a monosyllable ending with a consonant with a vowel before it: *fat, fatter, the fattest*.

What change is made when the positive ends in *y*?

The *y* is changed into *i* if a consonant goes before it: *heavy, heavier, heaviest*.

Are the comparative and superlative degrees formed in any other way?

Yes: the adverbs *more* and *most*, placed before the adjectives, have the same effect; as *more pleasant, most pleasant*. *More* and *most* are generally used before words of more than one syllable.

Are not some adjectives, of very common use, irregularly formed?

Yes, the following: viz. Good, better, best; bad, worse, worst, etc. This is good, that is *better*, but those are the *best*.

Have all adjectives the degrees of comparison?

No; because their signification will not admit of it: as



*all, several, some, one, two, first, second*; interior, superior, sup. innermost, supreme, etc.

Are the adjectives, in English, varied on account of gender, number, and case?

No: for we say, «a good boy», «good girls».

How may we readily distinguish an adjective from a noun?

An adjective will make sense with the word *thing* after it; as «a good thing, a bad thing»: but a noun cannot, for it would be absurd to say, «a man thing, a horse thing».

Do not adjectives sometimes stand by themselves?

Yes: but then a substantive is always understood; as «Do you ride the *white* or the *black*?» Here *horse* is understood to both. «Try to hit the *white*»:—*mark* is understood. Thus an adjective signifies nothing by itself, and can convey no idea to the mind without a substantive either expressed or understood.

Is it not wrong to use a double comparative or superlative?

Yes: as *more wiser, most wisest*; which signify *more more wise, most most wise*; it ought to be *wiser, or more wise; wisest, or most wise*.

The termination *ish* forms a degree of comparison by which the signification is diminished below the positive: black, *blackish*.

What is a *Pronoun*?

A pronoun is a word used instead of a noun, to avoid the too frequent repetition of the same word; as «The man is merry; *he* laughs, *he* sings.» My mother is not at home, *she* is gone to London. Mary and Jane learn French, and *they* like *it*.

How many kinds of pronouns are there?

Three; the personal, the relative, and the adjective pronouns.

What belongs to pronouns?

Number, person, gender, and case.

What numbers have pronouns?

Two; the singular and the plural, the same as nouns; as

*I, thou, he, she, it; we, ye, they.*

How many persons have pronouns?

Three in each number; namely

*I, is the first person. . . . .* }  
*Thou, or you, the second person. . . . .* } *Singular.*

*He, she, or it, the third person. . . . .* }

*We, is the first person. . . . .* }  
*Ye or you, the second person. . . . .* } *Plural.*

*They, the third person. . . . .* }

*I, thou or you, he, she, it; and we, ye or you, and they, are the personal pronouns.*

How many genders have pronouns?

Three; masculine, feminine, and neuter: in the third person singular only, *he, she, it*: *he* is masculine; *she* is feminine; *it* is neuter.

How many cases have pronouns?

The nominative, the genitive, and the accusative; as *he* is the nominative case; *his* is the genitive, and *him* is the accusative.

What is a relative pronoun?

A relative pronoun is that which relates or answers to some preceding word or phrase, called the antecedent. The relative pronouns are, *he, who, which, and that*; as «The boy is good *who* attends to the advice of his parents».

What are the interrogative pronouns?

The interrogative pronouns are *who, what, and which*, being those which are made use of in asking a question; as «*who* is there?»—«*what* are you doing?»—«*which* is the book?»

What is the difference between a relative and an interrogative pronoun, when they are nominally alike?

The difference is this : that the relative has reference to a subject which is antecedent, definite, and known : but the interrogative has reference to a subject which is subsequent, indefinite, and unknown, and which is expressed and ascertained in the answer.

How is the pronoun *who* used?

When we speak of persons only; as «*who* will instruct me?»  
The boy *who* learns his lessons.

How is the pronoun *which* used?

When we speak of persons or things: as «*which* is the boy?»—«*which* is the book?»

Does not the word *that* sometimes supply the place of *who* and *which*?

Yes: as «he *that* acts wisely deserves praise»; and «the boy *that* is diligent is rewarded.»

Of what number is the pronoun *who*?

*Who* is of both numbers, and is thus declined :

*Nom.* Who. *Gen.* Whose. *Accu.* Whom: Whom did we see?  
The queen.

Does *which* never refer to persons?

Sometimes in order to distinguish between two persons:  
our father *which* art in heaven; *Which* is the queen?

What are ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS?

Adjective pronouns partake of the nature of both pronouns and adjectives, and are divided into four sorts; namely, *possessive*, *distributive*, *demonstrative*, and *indefinite*.

What are possessive pronouns?

*My*, *mine*, *thy*, *thine*, *his*, *her*, *hers*, *its*, *our*, *ours*, *your*, *yours*, *their*, *theirs*: and they are called possessive, because they relate to property or possession.

*My, thy, his, her, our, your, and their*, are joined to a substantive; as «*your pen*»: give me my doll.

*Mine, thine, hers, ours, yours, and theirs*, are used without a substantive, to which they are, however, understood to refer; as «*this book is mine*»; God is our father as well as *hers*; «*this pen is thine*», you have lost yours and they have found theirs.

What are distributive pronouns?

*Each, every, either, neither*; and are so called because they relate, separately and singly, to persons or things that make up a number; as «*each of his companions*»;—«*every person must account for himself*»;—«*I have not seen either of them*»;—«*have you seen neither of my comrades?*»

What are demonstrative pronouns?

The demonstrative pronouns particularly point out the subject to which they relate; as «*this is real munificence, that is by no means so.*»

*This* refers to the nearest person or thing, and *that* to the more distant; as «*this tree is higher than that.*» *This* indicates the latter or last mentioned; *that* the former or first mentioned; as «*an army as well as a fleet is necessary to the security of a state: this defends by sea, that by land.*»

What are indefinite pronouns?

Indefinite pronouns are those which express their subjects in a general and indefinite manner; as «*some men are virtuous, others vicious.*»—The following are of this kind; *some, other, any, he, all, such*, etc. Of these pronouns, *one* and *other* alone are varied; as *one, one's; other, other's*.—One should love *one's* parents. You should not take each *other's* books.

What is a VERB?

A verb is a word which signifies to be, to do, or to suffer; as *I am, I love, I am ruled.*



How is a verb known?

A verb may be known by its making sense with any of the personal pronouns, or by its taking the word *to* before it; as *I write*, you *play*, they *toil*; or *to write*, *to play*, *to toil*.

How many sorts of verbs are there?

Three: the active or transitive, the neuter or intransitive, and the passive.

What is an active or transitive verb?

An active or transitive verb is so called because the action passes to some object; as «*I love virtue*». Here *I* is the agent, *love* the verb, and *virtue* the object. *The man struck the horse*.

What is a verb neuter or intransitive?

A verb neuter or intransitive is generally used to express being, or a state of being; but when it implies action, the action is always confined to the agent; as *I sleep*, *I walk*, *the bull roared*.

How is a verb neuter to be known from a verb active?

By putting the pronoun *it* to the verb; if it makes sense it is *active*; if not, *neuter*; for a verb neuter will not take a noun after it.

What is a *verb passive*?

A verb passive expresses a passion, or a suffering; and necessarily implies an object acted upon, and an *agent* by which it is acted upon: as «*You are punished by John*.» *John* is the agent, *are punished* the passive verb: so called because its nominative case *you* is the passive subject, or that which receives the action.

How are verbs divided with regard to their inflection?

Verbs, in regard to their inflection, are divided into regular, irregular and defective.

What is a regular verb?

A verb that forms its tenses and participles according to the usual modes.

What are irregular verbs?

Irregular verbs are those which borrow their tenses and participles from other verbs; or form them contrary to the usual mode.

What are defective verbs?

Defective verbs are those which are used only in some of their modes and tenses; as *am, can, will*, etc.

What are impersonal verbs?

Those which, being defective in point of person, cannot be conjugated with any other nominative than the pronoun *it*: *it rains, it will rain*, etc.

What is a verb reflective?

A verb which expresses that one does anything to oneself: *I hurt myself; he flatters himself*.

What is a PARTICIPLE?

A participle is a part of speech derived from a verb, and partaking of the nature both of the verb and the adjective.

How many participles are there?

Three: the present, which ends in *ing*; the perfect, which ends in *ed*; and the compound-perfect; as *loving, loved, having loved*.

What is meant by an auxiliary verb?

A verb that is put before another verb to denote the time, or signify the mood or manner of a verb.

Which are they?

*Do, be, have, shall, will, may, can*, with their variations; and *let* and *must*, which have no variation.

What belong to verbs?

Number, person, mood, and tense.

How many numbers have verbs?

Two; the singular and the plural; as *I write, we write*; and in each number three persons.

What is meant by MOOD?

The various ways of expressing our intentions.

How many moods are there?

Five: the *indicative*, the *imperative*, the *potential*, the *subjunctive* and the *infinitive*.

What is the indicative mood?

The indicative mood simply indicates or declares a thing: as «I learn, I do not learn»; or else it asks a question: as «Dost thou learn English? Dost thou not learn it?»

What is the imperative mood?

The imperative mood commands, exhorts, entreats, or forbids; as «Fear God, honour the king, love your neighbour as yourself.»

What is the potential mood?

The potential mood expresses a thing as possible, and implies liberty, power, will, or obligation: as «I may love, it may rain, he may go, I can ride, he should learn».

What is the subjunctive mood?

The subjunctive mood implies a condition, will or supposition; and commonly depends upon another verb, and is also preceded by a conjunction, expressed or understood: as «I will go, though you chide me.»—Were he good, he would be happy»; that is «if he were good», etc.

What is the infinitive mood?

The infinitive mood expresses a thing in a general and indeterminate manner, without any distinction of number or person: as, «to act, to speak, to be cared.» This mood is known by the preposition *to* coming before the verb.

What is meant by TENSE?

Tense signifies the distinction of time, which consists of



six variations; the *present*, *imperfect*, the *perfect*, the *pluperfect*, and the *first* and *second future* tenses.

What is the present tense?

The present tense represents an action or event as passing at the time when it is mentioned; as, «*I write, I do write, or I am writing.*»

What is the imperfect tense?

The imperfect tense represents an action as past indeterminedly, or as remaining unfinished at a certain time past: as, «*I loved her for the sweetness of her mind.*»—«*She was playing on the piano when I saw her.*»

What is the perfect tense?

The perfect tense not only refers to what is past, but also has an allusion to the present time; as, «*I have learned my lesson;*—«*I have learned the lesson that was recommended to me.*»

What is the pluperfect tense?

The pluperfect tense represents a thing not only completely finished, but also as finished prior to some other point of time specified in the sentence: as, *I have learned my lesson before you came in.*»

What is the first future tense?

The first future tense represents the action as yet to come, definitely or indefinitely; that is, with, or without respect to the precise time: as, «*The sun will rise to-morrow at five o'clock*», definitely; «*The sun will rise to-morrow*», indefinitely. This tense is known by the signs *shall*, or *will* or *shall be*, or *will be*.

What is the second future tense?

The second future represents that the action will be fully accomplished at or before the time of any other future action

or event: as, «I shall have finished my writing at or before twelve o'clock.»

What is meant by the conjugation of a verb?

To conjugate a verb, is to show the different inflections or variations that it undergoes, in number, person, mood and tense.

What is the inflection or variation of the active and passive verbs called?

The inflection or variation of the active verb is called the active voice; that of the passive verb, the passive voice.

What is an ADVERB?

An adverb is a word joined to verbs, adjectives, and sometimes to other adverbs, to modify their actions or qualities; as, «he reads *well*, a *truly* goodman, he writes *very correctly*.» She dances gracefully and plays delightfully.

Have not some adverbs degrees of comparison like adjectives?

Yes; as *soon*, *sooner*, *soonest*: and those ending in *ly* are compared by *more*, and *most*; as *bravely*, *more bravely*, *most bravely*.

What adverbs are most frequently used?

Those that relate to time, place, number, order, quality, certainty, contingency, explaining, separation, joining together, indication, interrogation, excess, defect, preference, likeness or equality, unlikeness, or inequality, abatement and exclusion.

What are PREPOSITIONS?

Prepositions serve to connect words with one another, and to shew their relation to each other; as, «He went *from* Alton, *through* Farnham *to* London.» I will wait for you if you will go with me and we will call upon Eliza in our way.

Why are they called *prepositions*?

Because they are generally placed before the words to which they refer, as, «The kingdom *of* heaven is prepared *for* the righteous.»

What is a CONJUNCTION?

A conjunction is used to connect sentences together, so as out of two to make but one sentence. It sometimes connects only words.

How many sorts of conjunctions are there?

Two; the copulative and the disjunctive or contradistinctive.

What is the conjunction copulative?

The conjunction copulative serves to connect or to continue a sentence, by expressing an addition; as, «You *and* I are healthy, *because* we are temperate.»

What is the conjunction disjunctive?

The conjunction disjunctive not only connects and continues the sentence, but also implies an opposition or difference of meaning; as, «*Though* I have often attempted to learn it, *yet* I cannot succeed.»

What are the corresponding conjunctions?

Such as answer to each other in the construction of a sentence; as, *Though* or *although* is answered by *yet* or *nevertheless*, etc.

*Although* she is not young, *yet* she is handsome.

*Whether* it were you *or* I.

It was *either* this book *or* that.

It was *neither* the one *nor* the other.

*As* with the servant, *so* with the master.

It is *so* obvious *that* I need not mention it; but good tempers are loved better than bad ones.

What is an INTERJECTION?

An interjection is a word denoting any sudden affection or emotion of the mind; as, «*O how delightful!*»

### What is PUNCTUATION?

The art of using certain points or stops, so as to mark the sense in writing.

What are the several points and stops?

A *comma*, marked thus (,) A *semicolon*, thus (;) A *colon*, thus (:); A *period* or *full stop*, thus (.) A *note of interrogation*, thus (?) A *note of admiration*, thus (!).

What time must you stop at each of these?

At a comma, while I can count *one*: In the year 55 before Christ, the Roman general Julius Cæsar, having conquered Gaul, and hearing favourable reports of the country that was visible from its shores, resolved to subject it to the dominion of Rome. At the semicolon, while *two*: Alfred, who became king of England, knew not how to read at the age of eleven; but, by perseverance, he soon conquered all difficulties. At the colon, *three*: Modesty is the brightest ornament of young persons: it shines itself, and reflects lustre on them. At the period, *four*: Honour thy father and thy mother; that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee. At the note of interrogation, *four*; and at the note of admiration, *four*.

Of what use are these several points?

The period marks a whole or complete sentence; the colon, the chief member of a complete sentence; the semicolon, a half member; the comma, a subdivided half member; the note of interrogation is the sign of a question; the note of admiration shows a sudden emotion of the mind.

What is LANGUAGE?

That useful art which enables us to communicate our ideas to each other, and whose influence extends over all the other sciences.

What constitutes a language?

An assemblage of words.

Why an assemblage of words?

Because there is an inseparable connection between words and the communication of knowledge.

Is language permanent, or is it liable to change?

It is liable to change, being rendered more copious by the cultivation of the mind and the enlargement of the ideas; and susceptible of many changes by communication with foreign nations, and from various other causes.

Which is supposed to have been the primitive language?

The Hebrew; supposed to have been formed by God himself, and supernaturally communicated to the first man, Adam. The only remains of the Hebrew tongue is the Old Testament.

What was the language of the ancient inhabitants of England?

Before the landing of Julius Cæsar, it was Celtic; but during the stay of the Romans it was a mixture of the Roman language and that of the ancient Britons.

What language prevailed after the departure of the Romans?

The Saxon, which, about the year 570, was much refined by St. Augustine, who arrived from Rome to convert the Saxons to Christianity; after whose time science began to be developed.

What was the state of the Saxon language after the Norman conquest?

In the year 1066 it began to lose its ancient form and gradually to exhibit some traces of the present English.

Who were the first celebrated characters that improved our language, and when?

Sir John Gower and Geoffrey Chaucer, in the fourteenth century, who were the first English poets. The language made

great progress in the year 1500, under Sir Thomas More; and particularly in the year 1553, under Thomas Sackville, Earl of Dorset. Some time after him appeared Sir Philip Sidney, who greatly improved it.

To whom are we indebted for the perfection to which the English language has arrived at the present day?

Principally to the celebrated Shakspeare, Milton, Dryden, Addison, Swift, Bolingbroke, Pope, Johnson, Burke, and other eminent writers.

What are the principal of the ancient and modern languages?

The Hebrew, the Greek, the Latin—the Italian, the Spanish, the French, and the English.

What are their several characters?

The *Hebrew* has been called the most *emphatical* in the world; the *Greek*, the most *sublime*; the *Latin*, the most *majestic*; the *Italian*, the *softest*; the *French*, the most *polite*: *But in the Spanish are happily united*; the *emphatical* expression of the *Hebrew*; the *sublimity* of the *Greek*; the *majesty* of the *Latin*; the *softness* of the *Italian*, and the *politeness* of the *French*.

---

## SYNTAX.

333. We learn by syntax the agreement of words with each other, and their proper arrangement in sentences.

334. There are four kinds of sentences :

1.<sup>o</sup> *Simple Sentences*, which contain only one verb that is subject to changes in number and person: Time *flies*. Industry and perseverance *surmounted* all difficulties.

2.<sup>o</sup> *Compound Sentences*, which contain two or more simple sentences, and consequently more than one verb: The ox *knoweth* his owner, and the ass his master's crib; but Israel doth not *know*, my people do not *consider*.

3.<sup>o</sup> *Principal Sentences*, which are complete in themselves, and not dependant on other sentences: I went to London. Study the subject thoroughly.

4.<sup>o</sup> *Accessory Sentences*, which are dependant on other sentences: I went to London, *that I might have a personal interview with him*. Study the subject thoroughly, *if you do not wish to be accounted superficial*.

335. Sentences are composed of three principal parts :

1.<sup>o</sup> *The Subject*, being that of which we speak. It is always in the nominative case: *The army* gained a victory. *Six and three* make nine. *It* is my brother. *Gaming* is a hateful vice. *The* is called the definite article. *Well begun* is half done.

2.<sup>o</sup> *The Predicate*, being that which we assert of the subject. It is either a verb alone, or a noun, pronoun, or adjective, joined to the verb to be, or to certain other verbs called copulative verbs: She *will repent*. His father *was a merchant*. *It is I*. She *was diligent*. He *was born a prince*.

3.<sup>o</sup> *The Object*, being that which the verb acts upon. It is



either direct, or preceded by a preposition, and is always in the accusative: The boy threw *the stone*. I proved *him a traitor*. Your observing *this rule* will enable you to avoid *mistakes*. I have not seen *either*.

#### Articles.

336. The definite article *the* is employed (See lesson XIV):

1.º When a noun is not used in a general sense, but is distinguished from other nouns of a similar-kind either by an adjective, the preposition *of* etc., or the genitive case expressed or understood: I bought *the black* horse, not *the white* one. *The Low Countries*. *The time of youth* is the time of learning. What can there be so likely to sober a young writer as *the reading of a page* in Tacitus or Sallust? *The great* Corneille astonishes by beauties of the first order, and by faults of the worst taste. *The mind* and body must be in continual exercise. It appeals neither to *the understanding* nor to *the imagination*. *The soul* may be compared to a linen cloth; it must first be washed to make it white, and afterwards washed from time to time to keep it white.

2.º Before certain nouns of which there exists but that particular one spoken of and before the proper names of rivers, seas, buildings, etc.; as, *The sun, the moon, the stars, the earth, the sky, the world, the zodiac, the pole*, etc. *The equator* is a great circle of *the earth*, equidistant from the poles. *The zodiac*, on the celestial globe, is a space which extends about eight degrees on each side of *the ecliptic*. *The sun* is the fountain of light that illuminates *the world*. «You have the eyes of a gazelle», is considered all over *the East* as the greatest compliment that can be paid to a woman. France is bounded on *the south* by the Pyrenees and the Mediterranean, on *the*

east by Switzerland and Savoy, on *the north* by the Netherlands and on *the west* by *the ocean*. *The Times* is the principal newspaper in England.

3.° Before proper nouns in the plural; as, *the Alps, the Pyrenees, the Andes, the Apennines, the Netherlands*, etc. To this rule belong the names of nations, sects and parties, when the whole of the individuals composing them are meant; as, *the English, the French, the Germans, the Turks*, etc.; and certain geographical names, as: *the Crimea, the Havannah, the Levant, the Morea, the Palatinate, the Tyrol*: The Rhine enters *the Netherlands* at Lobith. The ancestor of *the Bourbons* was Robert, youngest son of Louis IX, commonly called St. Louis. *The Indians, the Chinese, the Chaldeans, the Arabians, the Egyptians, the Phœnicians* have respectively their pretensions to the honour of having invented letters.

4.° Before appellative nouns, when one individual represents the whole species, and before adjectives when they have the value of nouns: Milton in his *Paradise Lost* employs *the rose, the violet* and other flowers to beautify the blissfull bower of Eve. Of all who acknowledge the divine mission of Jesus, *the Roman Catholic* and *the Quaker* differ most widely from each other. Herodotus tells us that the Persians, from the age of five years to twenty, were taught only three things, to manage *the horse*, to use *the bow* and to speak truth. Men are like animals *the strong* prey upon *the weak*. To raise a fortune a man must have a certain kind of wit; but it is neither *the good* nor *the fine, the great* nor *the sublime, the strong* nor *the delicate*, and I am at a loss to explain which it is.

5.° Before collective nouns in a determinate sense, and before the titles of Emperor, Archduke and Czar: *The crowd* was great. *The parliament* was dissolved by the Queen. *The army* approached the town by night. *The Archduke Charles* had ar-

rived at Lisbon and appeared at the head of his troops. *The Empress Maria Theresa* had the faults as well as the virtues which are connected with a quick sensibility and a high spirit.

6.º In many idiomatical expressions, as : To run the risk, to take the air, to take the alarm, to give one the slip, to catch one in the fact, to be out of the question, to put one to the blush.

337. The definite article *THE* is omitted :

1.º Before proper nouns in the singular even if they have an attribute joined to them for expressing some quality of them. As proper nouns are considered also the days of the week, the months of the year, and the following nouns : *Elysium, Heaven, Hell, Olympus, Paradise, Providence, Purgatory, Satan, Church*, etc. (For the exceptions see R. 336, 3.º) How different is the government of *Turkey* from that of *Switzerland*! On *Wednesday* I will come, but on *Tuesday* I cannot. Mussulmans must skate into *Paradise* over Al Sirat, a bridge narrower than the thread of a famished spider. *Lord Byron's* best poem is *Childe Harold*. *Queen Elisabeth* was succeeded by James, son of *Maria Stuart*. The greatest earthquake mentioned in *ancient history* was that which happened during the reign of Tiberius Caesar. I observed for some time the distinct reflexion of *Mont Blanc* and *Mount Argentière* in the calm of the lake which I was crossing; the distance of these mountains from their mirror is sixty miles. My soul lived in *sweet Elysium*. *Fire of imagination, strength of mind and firmness of soul* are gifts of nature.

2.º Before appellative nouns, when used in a general sense in the plural, before abstract nouns and the names of stuffs: *Worms* commence the animal kingdom and lead us to *insects*. *Women* ought to be very circumspect, for a mere appearance

is sometimes more prejudicial to them than a real fault. Even *benefits* should be seasoned with obliging manners. *Perseverance* accomplishes more than *genius*. *Conceit* is to *nature* what *paint* is to *beauty*, it impairs what it would improve. *Poetry* is a mixture of *painting*, *music* and *eloquence*. He is well versed in *politics* and *statistics*. *Bread* is used by all nations, hence it is called the staff of life. *Copper* derives its name from the island of Cyprus, where the metal was first wrought by the Greeks. *Gold* was compared by the alchemists to the sun, *silver* to the moon. *Cockineal* is prepared from the dried bodies of a little insect, *coccus cacti*, which lives on various species of Cactus; *carmine* is prepared from it.

OBSERVATION 61. *Man* and *woman*, in the singular, take no article before them: What are the works of *man* when compared with those of nature? *Man* is the natural protector of *woman*.

3.<sup>o</sup> Frequently before the superlative degree of adjectives and adverbs: *Most* people like music. There are little follies in the behaviour of *most* men, which their best friend are tender to acquaint them with. She sang *most* beautifully. Language, the machine of the poet, is *best* fitted for his purpose in its rudest state. He generally talks *most* who has *least* to say. The morning is *coolest* just before sunrise. Friendship shines with *brightest* ray, where adverse fortune shrouds the day.

But one must say: she sang *the* most beautifully of all the young ladies. This is the *best* fitted for your purpose of all the tools.

4.<sup>o</sup> Before participles used as substantives, and before certain nouns which with a preposition before them form an adverbial phrase: *Eating* and *drinking* are his chief pleasures. *Singing* and *dancing* are agreeable pastimes. Come to *breakfast*. He is a merchant well known *on change*. I do not like to be

late *at church*. Bacon was well received *at court*. When the weather was fine his messmates had spread a mattress for him *on deck*, in the shade. The servant is gone *to market*. He was two years *in prison*. George went *to school* yesterday. *At sea* every thing that breaks the monotony of the surrounding expanse attracts attention. Come *to supper*, the rest are already *at table*.

OBSERV. 62. When the article is used before these nouns, it is the building or place which is referred to; as, I have been to *the church*, which is a very beautiful building.

5.º In many idiomatical expressions; as, to cast anchor, to let blood, to shake hands, to mount guard, to go to work, to set sail, to set foot in a place, to be at stake, to be at hand, etc.

338. The definite article *the* is employed to translate the Spanish expressions *cuanto más..... tanto más.....* with comparatives: *The more* we study the works of the creator, *the more* wisdom, beauty, and harmony we discover in them. Ovid compares a man of broken fortune to a falling column; *the lower* it sinks, *the greater* weight it must sustain. The memory of Alfieri is *the more* dear to the Italians, because he is the bard of freedom.

339. The article *the* follows the words, *both, half, double, treble*, etc., *twice, three times*, etc.: *Both the* horses are mine. *Half the* sum would have been enough. I must have *twice* if not *three times the* number. My house is *double the* size of his.

340. The indefinite article *A* is used:

1.º When the predicate is a substantive which expresses the rank, profession, etc.; before the names of measures, the divisions of time, etc.; the idea expressed by the predicate being applicable to other persons or things than the one spoken of: She is *a countess*. He fancies himself *a Schiller*. He

calls himself *a scholar*. He was *an enemy* to anarchy. He is become *a critic*. Mr. Macaulay was created *a baron*. Sixpence *a yard*. Sugar at fourpence *a pound*. The sessions take place four times *a year*. I take lessons twice *a week*. He always professes *a friendship* for her, and I have *a regard* for that man.

2.<sup>o</sup> Before the words *little, few, great, many*, etc. : I bought *a dozen* oranges and *a score* of oysters. Less than *a hundred* soldiers defeated more than *a thousand* natives. He has *a few* faults, but also *a great many* virtues.

3.<sup>o</sup> After the comparison of an adjective preceded by *no*: It was *no less a person* than Byron himself.

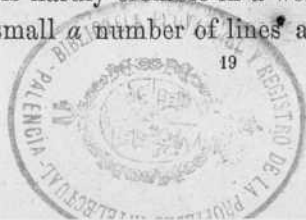
OBSERV. 63. The use of *a* before the participle is now become obsolete: he is gone *a hunting*.

4.<sup>o</sup> After *what*, when used as an exclamation before appellative nouns, and after *as*: he entered Paris *as a fugitive*. I gave him an apple *as a reward* for his good behaviour and I sent him some wheat *as a sample*. *What a* lovely evening it is! *What a* subject of contradiction! A professed judge of all things and yet a feeble worm of the earth.

341. The article  $\Lambda$  is omitted:

When the predicate is a noun expressing a rank, title or profession, limited to the person spoken of: Louis Napoleon was elected *President* of the Republic and afterwards *Emperor* of the French.

342. The indefinite article  $\Lambda$  is placed after *such, half* and *many*, and after the adjective which follows the words *as, how, so, too*: I could write *such a* work in *half a* year. *Many a* man would be contented with such success. *Many a* flower dies neglected by man. *As great a* poet as Byron is, there are many who prefer Wordsworth. It is hardly credible in a work of such length as the Iliad, *how small a* number of lines are





employed in narration. *How* mean *a* man must be thus to betray his friend. Homer sets images in *so* clear *a* light that it is impossible to be blind to them. Pliny perished by an eruption of Vesuvius from *too* eager *a* curiosity in observing the phenomena.

#### Noun.

343. The SUBJECT, which is always in the nominative case, precedes the verb : On Christmas Day, *William was crowned* in Westminster Abbey, under the title of William the First: but *he is* best known as William the Conqueror. So, on a Sunday morning, the eighteenth of September, the *Prince prepared* to give battle to the French king. In some of the nations of antiquity *fire was revered* as the supreme Deity.

344. When the sentence begins with an adverb, or an adverbial phrase, the nominative, for the sake of emphasis, is placed after the verb : Thus *ended*, by the humiliation of Athens, *that dreadful war of 27 years*, to which ambition gave rise, and which hatred made atrocious. Scarcely *had William Pitt* attained the age at which reflection commences, when Europe, with astonishment, beheld him filling the first place in the councils of the nation. Here *stretches out the great peninsula of Arabia*, for the most part a dry and desert land.

345. When the adverb, or adverbial sentence, contains a negation, it requires an auxiliary verb after it, which must always precede the nominative case : Nor *did the vain and restless poet* think it impossible that he might, from his hermitage near the Alps, dictate peace to Europe. Never *had the genius* of Frederic been so conspicuous. Nor *was there ever anything* that has contributed to enlarge my apprehensions of the power of God, so much as the little portion of astronomy



which I have been able to attain. Frederic's first battle was fought at Molwitz, and never *did the career* of a great commander open in a more inauspicious manner.

346. The adverb *there* always requires the auxiliary, or the neuter verb, to precede the nominative: A great many years ago there *dwelt*, in the ancient city of York, *five maiden sisters*, the subject of my tale.

347. The nominative is placed after the auxiliary, when by its inversion the conjunction *if* is omitted: *Were we* to begin the world again, few of us would act as we have done. Often, *did we* know the whole, we should be inclined to pity those whom we now envy.

348. The nominative is placed after the verbs *say*, *answer*, *reply* and similar ones, when they are used parenthetically: True glory, *returned he*, is founded on humanity. Hush, dear, *whispered Dorel*, beseechingly. Louisa, *repeated Mr. Bounderby*, Louisa, Louisa. Stop a bit! *cried Bounderby*. Well! *blustered Mr. Bounderby*.

349. The genitive case formed with 's is used to denote possession, and the first of the two nouns must be an animated being. (See L. XII.): The law of gravitation was Sir Isaac *Newton's* discovery. *Man's* happiness, or misery, depends mostly on himself. The *father's* prodigality will be the *son's* ruin.

350. If both nouns are inanimate objects the genitive with *of* must always be employed: The contests *of* the sword are temporary, but the slanders *of* the pen pierce to the heart. Immoderate desire *of* wealth is the destruction *of* many men.

351. With certain words, however, denoting time; measure, and value the 's is used: also with the word *sake*, and when inanimate objects are personified: At the north pole there is a *fortnight's* moonlight and a *fortnight's* darkness by turns.

The *thirty year's* war is that memorable struggle between Catholics and Protestants which desolated Germany for so long a period. There was a *moment's* pause. He lives about a *stone's* throw from my house. *Error's* long dominion is almost sufficient to make us doubt of *truth's* power. In manifestoes he might, for *form's* sake, insert some idle stories about his antiquated claim on Silesia. *Wisdom's* precepts are the delight of the good.

352. The names of localities, such as *house, lodgings, shop, coffee-house, inn, church, etc.*, are frequently omitted: The catholic religion may still exist in undiminished vigour when some traveller from New Zealand shall, in the midst of a vast solitude, take his stand on a broken arch of London Bridge to sketch the ruins of *St. Paul's*. *St. Peter's* at Rome is the largest cathedral in Europe. Sometimes I am seen thrusting my head into a round of politicians at *Will's*, sometimes I smoke a pipe at *Child's*.

353. The possessive case frequently supplies the place of the demonstrative pronouns *that, those* (el de, la de, etc.): I have neither the scholar's melancholy which is emulous; nor the *musician's* which is fantastical; nor the *courtier's* which is proud; nor the *soldier's* which is ambitious; nor the *lawyer's* which is politic; nor the *lady's* which is nice; nor the *lover's* which is all these.

The sailor's home is on the main;  
The warrior's, on the tented plain;  
The maiden's, in her bower of rest;  
The infant's on its mother's breast.

354. When several nouns are intimately connected with each other, the last only receives the sign of the possessive case: The *Emperor of Lilliput's* features are strong and masculine. Go this moment to *Mr. Thompson, the jeweller's*.

355. When two genitives follow each other *of* and *'s* should be used alternately, if the nature of the nouns admit of it: The avarice *of my sister's* husband may gain him riches, but it will not make him friends. The Princess Johanna had gone to Portugal as the bride *of the heir of* that kingdom.

356. When one object, or an indefinite number of objects, is expressed, of which the possessor has more than those mentioned, not only the genitive with *of* is employed, but the possessing person takes also the apostrophe and *s*: Hamlet is a tragedy *of Shakspeare's* (de las de S.). There is a fine picture *of Ruben's* in the church of St. Peter, at Cologne. Several pupils *of Mr. Barden's* (de la pension de.....) are going home for the holidays.

357. The apostrophe and *s* can never be used with adjectives employed as nouns: The French force was reduced to such extremity that to escape the vengeance *of the Blacks* it surrendered to the English.

358. The DATIVE case is employed instead of the genitive when more stress is laid on the relation which one noun bears to another than on the idea of possession. (See R. 23.): The next most remarkable event was the seizure by Henry of the heir *to* the Scottish throne, James, a boy of nine years old. The poet Prior was Secretary *to* the embassy at the Hague; Gentleman *of* the Bedchamber *to* King William, Secretary *to* the embassy in France and then ambassador *to* France. Darius said he was an enemy *to* the Athenians, because the Ionians, by their aid, had taken Sardes.

359. The dative case always follows the verb, except in cases where great emphasis is laid upon it, in which case it may stand at the beginning of the sentence: In 1634 Thomas Parr was presented *to the king*, being 152 years of age. I granted *them* the favour they asked. *To Columbus* we owe

the discovery of America. *To that man* I owe the happiest days of my life.

360. The ACCUSATIVE case always follows the verb, except when it is occasionally placed at the beginning of the sentence for the sake of the emphasis : A German author of the seventeenth century said satirically of his contemporaries, « If a man who has *ordinary cleverness* and plenty of words cannot make *himself* a tolerable German poet in a fortnight, he does not deserve *another dinner*. » *Beer* I very seldom drink. *Their estates*, and the estates of all the nobles who had fought against him, king William gave to his own Norman knights.

361. The accusative generally precedes the dative : Luther had thrown down the *guntlet to the Vatican* by publicly burning the papal bull at Wittenberg.

362. With certain verbs the dative usually precedes the accusative, but then the preposition *to* is omitted. (See rule 475.) : The most trifling actions of a man give *an acute observer some notion* of his mind.

363. *It* and *them* always precede the dative, whether the preposition *to* be omitted or not : Give *it* me, or *to* me. I will send *them* you to-morrow.

364. When the accusative has an explanatory sentence joined to it, it always follows the dative : I described *to* mister Madden *the scenes* of horror which we had witnessed. Relate *to* me *the whole* of the circumstances connected with that affair. I cannot impute *to* him *such an intention* as you describe.

365. The titles *Señor*, *Señora*, before titles expressing the rank, quality, profession or calling of a person must never be translated into English : Well, *Captain*, what do you think of it? *Professor* Owen was here this morning : he himself, *Duchess*, and in this moment occupied with you.

366. In speaking of two or more persons of the same name and title the sign of the PLURAL can be used with either the name or the title: The two Miss *Johnsons*. The two *Misses* Johnson. The two Mr. *Smiths*. The two *Messieurs* Smith.

OBSERV. 64. If the title is a degree of relationship, the title, and not the name, takes the sign of the plural: The *brothers* Baring. My *uncles* Pitt.

367. The plural of some nouns is used in English, where in Spanish only the singular is used: Gentlemen, keep your *seats*. She bade the girls hold up their *heads*. They raised their *voices*; their healths were drunk with loud hurrahs.

368. The words *brace*, *stone* (14 pounds weight), *couple*, *dozen*, *score* (the number 20) and *gross* are employed in the singular: I sent him three *brace* of partridges, and a man of fourteen *stone*. I bought two *gross* of steel pens.

369. When ADJECTIVES, or participles used as adjectives, are joined to other words, they are placed after the noun: England is a country *rich in coal and minerals of all descriptions*. Frederic the Great's household was managed with a frugality, *unusual* in the establishments of opulent subjects — *unexampled* in any other palace.

370. Some adjectives, used with the noun as titles, are placed after the noun: We are sure that the superiority of Milton's *Paradise Lost* to his *Regained* is not more decided than the superiority of the *Paradise Regained* to every other poem which has since made its appearance. His excellency the ambassador *extraordinary* appeared in a suit of velvet richly embroidered, the minister *plenipotentiary* in a scarlet gown.

371. Some adjectives can be placed before or after the noun, being placed after it when greater emphasis is required: God *Almighty*. *Almighty* God. It is to be regretted that a

custom *truly elegant and touching* has disappeared from general use. *Monday last. Last Monday.* Milton's public conduct was such as was to be expected from a man of a spirit *so high*, and an intellect *so powerful*.

372. The proper names of places are used as adjectives, and also some other nouns of which there exists no corresponding adjective, and the names of stuffs and metals: Clive was in his eighteenth year, when he accepted a writership in the service of the *East India* Company. The *Times* is the most important of the *London* Newspapers. The river Severn, the second river in England, empties itself into the *Bristol* channel. The first *silk*-worms were brought from the East Indies to Constantinople, in the year 555, by two monks. The *gold* coin current in Great Britain is composed of twenty-two parts of gold, and two of copper.

373. *Wool, wood, lead* and *flax* have the corresponding adjectives *woollen, wooden, leaden* and *flaxen*, which must always be used. *Gold* and *silk* have *golden* and *silken*, which are used only figuratively: A *flaxen* headed cow-boy came whistling o'er the lea. The *golden* rays of the setting sun shed a mellow light athwart the windows of the old abbey. Her long *silken* ringlets waved over a neck of spotless white.

374. If the adjective stands for persons, it is always in the plural, though without taking the sign of this number: *The humble, the meek, the merciful, the just, the pious* and *the devout* are everywhere of one religion. Man is a tool-making and machine-making animal; by means of this faculty alone he has triumphed over the subtlety of *the cunning*, the swiftness of *the fleet* and the force of *the strong*. At Athens, the purses of *the rich* were laid under regular contribution for the support of *the poor*.

375. When in Spanish the adjective is in the singular, and



stands for one person, in English an appellative noun must be added : The difference between the rich *man* and the poor *one* is this :—the former eats when he pleases, the latter when he can. The wicked *man* always thinks other people as bad as himself. The learned *man* sees much where the ignorant *one* sees nothing.

376. The adjectives *English*, *French*, *Scotch*, *Irish*, *Welsh* and *Dutch* are used with the article *the* to denote the whole nation. When separate individuals are expressed, they are joined to the words *man* and *men*: but those ending in *an*, denoting the names of nations take an *s* in the plural : The *Dutch* seemed to be paralyzed with terror at the approach of the immense armies of Louis. The *English* under James the first and Charles the first were less oppressed than the *French* under Louis the Fifteenth and Louis the Sixteenth. I met at the count's three *Austrians*, two *Prussians* and two *Italians*. The proposed abdication of Charles the fifth filled the *Castilians*, as it did all Europe, with astonishment. The *Spartans* contrived to be a day too late for the battle of Marathon; they suffered the *Athenians*, to whom they owed their lives and liberties, to be a second time driven from their country by the *Persians*.

377. The adjectives *Spanish*, *Flemish*, *Swedish*, *Danish*, *Polish* and *Turkish* can never be used as nouns : and those ending in *ese* denote the people without any change of termination : Charles the fifth had disgusted his *Spanish* subjects by the preference he had given to his *Flemish*. In 1396 the *Genoese* put themselves under the protection of Charles 6, King of France.

378. The English language has very few adjectives derived from the names of cities, and not many nouns to denote their inhabitants : A *Parisian* hat. The *Parisians*. The *Londoners*.



The *Neapolitans*. The *Genoese*. The *Milanese*. The *Venetians*. The *Florentines*. The *Viennese*. The *Hannoverians*. The *Romans*. The *Athenians*. The *Thebans*. Even these can denote the inhabitants of the states rather than of the cities. In other cases various expressions are used, such as, The *people of Berlin*. The *inhabitants of Cologne*. The *Dresden people*. A *Manchester man*. Some *persons of Hamburg*.

379. The following adjectives are also nouns, and are used both in the singular and plural: *Black, divine, equal, female, fluid, fugitive, inferior, junior, liquid, lunatic, male, native, natural, patient, sage, saint, savage, solid, superior, white. Catholic, Protestant, etc.; Tory, Whig, Radical, confederate, malcontent*. The *whites* of America despise the *blacks*. *Solids* are generally heavier than *fluids*. The *malcontents* were dispersed. The *Whigs* were defeated by a large majority.

380. In order to denote the extent of the difference between two objects COMPARED, the preposition *BY* is generally placed after the adjective: The towers on the walls of Babylon were higher *by* ten feet than the walls. The emperor of Lilliput is *taller by* the breadth of my nail than any of his court.

381. The SUPERLATIVE *most* is used before an adjective to express its quality in a high degree. (See R. 116, 117, 119.): The dog is a *most watchful* animal, and yet he sleeps a great part of the day. I am not sure that any verses in our language surpass, in vigour and feeling, Byron's *most beautiful* description of the evening which preceded the battle of Quatre Bras.

382. *Farther* and *farthest* are used only of distance, *further* and *furthest* in argumentative discourse: The herring is not found in warm regions, nor *farther* south than the northern coast of France. Saturn is the *farthest* from the sun of any of the planets that can be seen by the naked eye. I have nothing

*further* to add. All *further* search for Franklin has been abandoned by the government.

383. *Later*, *latest* are used of time; *latter* and *last* denote the order of succession; and *lesser* denotes the smaller of two objects: Milton is perhaps the only poet of *later* times who has been distinguished by the excellence of his Latin verse. Geography and chronology are the two eyes of history; the former tells you where events happened and the *latter* at what particular period. The first ingredient in conversation is truth, the next good sense, the third good humour, the *last* wit. Asia Minor is sometimes called the *lesser* Asia.

384. *Nearest* is that which is at the shortest distance; *next* denotes the order of succession: Of all the planets Mercury is *nearest* to the sun, being about thirty seven millions of miles from that body. The *next* planet beyond Mercury is Venus. The moon, *next* to the sun, has of all the heavenly bodies, the greatest influence on the earth.

385. *Older* and *oldest* are used when the objects mentioned are compared with others. *Elder* and *eldest* are used either alone, or as attributes before the noun, consequently *elder* never takes *than* after it: How many years *older* than you is your eldest brother? It was the most violent hurricane, which had happened within the memory of that renowned personage, the *oldest* inhabitant. The *elder* Pitt was created Earl of Chatham. The *eldest* son succeeds to the title and estates of his father.

386. Some few adjectives, which in Spanish are used with an impersonal verb, are used with a personal verb in English: We had *like* (es probable) to have been too late. We are *likely* to have rain. What makes you so *long* in getting ready? The Athenian courts of justice were not the purest in the world, but their decisions were at least as *likely* to be just, as the abuse of a deadly enemy.

387. The adjectives *like*, *unlike*, *worth*, govern the accusative case : *Like me*, you can see the error, but cannot correct it. Milton's spirits are *unlike* those of almost all other writers. It is not *worth* the trouble of fetching it.

388. In NUMBERS below sixty the small number may be placed after or before the large one ; as, 21, *twenty-one*, or *one-and twenty* ; 45, *forty-five*, or *five and forty*.

389. *Hundred*, *thousand* and *million* generally take the article *a* before them ; The numeral *one* is used before them in reckoning large numbers : Lord Byron received *one* thousand five hundred and seventy-five pounds for the third Canto of Childe Harold and thousand *one* hundred for the fourth. He lives at number *one* hundred and forty.

390. The year of our Lord is more frequently reckoned by hundreds than thousands ; as, 1858, *eighteen hundred* and fifty-eight.

391. In titles the ORDINAL numbers are placed after the noun ; as, Scene *the first*, act *the second*. Chapter *the twenty-first*, Louis *the fourteenth*. Otherwise they are placed like adjectives before the noun ; as, I liked the *first scene* of the second act. I read as far as the *twenty-first chapter*.

#### Pronouns.

392. YOU is the only PRONOUN by which persons are addressed in conversation ; to a grown up person, or a little child ; to a perfect stranger, or the nearest relation. No, Madam, no, cried Amy, interrupting the queen, as there is a God above us, I am not the sordid wretch *you* would make me. *You* are right, John, with industry and sobriety *you* may always get a good living. Have *you* written *your* exercise, Harry ? Yes, father.

393. *Thou* is used in addressing persons only in poetical language, and by certain religious sects : Why dost *thou* come to my presence with *thy* shadowy arms? Do I fear *thy* gloomy form, spirit of dismal Loda? Lead me in *thy* truth and teach me: for *Thou* art the God of my salvation; on *thee* do I wait all the day. Yes, friend Newland, what is it that *thou* requirest? said the young quakeress. Go, good Tressilian, I have injured *thee*, too—I robbed *you* of a childish heart.

394. *Ye* is frequently used in poetical language by English authors as an accusative : *Ye* winds, breathe soft or loud; and wave your tops, *ye* pines; fountains, and *ye* that warble as *ye* flow, time his praise.

395. The pronoun *it* is employed as impersonal subject, joined by the verb *is* to the personal pronouns and to nouns in the nominative : It *is* *I*, Hannibal, that now *ask* a peace, and thinking it expedient I will inviolably maintain it. O blessed health, *it is thou* who *enlargest* the soul and *openest* all its powers to receive instruction. It *is* only *he* who can say to the ocean : «Thus far shalt thou go and no farther.» It *was the Egyptians* who first observed the course of the stars, regulated the year and invented arithmetic.

396. The personal pronouns of the first and second person may also be used as subject, joined by the copulative verb to a pronoun in the third person : *I* am *he* who gave the order. *Thou* art *she* who brought this charge against the innocent girl.

397. *It* is used as impersonal subject when the person spoken of is as yet unknown to the speaker : Who is there? *It* is the shoemaker. *It* was Walter who called on me this morning. *It* is not always the most skilful persons that succeed best.

398. When the person or thing spoken of is known to the

speaker, the proper pronoun must be employed: Who is mister Smith? *He* is a shoemaker. *She* is the first actress of the present day. Do you know these gentlemen? *They* are friends of mine. There is an intimate connection between benevolence and humility; *they are* virtues of the same stock.

OBSERV. 65. See the following examples: *Were there* but one virtuous man in the world, he would hold up his head with confidence and honour. *There can be* no greater liberty than a good government. *There cannot live* a more unhappy creature than an ill-natured man. *There must be* eating and drinking, it is only the excess which must be blamed. *There was* a great crowd of people. *There is* a man here who witnessed the affair. *There were* some passages which did not please me. *There cannot be* much more wine in the cellar. *There has been* a man murdered to-day in the town. *Is there* anything in the world more worthy of our love than virtue?

399. The Spanish pronoun *lo*, when it refers to an adjective, a verb or a sentence, is translated by *so*: if it refers to a noun is either translated by *such*, *one*, *it*, or is omitted: If you wish to appear *learned*, endeavour to be *so*, there is no shorter method. In Italy the infantry was regarded as comparatively *worthless* and was neglected till it became really *so*. A husband and wife that *love* each other show their children and servants that they should do *so* too. The person you relieve may be an honest man, and I know that you who relieve him are *such*. My brother is a captain, and I hope to become *one* too. His father was a musician, but he is not.

400. *Lo* is not translated at all after conjunctions of comparison, nor after the auxiliary verbs when they refer to a previous verb: Men in high situations are not always great men, though by courtesy it is supposed *they are*. He was not rewarded as he deserved *to be*.

401. ONE is sometimes used in the place of a substantive not expressed in the sentence : Unto Thee will I sing with the harp ; O thou Holy *one* of Israel. And thou shalt know that I the Lord am thy Saviour and Redeemer, the mighty *one* of Jacob.

402. *One* is frequently used after *this* and *that*, but is not indispensable. It can never be employed after the plurals *these* and *those*; nor for an abstract noun or the names of stuffs: That house belongs to me, *this one* to my brother. *These* apples are sweet, but *those* are not. Use old *wine*, not *new*! To prosecute him would be throwing good *money* after *bad*.

403. *One* is not used after the superlative, and seldom after the comparative, of adjectives of one syllable : Reason teaches us to face small dangers in order to avoid *greater*, and even to undergo the *greatest* when our duty requires it. The fairest flowers are not always the *sweetest*. What a splendid horse, I never saw a *finer*! The English racehorses are the *fleetest*. According to the proverb, the Turks of Egripo and the Jews of Salonica, are the *worst* of their respective races.

404. ONE as a substitute for a noun corresponds to the Spanish *uno*, *se*; and ONE'S to *de uno*, *su*, *sus*, etc.: It is more charitable to kill than to scorn; to call *one* knave than fool. It is good to have a friend to protect *one* in the hour of danger or difficulty. To be blind to *one's* own faults, and clear-sighted with regard to those of others, is the sign of a narrow mind. It is *one's* duty to communicate *one's* knowledge. To tell *one's* own secrets is folly, to tell those of others is treachery. There is something, I think, much more vulgar than eating peas with a knife, and that is insolence to *one's* inferiors.

405. *One* means the same as *a certain*; and *the one* is also used instead of *that*. The old gentleman asked me if I knew *one* Salomon Flamborough in my part of the country. I like his



piano better than *the one* I bought. This gun is not so good as *the one* I purchased in London.

406. The pronoun *SE* must be translated in various ways according to the sense.

1.º By *we*, when that which is affirmed may include the speaker.

2.º By *you*, when the person spoken to may be included: by *they*, when both the speaker and the person spoken to are excluded: If *you* put a musical snuff-box upon an inverted tumbler, *you* hear the music much more distinctly. If *you* look at a waterfall, with the sun at your back, *you* will see a part of a rainbow. If *we* do good without seeking praise or reward, *we* shall obtain both at last. *They* drink much strong tea in England.

3.º By *a man, men, people; one*, in a more indefinite sense, when the sentiment expressed may be applied to all mankind, and though not often, by some other words, such as: *a person, any one, somebody*: A contented mind is the greatest blessing *a man* can enjoy in this world. *A man* has no more right to say an uncivil thing than to act one. *Men* should seek their happiness in themselves. The long feast had at length its end, and while the goblet circulated freely, *men* talked of the feast of the preceding tournament. But what is *a person* to do in such a case? It is an undoubted truth that the less *one* has to do, the less time *one* finds to do it in; *one* can do it when *one* will, and therefore *one* seldom does it at all. What *people* style greatness, glory, power, is in the eyes of God only misery.

4.º By the passive verb, when that which is said is in a very general sense, and not applicable to a limited number of persons: The fabled apples, on the brink of the lake Asphaltés, *were said* to be fair without and within ashes. The



total absence of light *is called* darkness. Before the palace *were seen* two mortars and six cannons, all made of ice. The compass *may be said* to have opened to man the dominion of the sea. *It may be said* that the prosperity of Buonaparte evaporated in the smoke of Moskow.

407. The adjective POSSESSIVE pronouns are generally employed instead of the article, when reference is made to any part of the person, or dress: One of the maiden's aunts whispered something in *her* ear. The stranger shook *his* head silently, but positively, at every offer. He bit *his* lip, as I looked steadfastly in *his* face. The bull defends himself with *his* horns, the horse with *his* feet, and the dog with *his* teeth.

OBSERV. 63. Occasionally the Spanish form of expression is used. I looked *him in the* face. He took *him by the* arm, and walked with him up the street.

408. The substantive possessive pronouns are sometimes used absolutely at the beginning of a sentence, the object to which they refer being mentioned in another part of the sentence. *Mine* was a strange fate. *Yours* has been a strange, eventful life.

409. *Mine* and *thine* are frequently used in poetry before a vowel instead of *my* and *thy*. Since *mine* eyes beheld thee, blind I seem to be. Ask *thine* own heart.

410. The word *own* is sometimes added to the possessive pronouns to give more emphasis to the idea of possession. She had a large fortune of *her own*. Whose horse is that? My *own*.

411. The REFLECTIVE pronouns are employed when the doer of the action is also the receiver of the action; in other words, when the same person is both nominative and accusative to the verb. *I* will apply *myself* more to acquire knowledge than to show it. *Leonidas* considered *himself* as a willing sacrifice offered up for the good of his country, but Socrates



thought *himself* an inhabitant and citizen of the whole world. We will not take upon *ourselves* the invidious task of settling precedence between such writers as Dante and Milton: because in proportion as we value *ourselves* we diminish our estimation of others.

412. When the plural pronoun *you* is used in addressing one person, the pronoun is *yourself*; in like manner the singular *ourselves* is employed, when *we* is used by one person: To know *yourself* you have only to make a true statement of those who have ever loved or hated you. When you do good to another, you may be sure that you are doing good to *yourself*. It is well, said Prince John, to-morrow we will *ourselves* conduct this mute sovereign to her seat of dignity.

413. The Spanish *se*, when used indefinitely with an infinitive, or the pronoun *uno*, is translated by *one's self*: To reform *one's self* is the best manner of reforming others, and to show *one's self* moderate in prosperity is the highest degree of wisdom. We are commanded to love one's neighbour as *one's self*.

414. The substitution of the personal pronoun takes place sometimes: I laid *me* down to die, but was saved by the owner of the house, who heard my groans. The general said he would take *upon him* all responsibility.

415. With the emphatic pronouns the personal pronouns are sometimes omitted: Constantine was a few years older than *myself*. He unfortunately confided in persons less able than *himself*. The wicked always think other people as bad as *themselves*.

416. The word *self* is sometimes used substantively: Eustathius, besides his own dear *self* valued but one thing in the world—namely, money.

417. The adjectives *former* and *latter* supply the place of

the Spanish *éste*, *aquél*, when referring to two things in the same sentence. (See rule 383.) But *this* and *that* are also used in this case : The advantage which talent has over beauty is that *the former* pleases at all times, *the latter* has but one time to please. Idleness and industry produce very different results; *this* leads to comfort and respectability, *that* to want and degradation.

418. The DEMONSTRATIVE pronouns in an accessory sentence cannot like the Spanish *éste*, etc., refer to a person in the principal sentence; but the personal pronouns are employed : I wrote to the lady's sister, but *she* did not deign to answer my letter. I applied to the Captain, but *he* could give me no redress.

419. *This* and *these*, as *for*, express duration of time, and answer to *desde hace*, *durante*, *hace* : I have not found all the benefit I expressed at Scarborough, where I have been *these* six weeks. I have known him *these* six years. I have been waiting for you *this* hour. She had felt *for* some months past that her days were numbered.

420. The demonstrative pronouns are used absolutely, the noun to which they refer being in another part of the sentence : *These* are thy glorious works. *That* is the fruit of procrastination.

421. WHO refers only to persons and things personified; *which* refers to animals and inanimate things : The *man who* can live in dishonour is unworthy of life. Those men *who* wish to make themselves feared, seldom make themselves beloved. He alone deserves the name of a great statesman, *whose* principle it is to extend the power of the people in proportion to the extent of their knowledge. O thou, Parnassus, *whom* I now survey. Tacitus informs us that songs were the only *memorials* of the past *which* the ancient Germans possessed.

By the continual motion of the air, noxious *vapours*, *which* are destructive to health, are dispersed.

OBSERV. 64. The genitive *whose* is however, frequently made use of in speaking of things and animals: None are pleased with an eye *whose* colour is dull. The portal, *whose* archway was dimly lighted up.

422. *Which* is used after collective nouns, even when persons are referred to: Lycurgus made the whole of his community a standing *army*, every member *of which* had a common right to the services of a crowd of miserable bondmen. He was the founder of a dynasty *which* has ruled the land for centuries.

423. The genitive *of which* is usually placed after the noun to which it belongs: The Greek drama, on the *model of which* Milton's Samson Agonistes was written, sprung from the ode. With sly gravity the Norman knights and nobles beheld the ruder demeanour of Athelstane and Cedric at a banquet to the *form and fashion of which* they were unaccustomed.

OBSERV. 65. *Of which*, when it refers to a noun which is the object of an active verb, may sometimes be placed before the verb and noun: There were some valuable articles *of which* I hastened to secure *the possession*.

424. *That* is used instead of *who* and *which*:

1.<sup>o</sup> Indiscriminately, or to avoid the too frequent repetition of *who* or *which*: A volume *which* contains more words than ideas is like a tree *that* has more foliage than fruit. The lady *whom* you saw is not the lady *that* I mean.

2.<sup>o</sup> When persons and things are mentioned in the same sentence: He was dissatisfied with the riches and the wife *that* fell to his lot.

3.<sup>o</sup> After the interrogative pronoun *who?*, after the superlatives of adjectives, and the indefinite pronouns: Who *that*

has read the history of Mary Queen of Scots does not pity her faults and her misfortunes? Money is the *most* useful servant *that* we can have, but the most tyrannical master. The *best* protection *that* a prince can have is the heart of his subjects. Hannibal was perhaps the *greatest* general *that* the world ever saw. *None* was ever a great poet *that* applied himself much to any thing else.

425. *That* can never take a preposition before it; either *who* or *which* must be employed, or the preposition may be placed at the end of the sentence: He who calls a man ungrateful sums up all the evil *that* a man can be guilty of. The expenses *that* he was led *into* ultimately ruined him.

426. *What* can never refer to a sentence or any word preceding it: *What* is *astonishing* is *not always what* is *pleasing*. He requested permission to renew his visit, *which*, as he was our landlord, we most readily agreed to. Timoleon bore prosperity more wisely than adversity, *which* is thought a more difficult thing. He was silent, *which* only enraged his adversary the more.

427. *What*—*what* answer to the Spanish *parte..... parte*: *What* with money, *what* with persuasion, I induced him at length to agree to our scheme.

428. *What* is also used of persons and things, but in a more indefinite sense than *which*. *What* wonders of creation are seen in the exact revolutions of the heavenly bodies! A physician ought to know *what* are the sound and healthy functions of an animal body, and *what* are the distempers and dangers which attend it. Tell me in *what* affair you require my advice.

429. In the accusative case and when no ambiguity of meaning arises from it, the relative pronouns may be omitted: Censure is the *tax* a man pays to the public for being eminent.

The first *work William* had to do was to conquer the English thoroughly. Cyrus said that he was unworthy of commanding who was not better than *those he* commanded.

430. With *there is, there are*, the relative is sometimes omitted, even in the nominative. The relative and the copulative verb are frequently omitted before adjectives and participles : There is *nothing makes* a man suspect much more than to know a little. There 's not an *eye will* weep for me. He was going to salute my daughter, like *one certain* of a kind reception.

431. The *determinative pronouns* do not form in English a separate class. The following examples will illustrate the use of these pronouns corresponding to the Spanish : *He who* will not reason is a bigot; *he who* cannot a fool; and *he who* dares not a slave. *He* is rich *whose* income is more than his expenses. You may sooner expect a favour from *him who* has already done you one than from *him to whom* you have done it. Petrarch's poems in the ancient language, though much praised by *those who* have never read them, are wretched compositions. Time moves quickly, but to *those whose* only occupation it is to watch its flight, its progress is slow. *Those who* govern are like the celestial bodies, they emit splendour, but are never at rest. Fortune and applause will not make *him great whom* opposition and adversity have left little. A tide is *that* motion of the water in the seas and rivers by *which* they are found to rise and fall in a regular succession.

432. In solemn language the personal pronoun is sometimes omitted : *Who*, under pressing temptations to lie, adheres to truth, is near the summit of wisdom and virtue. *Who* is deaf to the calls of duty and honour must renounce the hope of gaining the respect of his fellow-men.

433. *Such...as* is frequently used in English for the deter-



minate pronouns, *el que*, *los que*, etc. : *Such* as talk much, generally say many things that had better been left unsaid! *Such* of the doctrines of the Gospel *as* are level to human capacity appear to be agreeable to the purest truth and the soundest morality.

434. Unlike the Spanish *todo*, *all* requires the article *the* after it, only when the following noun is used in a definite sense : I said in my haste, *all* men are liars. We shall never be able to penetrate *all the* secrets of Nature. I would not do it for *all the* gold of California. I am *all* attention.

Idiomatical expressions with *all* : It is all the same to me. Not at all. I gave him nothing at all (*absolutamente*). You will be all the (*tanto*) better for a good night's rest. When all comes to all. At all events. By all means. All day and all night. First of all. All of a sudden. All at once. I thought so all along. It is all over. It is all over dirt.

435. ANY is also used in affirmative sentences, in which case its meaning is more extended and indefinite than that of *some* : Air may be vitiated by remaining closely pent up in *any* place for a considerable length of time. One of the best rules in conversation is never to say a thing which *any* of the company can wish we had rather left unsaid. There is more variety of characters and speeches in the Iliad than in *any* other poem.

436. *Some* may also be used in a question, but with a more definite signification than *any* : Will you take *some* wine or beer? Was there not *some* brandy in the bottle? Can I offer you *some* beef or *some* veal?

OBSERV. 66. The question, *will you have any wine or beer?* asks whether the person wishes anything to drink ; the question, *will you have some wine or beer?* supposes that he wishes something to drink, and enquires whether it is to be wine or beer.



437. *Some* is used when reference is made to one or more particular objects and not to any indefinite one of the same class : Get *some* strong man to carry it. It was certainly *some* great lady who gave it him.

438. BOTH must be placed before the article, or demonstrative and possessive pronouns. *Both these* rivers mix their waters with those of the Amazon. *Both those* girls are my sisters. Treat every stranger as a friend; every friend as a stranger; and treat them *both* as they deserve. *Both his* houses are sold.

439. *Both* can never be employed when the action of the verb is reciprocal between two persons; not when any word such as *each*, *either*, *neither*, *one*, *which*, is used to refer to one of the two objects separately: in this case *the two* must be used : *The two* rivers *meet* about a hundred miles from the sea. *Which of the two* was the more intrepid, Caesar or Alexander? *Each of the two* brothers agreed to give up something of his claims, and that the *longer-liver* of *the two* should inherit all the dominions of the other.

440. EACH refers to the single objects of a given or limited number : *Each* of his children will have a thousand pounds. At *each* end of the room stood a large iron stove. We shall *each* of us receive the reward to which we are entitled. Cassius and Brutus were defeated at Philippi, and *each* of them put an end to his existence.

441. *Every* refers to an unlimited number, and cannot be used without a noun or pronoun : In the first ages of the world *every* father governed his children with an absolute power. *Every* man who heads a rebellion against an established government stakes his life on the event. *Every* man has his foibles, *every* plant its virtues. The President of the United States is chosen *every* four years.

442. EITHER and *neither*, though, strictly speaking, they refer to two objects only, are however frequently used of more than two. *Either* is used poetically instead of *each*: Is *either* of his daughters married? The truth may lie on *either* side, or *neither* side. Have you seen *either* of these three towns? No, *neither*. *Neither* of my sisters was at the ball. There is a splendid fountain on *either* side of the pillar.

443. *Either* places the choice of objects at the option of the person spoken to; *one of the two* limits the choice to the will of the speaker: You may have *either* of these books (namely, whichever you please). You may have *one of the two* (namely, whichever I may choose to give you).

444. *Little* and *few* are used with the article *a* to express a larger portion or number than is denoted by *little* and *few* when used alone, as the Spanish, *un, unos*: *A little* wine is not injurious to health. *A few* books will be the best present you can make. Where *little* is given, *little* will be required. He who is hungry wants *little* sauce. *Few, few* shall part where many meet. He has *few* good friends.

#### Verb.

445. The VERB agrees with its subject in number and person: A *crowd* of men *was* present. The Hymalayan *mountains* *are* more than five miles high. His only food *are* *vegetables*. It is *I* who *am* chosen. *Eight legions* *were* the principal strength of the empire.

446. Two or more SUBJECTS in the singular, joined by a copulative conjunction, require the verb in the plural: Chronology *and* geography *are* called the eyes of history. The first *and* second volumes *are* already published.

447. When two or more subjects in the singular are separated by a disjunctive conjunction, the verb must be in the

singular : Neither astrology *nor* alchemy *deserves* the name of science. To boast of our own knowledge, *or* to despise those who know less, *is* the sign of a narrow mind. Neither precept *nor* example *is* so forcible as habit. Henry *as well as* his brother, *is* gone to America. Not only he, *but* his brother too, *was* ruined by speculations.

448. When there are two or more subjects in a sentence, and the first is in the singular, the verb must be in the singular, provided that the verb and subject form a complete sense. If the other subjects are required to complete the sense, the verbs must be in the plural : Their *religion*, as well as their customs, *has* been misrepresented. *Health*, with enough to live upon and an amiable wife, *is* all I require. The *prince*, as well as his family, *was* to blame. The *king*, with the *lords* and *commons*, *form* an excellent frame of government.

449. COLLECTIVE nouns require the verb to be in the singular or plural, according as they imply unity or plurality : The *public* *has* long been agreed as to the merit of Milton's poetry. In vain the whig *ministry* *overwhelms* us with its victories. The *parliament* *is* dissolved. The assembly *was* very noisy. The *fleet* *was* dispersed. A *people* *have* often repented, a monarch seldom or never. The *committee* *were* divided in their opinions. The people *have* no opinion of their own. The cattle *were* driven to their pasture.

450. Some nouns when used figuratively with a plural signification, require the verb in the plural, while retaining the form of the singular : Seventy *head* of cattle *were* sold. Nearly five hundred *horse* and two thousand *foot* *were* killed; two hundred and fifty *cannon* and many wagons of ammunition were taken by the allies.

451. Some few nouns have a plural termination, but, being singular, require the verb in the singular: *Has* *news* been re-

ceived from the Crimea? This means *was* adopted and it succeeded. A summons *was* sent him.

452. The words *pair, couple, brace, dozen, score*, require the verb in the singular when used alone, and in the plural when followed by *of* and the noun to which they refer: A dozen *is* not enough, a score *is* too many. I have bought a pair of gloves, they *are* of the best quality.

453. When there are two subjects of different PERSONS, the verb agrees with the first person in preference to the second and with the second rather than with the third: What thou and *I have* said proves to be true. I and my father *are* going to the seaside. *You* and your sister *have* been to London, have you not?

454. When the nouns are in the singular and are separated by *nor*, or *or*, the verb usually agrees with the noun which is nearest to it: Either I or thou *hast* done it. Neither you nor your brother *was* there.

455. When a predicate has to be repeated in a sentence, or in the answer to a question, the AUXILIARY only is used, the verb being omitted: Have you seen the verses? Yes, I *have*. Do you recollect what words are written over the verses? Yes, I *do*. The Earl of Chatham possessed great genius, and so *did* his son William Pitt. Who could not feel as I *do*, I condemn; who, feeling so, yet would not act as I *shall*, I despise. The animalcules in a drop of water swim about with as much ease as wales do in the Ocean.

456. The auxiliary is omitted in exclamations: What! *I kill* the sacred cows of Brama! Wardour *take* advantage of a fallen foe! No, I cannot believe it. But why *ask* forgiveness of one whose heart is stone! My own children thus *to desert* me!

457. The present and imperfect tenses of TO BE are used

before the infinitive of a passive verb to translate the Spanish *deber*, with the infinitive of the active verb : Utensils made of copper or brass *are* if possible *to be avoided* for culinary purposes. Books *are* never *to be judged* of merely by their subjects, but by the justness of their sentiments and the strength of their reasoning.

458. *To be* in the imperfect of the subjunctive, is used instead of *should* with a future signification, before an infinitive : If the emperor *were to die*, the state would be thrown into convulsions. If the bill *were not to pass*, there would be disturbances in the great manufacturing towns. If it *were to rain*, I should remain at home. If I *were to give* you advice, you would not follow it. If the learned of antiquity *were to come* to life again, they would be astonished at the extent of our knowledge.

459. The verb *to be* and its subject are frequently omitted, especially after a conjunction : (See rule 430.) He was nephew to the Earl of Chatham who wrote him letters *when a* boy. What would you do *if in* his place? He could not bear the sight of misery, *whether* real or feigned. The issue of the marriage, *if a* son, was to succeed. The ring of Saturn, *when viewed* through a telescope, appears double.

460. Idiomatical expressions with *to be* : The microscope endows us, *as it were*, with a new sense. The union of our families by marriage can never *be*. I *am* in the right. I *am* early. He *is* likely to get the place. *Are* you at leisure? His fortune *is* at stake. He *is* at his wit's end. I *am* in great pain. *Are* you in a hurry? He *is* on duty. I *am* on good terms with him. I *am* out with him. He *is* out of place. I *am* out of all patience with him. I *am* at a loss to know what to do. I *am* in great want of it. I *am* at a stand. It *is* of no use talking. I *am* under the necessity of refusing.

461. To HAVE, with an accusative case after it, can be followed by a verb in the infinitive without the preposition *to*: We often *had* the traveller or stranger *visit* us to taste our gooseberry wine. I will *have* these players *play* something like the murder of my father.

462. *To have* takes an accusative case after it, which is followed by a participle, either active or passive: Alone of all the European princes, Frederic *had* a treasure *laid* up for a day of difficulty. She *had* continual lectures *read* to her about strict decorum. We shall *have* him *coming* for his money.

463. MAY and *might* express probability, or a possibility not dependant on physical power; a permission, the thing permitted not being contrary to reason: Victories and conquests *may* render the name of a man famous, without rendering his character truly honourable. Whenever a man's friends compliment him about looking young, he *may* be sure that they think he is growing old. It *may* rain, therefore I shall stop at home. The blaze of truth and liberty *may* at first dazzle and bewilder nations which have become half blind in the house of bondage. It is by no means improbable that some Latin minstrels *may* have visited Sybaris, or Cistona, *may* have heard some verses of Archilochus sung, *may* have been pleased with the metre, and *may* have introduced it into Rome. William III *might* have passed for one of the best princes of the age in which he lived, had he never ascended the throne of Great Britain. Robert had virtues that *might* have made a better and happier man. *May* a man benefit himself at the expense of another? You *may* enjoy the pleasures of the world if you like, but you should not give yourself up entirely to them. A man *may* not be the slave of pleasure. You *may* go or stay, whichever you please. The Egyptians *might* not eat bread with the Hebrews.



464. CAN and *could* express a physical capability, or a moral power so strong as almost to amount to a physical one : It is a sacred principle of the English constitution that the king *can* do no wrong, his ministers being responsible for his actions. The only poem of modern times which *can* be compared to the Paradise Lost is the Divine Comedy. Nothing *can* be more imposing than the magnificence of English park scenery. I knew that she *could* not live much longer. I *could* not help expressing my surprise. If ever despondency and asperity *could* be excused in any man, it might have been excused in Milton.

465. *Can* being used only in the present and imperfect tenses, the remaining tenses of the Spanish *poder* must be translated by *to be able* : We *shall* never *be able* to penetrate all the secrets of Nature. I *have* not *been able* to convince him.

466. SHALL is used in the first person, also in the second person interrogatively, to imply futurity : I will study ten years and travel ten years; I *shall* then be learned, and *shall* therefore be honoured. When *shall* you return? We *shall* all return to the dust whence we were taken.

467. *Shall*, in the second and third persons, expresses the will or command of the speaker : Thou *shalt* not steal. Thou *shalt* not bear false witness against thy neighbour. You *shall* do it, whether you like it or not. The language of a moral law is, man *shall* not kill; the language of a law of Nature is, a stone will fall to the ground.

468. In subjunctive sentences, that is, when a simple indicative statement is not made, *shall* expresses futurity also in the second and third persons. This is particularly the case after the conjunctions *after*, *as*, *according as*, *as soon as*, *as often as*, *if*, *that*, *till*, *until*, *unless*, *when*, *whenever*, *whether*, and the relative pronouns.



## SUBJUNCTIVE.

What man is he that liveth and shall not see death?

Children, when they are grown up, are bound to observe such regulations of the family as the father shall appoint.

But when ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars, be ye not troubled.

## INDICATIVE.

Every man that liveth will see death.

The father will appoint the regulations of the family.

Ye will hear of wars and rumours of wars, but be ye not troubled.

He must yield to the force of truth when they shall have suffered it to appear in its real light. If thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone; if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. God forbid that there should ever again exist a powerful and civilized state, like Venice, which, after existing through 1300 eventful years, shall not bequeath to mankind the memory of one great name, or one generous action. If your judgment shall be that the prisoner is guilty, I am to remand him to the castle of Spandau. When those who have rivalled her greatness shall have shared her fate; when civilization and knowledge shall have fixed their abode in distant continents; when the sceptre shall have passed away from England;—the glory and influence of Athens will still survive.

469. *Should* is employed in the first person, and also in the second person interrogatively, to form the conditional tense of the verb. In the 2.<sup>d</sup> and 3.<sup>d</sup> persons implies duty or obligation: I *should* go to town if I thought it would not rain. I *should* think it would be difficult to find in history a more amiable character than that of Lady Jane Grey. What *should* you answer, if he were to ask you? *Should* you be able to do it? The heart of a wise man *should* resemble a mirror, which reflects every object without becoming sullied by any. Fools

*should* not have weapons of offence. Charles the first, too, it *should* always be remembered, was put to death by men who had been exasperated by the hostilities of several years.

OBSERV. 67. *Should* sometimes implies duty also in the first person, and the context can alone decide whether it is the conditional tense, or whether duty is implied : We *should* do to others as we would they should do unto us. We *should* feel sorrow, but not sink under its oppression.

470. *Will* in the first person expresses the will or determination of the speaker : Through my life it shall be my settled resolution, that *I will* never depend upon the smiles of princes, that *I will* never stand exposed to the artifices of courts. *I will* always observe the laws of the country in which I live. On this rock *I will* build my church.

OBSERV. 68. *Will* is not used interrogatively in the first person ; we say, *shall we go?* and never, *will we go?*

471. *Will*, in the second and third persons, forms the simple future tense of the verb : Homer *will* teach us when to be simple, and when poetical and figurative, if we will but follow his footsteps. Look at this rose, how beautiful it seems, how sweet it smells, and yet it *will* fade in an hour. I hope you *will* keep your word. The husbandman plants trees, the fruit of which he *will* never see.

472. *Would*, in the first person, and in the second person interrogatively, is used in the conditional tense, instead of *should*, when the action depends on the will of the speaker, or the person spoken to : *I would* injure no man, and should provoke no resentment ; *I would* relieve every distress, and should enjoy the benedictions of gratitude. We *would* pay you immediately if we had the money. *Would you* renounce being useful to the present generation, because envy fastens on you?

OBSERV. 69. This frequent use of *would* in the first person

of the conditional tense is very embarrassing for the learner, who has been taught that *should* forms the first person of the conditional tense. It is necessary to remark that if the action is independant of the will of the speaker, *would* can never be used. Thus in the above sentences, *I would injure no man*, and, *I would relieve every distress*, *would* expresses the will of the speaker, but *I should provoke no resentment*, and *I should enjoy the benedictions*, express actions over which his will has no control. Again, we can say, *should you go out if it were fine?* but also, *would you go out if it were fine?* because the going out may depend on the will of the person asked, but we can only say, *should you have much pleasure there?* because the having pleasure does not depend on the will of the person interrogated.

473. *Would* in the second and third persons makes a simple statement in the conditional tense, without reference to will or determination: Who, a thousand years ago, *would* have thought it possible to distinguish myriads of living creatures in a single drop of water? *Would* any old woman have been so mad as to trust to dreams, if they did not sometimes come true? Varro says that the Muses, if they had wished to speak Latin, *would* have spoken in the language of Plautus.

474. *Will* and *would* are employed in all three persons to express determination, when a particular emphasis is laid upon them: There are two kinds of debtors; those who cannot pay and those who *will* not pay. Mr. Merton pressed the farmer to accept the present, but he *would* not. He *would* go in spite of all I could do to prevent him.

475. *Will* and *would* are used to express a habit or custom and answer to the Spanish *soler*, *acostumbrar*: The weather gave indications of one of those sudden storms that *will* some-



times break in upon the security of a summer voyage. Mahomet *would* be seized, said some of his biographers, with violent trembling, followed by a kind of swoon, during which perspiration *would* stream from his forehead in the coldest weather; he *would* lie with his eyes closed, foaming at the mouth and bellowing like a camel.

476. *Will* and *would*, forming the future and conditional tense, and it not being always proper to lay a stress upon them according to rule 474, the Spanish *querer* must often be translated by other verbs, as to *want*, to *wish*, to *desire*, to *intend*, to *like*, to *please*, to *choose*, to *be about*, to *be going*, to *be willing*: If you *want* to flatter a fool, ask his advice; if you *wish* to make yourself his equal, follow it. If you *desire* to acquire a good reputation, be always mindful of your duty. You may enjoy the pleasures of the world if you *like*, but in moderation. Harry said he did not *choose* to betray the unfortunate. It is better to suppress a witticism which *is about* to escape us than to hurt anybody, whoever it may be. If Jupiter had *been willing* to speak the language of men, he would have spoken like Plato.

477. *MUST* has no imperfect, and refers to the past only when joined to the perfect of another verb. It is not always to be translated by *deber*: The most imaginative man *must* understand the Iliad. Mons. de la Motte confesses that in whatever age Homer had lived, he *must have been* the greatest poet of his nation. Want money, that *must* be (*eso es*) impossible. But the snow will be melted, sir, by that time. Well then, it *must* be (*pues que sea*) melted.

478. The tenses of the verb *deber*, *tener que*, which are wanting in English are supplied by the verbs *to be obliged*, *to be forced*, *to be compelled* and *to be constrained*: The nobles *were obliged* to build castles all over England to defend their

new property. But you were ill, mamma, and so I *was forced* to remain at home.

479. OUGHT expresses a moral obligation or duty, and like *must* has no imperfect tense: No war *ought* to be undertaken but under circumstances which render all interchange of courtesy between the combatants impossible. It was happily said that Montesquieu *ought to* have changed the name of his book from *L'Esprit des lois*, to *L'Esprit sur les lois*.

480. Do is used with other negative adverbs, but *not*, only when, for the sake of emphasis, they begin the sentence: *Nor does* he (Sophocles) appear to have keenly shared the party animosities of his day. *Never did* the genius of Frederic, shine forth more conspicuously.

481. *Do* is frequently used in the perfect and imperfect tenses, and in the imperative mood, to give greater emphasis to the verb: *Do* but think, how sweet it is to wear a crown; within whose circle is Elysium, and all that poets feign of bliss and joy. Thou, who on Panama's brow *didst* make alliance with the raving elements, when thou *didst* follow the crashing thunder's drift—meet and survive an injured woman's fury, if thou canst. Why did you not say so? I *did* say so.

482. *Do* is never used with an auxiliary verb, nor with the verbs *dare* and *need*: I *will not* wear them. You *must not* forget. She *dared not* disobey his commands.

483. The Spanish verbs *mandar*, *hacer*, according to the sense in which they are used, are translated into English by the verbs *cause*, *make*, *get*, *have*, *bid*, *order*, *command*. *Cause* requires after the object which it governs the active or the passive infinitive, according as that object is the doer or the receiver of the action: Edward the fourth founded many public schools, and *caused them to be endowed* out of the church lands. William the conqueror *caused all England to be sur-*

*veyed*. Boileau, hearing that Louis the fourteenth had exposed himself too much, said to him, I beg you, Sir, as your historian, not to *cause me to finish* your history so soon.

484. *Make* requires the infinitive of the active verb only, and without *to*. It can be used only when the object of the verb is active : Self love *makes us love* those who are useful to us. What does not the love of fame *make man undertake!* His confused behaviour *made me believe* that he was guilty.

485. *Have* takes only the passive participle of the verb after it; *get* does the same, but it may also be employed with the infinitive of the active verb. *Have* can be used only when the object of the verb is passive : William *had a great survey made* of all the land in England. That he might divide his time exactly, Alfred *had torches made*, which were notched across at regular distances. I will *have a box made*. You ought to *have had it done* before. Henry was carrying his five thousand pounds safely away in a *chest he had got made*. I will *get my brother to do it*.

486. *Order* and *command* have the same construction as *permit*, etc. *Bid* requires the omission of *to* : William *ordered whole villages and towns to be swept away*, to make forests for the deer. Alexander *ordered the ambassadors of Darius to be conducted* through his camp, that they might inform their king of what they had seen.

487. The following neuter verbs GOVERN a noun after them which is in the same case as that which precedes them : *to acknowledge, to appear, to be, to become, to be born, to commence, to continue, to die, to go, to grow, to lie, to live, to look, to prove, to reign, to return, to remain, to roam, to seem, to sit, to stand, to turn, to wander* : Homer has ever been *acknowledged the greatest of poets*. He *appeared a giant* in stature. He *commenced a rich man* and *died a beggar*. He con-



*tinued prime minister* till the death of the king. Every noble had his strong castle, where *he reigned* the cruel *king* of all the neighbouring people. *He returned* an altered man. *He sat* a silent *spectator* of the scene.

488. The following verbs govern a dative case of the person, and require the dative, without the preposition *to*, to be put before the accusative: *to afford, to allot, to allow, to answer, to bear, to bring, to deny, to do, to forbid, to forgive, to give, to grant, to leave, to lend, to make, to offer, to owe, to pay, to permit, to promise, to reach, to read, to refuse, to render, to restore, to return, to send, to show, to sing, to teach, to tell, to render*: The company *allotted each man* an acre of land. The king *allowed the prisoner* every possible means of reestablishing his character. You need not *deny yourself* those pleasures which leave no regret behind them. To have your enemy in your power, and yet to *do him* good, is the greatest heroism. He will be grateful to his sovereign for having *granted him* this public trial. The Saxons, like many other nations in a rough state, were fond of *giving men* the names of animals. When they *offered Julius Caesar* a crown, he refused it. *Pay every man* what you *owe him*. Philip *sent his queen* an ornament, a single diamond of which was valued at eighty thousand crowns.

489. The dative case in the foregoing rule may be regarded as an accusative, for the active verb may be changed into a passive one: *Essex* sought an interview with Elizabeth, but *was denied* her presence. *You are forbidden* those pleasures, because you do not know how to use them in moderation. *Julius Caesar was offered*.

490. The impersonal verbs: *ail, become, befall, behove, concern, delight, grieve, import, irk, trouble*, govern an accusative case: What *ails you*? It *behoves me* to obey my superiors. It



*becomes you* to be silent in company. It *imports all men* to live in peace and concord.

491. The following verbs can take a double accusative after them: *to account, to acknowledge, to appoint, to approve, to argue, to ask, to believe, to bid, to breed, to call, to censure, to choose, to christen, to confess, to consider, to continue, to count, to create, to crown, to declare, to deem, to define, to denominate, to deny, to denote, to detain, to elect, to enrol, to enter, to fancy, to find, to hold, to keep, to judge, to leave, to make, to manifest, to own, to proclaim, to profess, to pronounce, to prove, to reckon, to remember, to repute, to salute, to see, to show, to speak, to style, to take, to think, to title*: I *account him a fool*. We *acknowledge Homer the father* of poetical diction. I *consider you* an incompetent judge. The king *created his son Prince of Wales*. He *defines man* a rational creature. They *elected him* a member. She gazed at the golden clouds *fancying them* some fairy realms. I *pronounce him* a traitor to his country. The barons *proclaimed Prince Edward king*. He *professes himself* a physician, though unexperienced in medicine. I shall *reckon it* a favour. The soldiers *saluted him* emperor. Man cannot reform himself, if he *thinks himself* a model for others.

492. When the verbs in the preceding rule are changed into passive ones, the second, or predicative accusative, becomes a nominative after the verb: *Titus Larcus was appointed dictator* about ten years after the first consuls. The *telescope is considered one* of the most useful instruments that was ever invented. I visited the keep of the castle where *James the First of Scotland was detained* a prisoner of state. *Ingratitude is generally supposed* the vice peculiar to republics.

493. A few verbs occasionally take *it* after them: He *lords it* over the whole neighbourhood. She *carried it* high.

494. Those verbs which take an accusative with an infinitive after them can be changed into PASSIVE verbs : *Clouds are imagined* to consist of vapours exhaled from the sea and the land. When America was discovered, the *mirrors* of the Peruvians *were found* to be of brass. At Athens a *drama* that had gained the prize *was not permitted* a second time to be exhibited. *Paul* the Venetian, in 1260, *is* by some *supposed* to have been the inventor of the mariner's compass.

OBSERV. 70. Those verbs which in the active take the infinitive without *to* must have *to* in the passive ; as, I saw him smile ; he was seen *to* smile. I heard him say ; he was heard *to* say.

495. Neuter verbs which, by the addition of a preposition, have the power of active verbs can be changed into passive ones : Hannibal perceived that he *was aimed at* and that life ought not any longer to be retained by him. A treaty *was entered into* between the hostile nations. The steamer, the president, *was never heard of* again. Henry the First was so false, that I suppose a man never lived whose word was less *to be relied upon*. His weakness *has been taken advantage of*.

496. NEUTER verbs, as well as active verbs, are conjugated with *to have*, but there are some neuter verbs which, when they express a state or condition rather than an action, may be conjugated with *to be*, as : *to arrive, to assemble, to become, to come, to decay, to degenerate, to elapse, to fall, to flee, to go, to grow, to pass, to return, to rise, to sink, to subside* : *Is your brother arrived?* The company *are all assembled*. His impertunity *is become* very troublesome. Three months *are now elapsed* since he left home. I will visit this land of wonders, and see the gigantic race from which *I am degenerated*. The tree *is grown* very much.

OBSERV. 71. When these verbs do not express a state or condition they are conjugated with *to have* : I *have* often *arrived* in London at night. We *have* already *assembled* twice in the same room. I *have* frequently *gone* to see him, but never found him at home.

497. The verbs *to happen*, *to chance*, *to come*, *to appear*, *to grieve*, *to seem* are used both personally and impersonally, but more frequently the former : *It happened* that he came just as I was going away. *He happened* to be there at the time. *It appears* that he cannot obtain reparation for the injury. *He appeared* to be under the influence of some delusion. *He seems* to be tired. *It seems* that you are not aware of the difference. *It grieves* me to see him in that deplorable condition. *I grieve* to think that you have had all this trouble for nothing.

498. The impersonal verbs *meseems*, *meseemed*, *methinks*, *methought* are used only in poetical language : *Methinks* already I your tears survey.

499. Some verbs used as impersonal verbs are preceded by *there* : *there came* a man. *There stood* a roman watching the crowd.

### Participles.

500. When the ACTIVE PARTICIPLE is preceded by an article, it takes the preposition *of* after it : The Phoenicians were acquainted with *the* making *of* glass, and were skilled in *the* working *of* metals. An important practical use which Franklin made of his discoveries was *the* securing *of* houses from injury by lightning.

501. When the participle partakes of the nature of a verb rather than of a noun, the preposition *of* may be omitted :

One of the greatest pleasures an author can have, is certainly *the hearing* his works applauded.

502. The active participle is frequently used with the verb *to be*, with a passive signification, when it is quite clear that the subject is passive : The nation had cried out loudly against the crime while it *was committing*.

503. The active participle *being* is much employed with the passive participle of the verb to express the continuance of an action, when the subject is passive : As long as a bank-note is out, an interest *is being* received for the capital which it represents. One gentleman in a nightcap is shaving himself, another *is being* shaved by the fisherman. I scarcely ever in all my life saw any phenomena so ridiculous as the meekness and gravity of those three young men, whilst *being* led to the altar. While tea and coffee *were being* served, names *were* constantly *being* announced, till the room was quite full.

OBSERV. 72. The use of the participle *being*, as exemplified in the above rule extends only to the present and imperfect tenses. In the other tenses either the active participle must be employed, according to rule 502, or the sentence must be otherwise formed.

504. All prepositions govern the active participle, which is *commonly* translated in Spanish by the infinitive: The Medici of Florence acquired more fame from their share *in promoting* the culture of letters and arts, than from their immense wealth. Geography is indispensable *to* your *comprehending* history. He appeared to be intend *upon studying* those ancient inscriptions. I shall cheerfully bear the reproach *of having* descended below the dignity of history, if I can succeed *in placing* before the English of the nineteenth century a true picture of the life of their ancestors. Next to the *crime of writing* contrary to what a man thinks is *that of writing* with-

out thinking. The study which seems the most likely to induce a *habit of thinking* is that of the mathematics.

505. When there is a second subject, to which the action of the participle refers, that subject is expressed by a noun in the genitive case, or by a possessive pronoun : Antonio read in this confusion a consciousness of fault, and of that *fault's being* discovered. The Pope, on king *Stephen's resisting* his ambition, laid England under an interdict. Did you ever hear this Jew say any thing about *Sophia Mansfeld's returning* to Saxony? William the conqueror disarmed his English subjects, and forbade *their having* any light in their houses after 8 o'clock at night, when a bell was rung called curfew. Bread is called the staff of life from *its being* used in some manner or other by all nations.

506. The second subject, alluded to in the foregoing rule is, however, frequently expressed by a noun without the sign of the genitive case : In 1808 there was a revolution in Spain caused by *Buonaparte placing* his brother Joseph on the Spanish throne. The order of the Hospitallers originated in some pious *persons attending* the hospitals established at Jerusalem for pilgrims in the 11<sup>th</sup> century. An eclipse of the sun is occasioned by the *moon passing* between the earth and the sun.

507. The active participle is used to translate not only the Spanish participle but also a verb preceded by the relative pronoun : Jerusalem *belonging* to the Turks, and the Turks *hating* Christianity, these Christian travellers were often insulted and ill used. It is the opinion of philosophers that each of the fixed stars is a sun *having* worlds *revolving* round it. The atmosphere in which we live is a transparent mass of air *possessing* the property of refracting light. God, the uncreated, the incomprehensible, attracted few worshippers : It was

before Deity embodied in a human form, *walking* among men, *partaking* of their infirmities, *learning* on their bosoms, *weeping* over their graves, *slumbering* in the manger, *bleeding* on the cross that the prejudices of the Synagogue and the doubts of the Academy and the pride of the portico were humbled in the dust.

508. Some transitive verbs, which admit of a second verb as object, require this verb to be in the participle which is translated in Spanish by the infinitive. The principal are *to avoid*, *to defer*, *to delay*, *to deny*, *to dread*, *to entreat*, *to fear*, *to finish*, *to forbear*, *to have done*, *to help*, *to mention*, *to miss*, *to purpose*, *to prefer*, *to put off*, *to recollect*, *to regret*, *to renounce*, *to resist*, *to want*, *to be worth*: A wise man will *avoid showing* any excellence in trifles. Do not *defer doing* a good action till it is too late. I entreat *being informed* of the name of my benefactor. Zenobia *preferred dying* with the title of queen to accepting the advantageous offer which Aurelian made her. Would you *renounce being* useful to the present generation, because envy endeavours to detract from your fame? There is scarce any book *worth reading* once that is not worthy of a second perusal.

509. Other active verbs take the participle after them only occasionally, for example, to avoid the repetition of an infinitive: It is needless to *attempt describing* the particular characters of young people.

510. The PASSIVE PARTICIPLE is frequently used as an adjective, before the noun: They bring before us the *haunted forests*, the *enchanted gardens*, the achievements of *enamoured knights*, and the smiles of *rescued princesses*. Cato the Censor mentions this *lost literature* in his *lost work* on the antiquities of his country.

511. Many passive participles, even when used alone, must



be put after the verb, but no passive participle when joined to other words to complete the sense can be put before the noun : Slander is like an *arrow shot* in the dark. The moon is an opaque body, and shines entirely by *light received* from the sun. A *person dressed* in white can be seen farther in a dark night than *one dressed* in black.

512. The passive participle of some few verbs can be used as a noun : That the governors may be solicitous only for the interests of the *governed*, it is necessary that the interests of the governors and the *governed* should be the same. They were occupied in burying the *slain*.

513. Sometimes the active participle *being* is omitted before the passive participle ; His desire for travelling *satisfied*, he longed to return home. *Banished* from Germany, he sought refuge in England. *Favoured* by free institutions the colony flourished.

514. Some of the verbs which take an accusative with the infinitive after them, can take a passive participle after the accusative, which admits of different translations in Spanish : Imitate the virtues which you have *heard praised*. I *made* myself *understood*. It was perhaps the very laxity of his (Sophocles') principles which made him *thought* so agreeable a fellow. We have *seen*, in our own time, great talents *employed* with dubious success in this struggle against the spirit of the age. Did he say that he *wanted me gone*?

#### Moods and tenses.

515. The INFINITIVE MOOD can be subject in a sentence : *To die*, or *to live*, requires little courage ; *to die*, or *live* becomingly requires much fortitude. *To have learnt* Latin in my



youth, instead of now, would have been better. *Not to have read* some books is rather a merit than otherwise.

516. Many verbs in English require an accusative case and the infinitive after them, in cases where, in Spanish two clauses of a sentence are connected by the conjunction *que*:

1°. Those which are *always* followed by an accusative and infinitive, and do not admit of the conjunction *that* after them; namely, *to advise, to allow, to cause, to get, to order, to permit, to suffer, to take, to want, to wish*: I *advise you to try* a warmer climate. He *laid England under an interdict*, which means that he *allowed no service to be performed* in the churches, *no couples to be married, no bells to be rung, no dead bodies to be buried*. I *took him to be* much younger. Nobody *wants you to be* positive, my good friend. Augustus had clear and brilliant eyes, in which he *wished it to be* thought that there was a certain divine vigour.

2°. Those which may take the conjunction *that* after them, but which are very frequently employed with the accusative and the infinitive, as *to affirm, to appoint, to apprehend, to beg, to believe, to conceive, to conclude, to confess, to demonstrate, to deny, to describe, to determine, to desire, to discover, to expect, to find, to forbid, to imagine, to know, to observe, to presume, to proclaim, to pronounce, to prove, to recognise, to remember, to require, to shew, to suppose, to suspect, to think, to understand*: A haughty man *conceives all his opinions to be* infallible. Homer's expression is like the colouring of some great masters, which *discovers itself to be* laid on boldly and executed with rapidity. The Portian law *forbade the rod to be* applied to the body of any Roman citizen. Fame *reported Numa Pompilius to be* distinguished for virtue and wisdom. Hereward was so good a soldier that the Normans *supposed him to be* aided by enchantment.

517. The passive infinitive must be used in English for the Spanish present or imperfect of the indicative with *se*, or for the active infinitive : It *is to be regretted* (*es de sentir*) that the prose writings of Milton should, in our time, be so little read. Milton's public conduct was such as *was to be expected* from a man of a spirit so high, and an intellect so powerful. Apply the microscope to any of God's works, nothing *is to be found* (*se encuentra*) but beauty and perfection. Milton was acquainted with every language of modern Europe, from which either pleasure or profit *were to be derived* (*podian sacarse*). True taste *is as rare to be found* (*de encontrar*) as a true genius.

OBSERV. 73. After some adjectives which follow the verb *to be* the active infinitive is sometimes employed : He is *difficult to please*. People who are over *difficult to please* often choose the worst at last.

518. The infinitive is used after *such-as*, *so-as*, *how* and *too*, when the subject remains unchanged : That property of the magnet, by which it communicates *such* virtue to a needle *as to point* towards the poles of the earth, was discovered about the beginning of the fourteenth century. His conduct has been *such as to render* a reconciliation difficult. It is taste that selects the expressions, that combines, arranges and varies them *so as to produce* the greatest effect. Nobody can look on the features of Dante and doubt that they belonged to a man *too* proud and *too sensitive to be* happy.

519. The infinitive is frequently used after the accusative which follows the preposition *for*; in Spanish such forms are translated by *para que*, *que*, *á que*, or by a dative case, or by the infinitive : He is fool who starves himself *to amass a fortune for other people to enjoy*. The king's brother rose against him in France, and rendered it necessary *for him to repair* to

that country. It is better *for a man to lose* his life than to lose his honour by an unworthy action. This affair made it very difficult *for Caesar to determine* what plans to adopt. English artists confess that the aspect of nature is *too* sublime and majestic *for the pencil of art faithfully to reach*.

520. The infinitive is not employed after *think* and *believe*, as after the corresponding verbs in Spanish: *I thought I saw* him in the crowd. *I believe I hear* him.

521. The Present tense of the INDICATIVE is sometimes used instead of the imperfect to give force and animation to the discourse: Bonaparte crosses the Alps, and marches against the Austrians.

522. The Spanish definite perfect tense must be translated by the English imperfect. The perfect can never be employed in English when the action has taken place at any stated past period of time, or within a given period of time which is completely passed, such as, *yesterday, last week, last Monday, two years ago*, etc. : Homer *lived* about 900 years before the Christian era. Many valuable discoveries were *made* last century. Gilia Flavio *discovered* the compass about 600 years ago. Columbus *discovered* America in the fifteenth century. Has he brought the books? Yes, he *brought* them yesterday evening. Virgil *was* born at Mantua.

523. The Perfect tense expresses a past action without reference to any stated past time, or an action which has taken place within a given period of time which is not yet passed; such as, *to-day, this week, this month, this year*, etc. They have offended against the laws of their country, and must pay the penalty. The tallest oaks *have been* acorns, and the greatest giants *have been* infants. God *has created* heaven and earth. Cicero *has written* some magnificent orations. *I have not seen* him to-day, but I saw him yesterday. He *has been* absent all

the day. *Have you seen* her to-day? No, but I saw her yesterday.

524. The pronouns are only added to the IMPERATIVE in solemn language : *Enjoy* the world, but do not give your whole time to it. *Bring* me some water.

525. *Do* is used with the adverb *not*, and also to give greater emphasis to the imperative : *Do* grant me this favour. *Do*, Comtois, do make haste. Do not lose any opportunities of practising virtue.

526. The Present tense of the SUBJUNCTIVE is used only to imply the uncertainty of a future action : The works of Milton cannot be comprehended or enjoyed unless the mind of the reader *cooperate* with that of the writer. A liar hath need of a good memory, lest he *contradict* at one time what he said at another. If the world *be* better a century hence, it must be attributed to the spread of civilization and religion. Love not sleep lest thou *come* to poverty. If he *succeed* and *obtain* his end, he will not be the happier for it.

527. The imperfect of the subjunctive would appear sometimes to refer to the past, but on examination it will be found that the action was present at the time of some other past action in the sentence : In the coach with the Duke of Monmouth *was* an officer whose orders were to stab the prisoner if a rescue *were* attempted.

#### Adverbs.

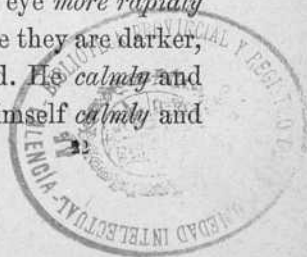
528. ADVERBS *of place* are usually put after the verb, and frequently at the end of the sentence : There was wild scenery all around her and a home and comfort *nowhere*. Seek not for happiness *here below*, if thou art worthy of it, it will find thee *out*. The life that is devoted to knowledge passes silently *away*,

and is very little diversified with events. Thucydides, though at a wide interval, comes *next* to Tacitus.

529. *Indefinite Adverbs of time* are generally placed between the subject and the verb: The Romans *continually* triumphed over the most warlike nations. Herrings *often* frequent a particular part of the coast, and *afterwards suddenly* abandon it. I *often* walked in the Rialto, as on classic ground. I *rarely* get up before seven in the winter.

530. *Definite Adverbs of time* are placed after the verb, and usually at the end of the sentence: He came *one day* to amuse himself, and found the master busy in building a sailing chariot. The Edinbourg Review is published *quarterly*, the Illustrated London News *weekly*, and the Times *daily*. Do not put off till *to-morrow* what you ought to do *to-day*. The proudest royal houses are but of *yesterday*, when compared with the line of the Supreme Pontiffs.

531. *Adverbs of manner* generally follow a neuter verb, and the object of an active verb; but a great number of adverbs of manner can be placed before the verb: Tradition has preserved some wild strophes of the barbarous hymn which she chanted *wildly* amid that scene of fire and slaughter. You should persevere *steadily*, if you wish to attain your end. She was one of those fortune tellers who live *comfortably* on the credulity of others. Mohammed, hearing that there was a disposition in Medina to receive him *favourably*, appointed Friday, the Moslem sabbath, for his entrance. When the eye sees objects *distinctly* at a great distance, it is unable without some change to see objects *distinctly* at any less distance. The shades in the Athenian character strike the eye *more rapidly* than those in the Lacedemonian; not because they are darker, but because they are on a brighter ground. He *calmly* and *steadily* excused himself or « He excused himself *calmly* and



*steadily*»: *He speaks English well*; and we can never say: *he speaks well English*.

532. *Adverbs of manner* are placed before the verb, when it is followed by an object, which, from its length, would otherwise too widely separate the adverb from the verb: At Maximilian's death, Charles *openly* aspired to that dignity which his grandfather had attempted, without success, to secure for him. Leo *secretly* exhorted the German princes to place one of their own number on the imperial throne. We *willingly* acknowledge the obligations which are due to mister Mitford's talent and industry.

533. *Adverbs of degree*, of affirmation, negation and doubt usually precede the verb: The eye *infinitely* surpasses all the works of man's industry. Mr. Manly *equally* disliked low company, understanding by it persons of mean habits and vulgar conversation. The outline of the ring round the moon sometimes *faintly* shows the colours of the rainbow. I *by no means* approve of his design. You *certainly* did what you could and therefore deserved success. Guttenberg *assuredly* first made use of moveable types, if he was not the inventor of printing.

534. All adverbs are placed after the auxiliary verb. There *was never* yet a truly great man that *was not* at the same time truly virtuous. Shakspeare dramatised stories which *had previously* appeared in print. If there be any form of government which, in all ages and nations, *has always* been and *must always* be pernicious, it *is certainly* pure oligarchy. Frederic, who *had just* completed his twenty eighth year, became king of Prussia. In no country *have* litterature and science *been more extensively* cultivated than in Germany.

535. Adverbs are placed before adjectives and participles. But they take various positions in a sentence according to



the emphasis, or what they more particularly qualify : Tacitus undertook to make us *intimately acquainted* with a man *singularly dark* and inscrutable. A man used to vicissitudes cannot be *easily dejected*. Gas is a term applied by chemists to all *permanently elastic* fluids. Books *quite worthless* are *quite harmless*. *Unfortunately* he thinks too much of himself. He will be rewarded, *not* with wealth, but with a good conscience. *Never* can virtue sanction vice. How *strangely* are the opinions of men altered by time. The compass does not always point *directly* north. *Surely* vain are all men by nature who are ignorant of God. *Often*, said Mahomet, the angel appears to me in a human form, and *sometimes* I hear sounds like the tinkling of a bell.

536. Adverbs which are joined to a verb, to give it a particular signification are generally placed immediately after the verb, but may be put after the object, specially if it consists of a personal or demonstrative pronoun : *Take off* your coat, or *take your coat off*. The cavalier received a dark lantern from his companion and *threw off* his cloak. And, behold, one of them which were with Jesus *stretched out* his hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the High Priest's and *smote off* his ear. Charles returned to govern a nation which ought never to have *cast him out*, or never to have *received him back*. But thou, O Lord, be merciful unto me, and *raise me up*. I hope he will not *put that off*.

537. *Enough*, contrary to the usual rule, is placed after the adjective, and after the substantive : Youth and beauty are attractive *enough* in themselves. Nature has attractions *enough* round her.

538. *Ago* and *hence*, corresponding to the Spanish *hace*, *dentro de*, are put after the words which denote the length of time : Mecca and Medina were taken *some time ago* by the



Wahabees, a sect yearly increasing. I have not a tear left for an event which, *five years ago* would have bowed down my head to the earth. As for these my brothers of Genoa, I shall, in a *few days hence*, come and let them out of prison myself.

539. *Not*, when unaccompanied by a verb, is placed before substantives, pronouns and adverbs: Who is going to the theatre this evening? *Not* I. It was *not* my brother. Do you go every day? No, *not* every day.

540. *Well* and *ill*, though adverbs, have in some cases the quality of adjectives: I am *well*, but my sister is *ill*. All is *well* that ends well. She obeyed my commands with an *ill* grace. *Ill* company is like a dog which dirties those most whom he loves best.

541. *Very* is used before adjectives, adverbs and participles. *Much* is used before verbs. But *very* (*mismo*) is also used adjectively: After having seen the fortifications of Gibraltar and Malta, those of Ehrenbreitstein did not *much* strike me. Mary Queen of Scots was *very* unfortunate. The very name of Sobieski caused a panic among the Turks.

542. *No longer*, and *no more* are both used to translate the Spanish *ya no*, but *no longer* is used only to express duration of time, for which purpose also *no more* *no más*, can be sometimes used: He *no longer* thirsted after the discovery of the grand elixir. Inez *no longer* walked in the garden, but remained almost entirely in her apartment. The statute book *no more* forbids the taking of presents from allies in Europe now than it forbade the taking of presents in Asia then.

543. *Here*, *there* and *where* are used in the language of conversation instead of *hither*, *thither* and *whither*, which are confined to poetry and solemn discourse: Come here! *Where* are you going? Do not go *there*. *Whither* shall I go from thy spirit? or *whither* shall I flee from thy presence?

544. *Hence*, *thence* and *whence* are used both with and without prepositions : He goes *hence* to London. When ye depart *thence*, shake off the dust under your feet, as a testimony against them. The Austrians in one part of the engagement, got to the brow of the hill, *whence* they had their first view of the Rhine. And many hearing him were astonished saying, *from whence* hath this man these things? The cave of Mount Pentelicus *from whence* the marble was dug that constructed the public edifices of Athens.

545. *Too* is placed after the word to which it belongs, *also* both before and after : The bases of the columns, *too*, are richly sculptured. The garden was the resort *also* of Inez. The evening was fine *too*. The evening was *also* fine. She plays the piano and the harp *also*.

546. *So* is used instead of *also*, the auxiliary verb in the preceding part of the sentence being repeated : Francisca is young and lovely, *so* is her sister. I visited the picture galleries at Florence, *so* did my companion.

547. The adverb *then* is occasionally used adjectively : The note alludes to the *then* recent publication of Walter Scott's Vision of Don Roderick.

#### Versification.

What is a VERSE?

A verse is a line containing a certain number of words divided into a regular number of feet.

What is a Foot?

A foot is a certain number of syllables, generally two, sometimes three, but seldom four.

How many feet are there in a verse?

The number of feet in a verse varies according to the kind of verse.

What is necessary to constitute a foot?

It is necessary that one of the syllables in every foot should have an emphasis laid upon it.

What do you mean by *emphasis*?

*Emphasis* is another name for *stress* or *accent*; and it implies that the syllable must be pronounced more strongly than the others.

Give an exemple of a word that has an emphasis on one of its syllables.

Every word of more than one syllable has an emphasis on one or other of its syllables: as *róver*, *emplóy*, *impórtant*, *anónymous*, *váriable*.

How many kinds of verse are there in English?

There are two principal kinds of English verse; *Heroic*, which is the same as *Dramatic*: and *Lyric*.

What kind of metre is used in heroic or dramatic verse?

In heroic or dramatic verse there are generally five feet, each consisting of two syllables, of which the last has an emphasis or stress laid upon it.

The following are examples of heroic verse.

Achil || les'wráth, || to Greéce || the díre || ful spríng  
 Of wóes || unnúm || ber'd, héav' || nly gód || dess síng.  
 Of mán's || first díe || obé || díence ánd || the frúit  
 Of thát || forbíd || den treè, || whose mór || tal táste  
 Brought déath || íntó || the wórld || and áll || our wóe,  
 Sing, héav'n || ly Múse!

How do these kinds of verse differ from one another?

The first kind is made up of lines which rhyme two and two together: the last is made up of lines which do not rhyme; it is therefore called Blank Verse.

Does Dramatic differ from Heroic in this respect?

The lines in Dramatic verse are just the same as in Heroic,

but now-a-days it is very uncommon to write Dramatic verse in rhyme; it is almost universally written in Blank Verse.

What is Lyric verse?

Lyric verse is that which was written formerly always to be sung to the harp or lyre; but now-a-days, it is written merely for the pleasure which it gives the reader by reason of the beautiful thoughts or the sweetness of the versification.

What is the usual length of Lyric verses?

Sometimes as long or even longer than Dramatic verses, and sometimes very short indeed: in fact Lyric verses are of all lengths, according to the pleasure of the writer.

Do lyric verses rhyme together, like some of the heroic poems?

Yes: lyric verse is generally written in rhyme: though there are a few beautiful English poems written in blank verse.

What difference is there in its metres?

Lyric verse allows two kinds of metres; metres of two syllables, and metres of three syllables.

Where is the stress or emphasis placed in these kinds?

Some metres of two syllables have the stress on the first, some on the second syllable.

The following verses have the stress on the first syllable of each metre:

Nów the || gólden || mórn a || loft  
Waves her || dew be || spangled || wing

but the last two have it on the last syllable:

With vér || mil chéek || and whís || per sóft  
She woòes || the tàr || dy spring.

The following lines are made up of metres each having three syllables, of which the middle one is accented:

A t mple || to fri ndship,   || said Laura || enchanted  
 «I'll build in || this g rden; || the thought is || divine.»  
 Her t mple || was b ilt, and || she n w on || ly w nted  
 An image || of friendship || to pl ce on || the shrine.

---

## ADVERTENCIA.

---

En la pronunciaci n de las vocales *a* y *o*, cuando toman su primer sonido (R. R. 2, 1.  y 5, 1. ) se deja oir un tono m s   m enos marcado, segun las localidades, hacia la *i* en la primera y hacia la *u* en la  ltima, siquiera  ste sonido, quiza por considerarle vicioso, no se exprese en los diccionarios de pronunciaci n: as  *made*, se pronuncia *m d*, *trade*, pr. *tr d*, *lady*, pr. *l di*; *note* pr. *n t*, *over*, pr. * v er*, *go*, pr. *g * etc.



# VOCABULARIO.

## I.

### A.

|                           |                  |
|---------------------------|------------------|
| <i>a</i>                  | uno, a           |
| <i>abbess</i>             | abadesa          |
| <i>about</i>              | acerca de, sobre |
| <i>above</i>              | sobre            |
| <i>academy</i>            | academia         |
| <i>accept</i>             | aceptar          |
| <i>accident</i>           | accidente        |
| <i>account</i>            | cuenta, relacion |
| <i>acoustics</i>          | acústica         |
| <i>acquainted (to be)</i> | conocer          |
| <i>active</i>             | activo           |
| <i>actress</i>            | actriz           |
| <i>addicted</i>           | dedicado         |
| <i>admire</i>             | admirar          |
| <i>address</i>            | dirigirse        |
| <i>advanced</i>           | anticipado       |
| <i>adviser</i>            | consejero        |
| <i>affair</i>             | negocio          |
| <i>affable</i>            | afable           |
| <i>afloat</i>             | flotante         |
| <i>after</i>              | despues          |
| <i>afternoon</i>          | tarde            |
| <i>again</i>              | otra vez         |
| <i>against</i>            | contra           |
| <i>agitated</i>           | agitado          |
| <i>a great deal</i>       | mucho            |
| <i>agree</i>              | convenir         |
| <i>ale</i>                | cerveza          |
| <i>alike</i>              | semejante        |
| <i>alms</i>               | limosna          |
| <i>alone</i>              | solo             |
| <i>aloud</i>              | alto             |
| <i>all</i>                | todo             |
| <i>also</i>               | tambien          |
| <i>always</i>             | siempre          |
| <i>am</i>                 | soy              |
| <i>amiable</i>            | amable           |

|                    |                  |
|--------------------|------------------|
| <i>amuse</i>       | divertir         |
| <i>ancient</i>     | antiguo          |
| <i>and</i>         | y                |
| <i>angry</i>       | incomodado       |
| <i>answer</i>      | } respuesta,     |
|                    | } responder      |
| <i>any</i>         | unos-as          |
| <i>any body</i>    | álguien          |
| <i>any other</i>   | otro cualquiera  |
| <i>apartment</i>   | habitacion       |
| <i>appear</i>      | aparecer         |
| <i>appeal</i>      | apelar           |
| <i>appetite</i>    | apetito          |
| <i>applaud</i>     | aplaudir         |
| <i>apple</i>       | manzana          |
| <i>April</i>       | Abril            |
| <i>archbishop</i>  | arzobispo        |
| <i>arrive</i>      | llegar           |
| <i>as</i>          | como             |
| <i>assembled</i>   | reunido          |
| <i>as for me</i>   | } por mi parte,  |
|                    | } lo que es yo   |
| <i>ashes</i>       | ceniza           |
| <i>assistance</i>  | auxilio          |
| <i>ask (for)</i>   | preguntar, pedir |
| <i>asleep</i>      | dormido          |
| <i>astonished</i>  | admirado         |
| <i>astonishing</i> | asombroso        |
| <i>atheist</i>     | ateo             |
| <i>at home</i>     | en casa          |
| <i>aunt</i>        | tia              |
| <i>autumn</i>      | otoño            |
| <i>avoid</i>       | evitar           |
| <i>awake</i>       | despertarse      |

### B.

|                 |         |
|-----------------|---------|
| <i>bacon</i>    | tocino  |
| <i>bachelor</i> | soltero |

|                         |                             |
|-------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>bad</i>              | malo                        |
| <i>baker</i>            | panadero                    |
| <i>ball</i>             | baile                       |
| <i>baroness</i>         | baronesa                    |
| <i>basket</i>           | cesta                       |
| <i>bath</i>             | baño                        |
| <i>bear</i>             | oso                         |
| <i>be at work</i>       | trabajar                    |
| <i>beat</i>             | pegar                       |
| <i>beautiful</i>        | bonito                      |
| <i>beauteous</i>        | hermoso                     |
| <i>because</i>          | porque, es que              |
| <i>because of</i>       | { á causa de,<br>porque     |
| <i>beginning</i>        | principio                   |
| <i>be glad</i>          | alegrarse                   |
| <i>behold</i>           | mirar                       |
| <i>be in good terms</i> | { estar en buena<br>armonía |
| <i>belong</i>           | pertenecer                  |
| <i>bell</i>             | campana                     |
| <i>bellows</i>          | fuella                      |
| <i>bench</i>            | banco                       |
| <i>be ready</i>         | estar pronto                |
| <i>be sorry</i>         | sentir                      |
| <i>billiard</i>         | billar                      |
| <i>better</i>           | mejor                       |
| <i>betimes</i>          | temprano                    |
| <i>bid</i>              | mandar                      |
| <i>bid farewell</i>     | despedirse                  |
| <i>big</i>              | gordo                       |
| <i>birth-day</i>        | natalicio                   |
| <i>biscuit</i>          | biscocho                    |
| <i>bitch</i>            | perra                       |
| <i>bitch-fox</i>        | zorra                       |
| <i>black</i>            | negro                       |
| <i>blame</i>            | vituperar                   |
| <i>blasphemy</i>        | blasfemia                   |
| <i>bles</i>             | bendecir                    |
| <i>blow</i>             | golpe                       |
| <i>boarding-school</i>  | colegio                     |
| <i>book</i>             | libro                       |
| <i>bookseller</i>       | librero                     |
| <i>bonnet</i>           | gorro                       |
| <i>borrow</i>           | pedir prestado              |
| <i>both</i>             | ambos                       |
| <i>boot</i>             | bota                        |
| <i>bought</i>           | { comprado,<br>compré, etc. |
| <i>box</i>              | caja                        |
| <i>boy</i>              | niño                        |
| <i>bracelet</i>         | brazalete                   |

|                    |                         |
|--------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>bread</i>       | pan                     |
| <i>breakfast</i>   | almuerzo                |
| <i>break</i>       | { quebrantar,<br>romper |
| <i>breeches</i>    | calzones                |
| <i>bridge</i>      | punte                   |
| <i>brother</i>     | hermano                 |
| <i>buck-rabbit</i> | conejo                  |
| <i>bull-fights</i> | toros                   |
| <i>bundle</i>      | paquete                 |
| <i>bury</i>        | enterrar                |
| <i>business</i>    | negocio (s)             |
| <i>busy</i>        | diligente               |
| <i>but</i>         | pero                    |
| <i>by heart</i>    | de memoria              |
| <i>bystanders</i>  | circunstantes           |

## C.

|                     |                                |
|---------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>cady</i>         | juez                           |
| <i>cake</i>         | bollo, torta                   |
| <i>calends</i>      | calendas                       |
| <i>call</i>         | llamar                         |
| <i>canal</i>        | canal                          |
| <i>candle</i>       | vela                           |
| <i>cane</i>         | baston                         |
| <i>canon</i>        | cañon                          |
| <i>cannot</i>       | no puedo, etc.                 |
| <i>carefully</i>    | cuidadosamente                 |
| <i>carpenter</i>    | carpintero                     |
| <i>carpet</i>       | alfombra                       |
| <i>carrier</i>      | ordinario                      |
| <i>carter</i>       | carretero                      |
| <i>carry</i>        | llevar                         |
| <i>castle</i>       | castillo                       |
| <i>cat</i>          | gato                           |
| <i>catholic</i>     | católico                       |
| <i>city</i>         | ciudad                         |
| <i>class</i>        | clase                          |
| <i>clerk</i>        | { dependiente,<br>comisionista |
| <i>clothe</i>       | vestir                         |
| <i>cloth</i>        | pañó, vestido                  |
| <i>clutch</i>       | garra                          |
| <i>coat</i>         | levita                         |
| <i>cock-canary</i>  | canario                        |
| <i>cock-sparrow</i> | gorrion                        |
| <i>cold</i>         | resfriado, frio                |
| <i>colours</i>      | bandera                        |
| <i>command</i>      | mandar                         |
| <i>commandement</i> | mandamiento                    |
| <i>come again</i>   | volver                         |



|                       |                  |
|-----------------------|------------------|
| <i>come</i>           | venir            |
| <i>come up</i>        | subir            |
| <i>common censure</i> | censura pública  |
| <i>company</i>        | compañía         |
| <i>complain</i>       | quejarse         |
| <i>comply</i>         | cumplir, atender |
| <i>consequently</i>   | por consiguiente |
| <i>contented</i>      | contento         |
| <i>continue</i>       | continuar        |
| <i>conversation</i>   | conversacion     |
| <i>cook</i>           | cocinero         |
| <i>corn field</i>     | campo de trigo   |
| <i>correct</i>        | corregir         |
| <i>costume</i>        | traje, vestido   |
| <i>count</i>          | conde            |
| <i>country</i>        | campo, país      |
| <i>couple</i>         | par              |
| <i>courage</i>        | valor            |
| <i>cousin</i>         | primo            |
| <i>cow</i>            | vaca             |
| <i>cravat</i>         | corbata          |
| <i>create</i>         | crear            |
| <i>credit</i>         | fiar, crédito    |
| <i>cricket-ball</i>   | pelota           |
| <i>crime</i>          | crimen           |
| <i>crop</i>           | cosecha          |
| <i>cross</i>          | cruzar, cruz     |
| <i>cry</i>            | gritar, exclamar |
| <i>cup</i>            | copa             |
| <i>custom</i>         | costumbre        |

## Ch.

|                        |                 |
|------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>chamber</i>         | cuarto          |
| <i>charm</i>           | encanto         |
| <i>cherry</i>          | cereza          |
| <i>cheese</i>          | queso           |
| <i>chessboard</i>      | tablero         |
| <i>chick-pea</i>       | garbanzo        |
| <i>child</i>           | reñido          |
| <i>chief</i>           | principal, jefe |
| <i>child</i>           | niño            |
| <i>childhood</i>       | niño (niñez)    |
| <i>chimney sweeper</i> | deshollinador   |
| <i>chinese</i>         | chino           |
| <i>chocolate</i>       | chocolate       |
| <i>Christ</i>          | Cristo          |
| <i>church</i>          | iglesia         |
| <i>church-yard</i>     | cementerio      |

## D.

|                      |                  |
|----------------------|------------------|
| <i>danger</i>        | peligro          |
| <i>daring</i>        | atrevido         |
| <i>daughter</i>      | hija             |
| <i>day</i>           | dia              |
| <i>daily</i>         | diario           |
| <i>dear</i>          | caro, querido    |
| <i>decanter</i>      | garrafa          |
| <i>deliver</i>       | librar           |
| <i>delight</i>       | deleitarse       |
| <i>demand</i>        | exigencia        |
| <i>departed</i>      | marchado         |
| <i>depth</i>         | profundidad      |
| <i>deserve</i>       | merecer          |
| <i>desinterested</i> | desinteresado    |
| <i>desk</i>          | mesa             |
| <i>diabolical</i>    | diabólico        |
| <i>discretion</i>    | discrecion       |
| <i>die</i>           | morir            |
| <i>different</i>     | diferente, vário |
| <i>difficult</i>     | difícil          |
| <i>difficulty</i>    | dificultad       |
| <i>dig</i>           | cavar            |
| <i>diligent</i>      | aplicado         |
| <i>dinner</i>        | comida           |
| <i>direction</i>     | direccion        |
| <i>discourse</i>     | discurso         |
| <i>discreet</i>      | discreto         |
| <i>dive</i>          | sumergirse,      |
| <i>divine</i>        | bucear           |
| <i>do</i>            | divino           |
| <i>dog</i>           | hacer            |
| <i>done</i>          | perro            |
| <i>door</i>          | hecho            |
| <i>downwards</i>     | puerta           |
| <i>drawers</i>       | borracho         |
| <i>drawing</i>       | calzones         |
| <i>drawing-room</i>  | dibujo           |
| <i>dregs</i>         | salon            |
| <i>dress</i>         | heces            |
| <i>drink</i>         | vestir, peinar   |
| <i>drown</i>         | beber            |
| <i>drudgery</i>      | ahogarse         |
| <i>drunkard</i>      | trabajo servil   |
| <i>dry</i>           | borracho         |
| <i>duck</i>          | seco             |
| <i>during</i>        | pato             |
| <i>duty</i>          | durante          |
|                      | deber, tarea     |

## E.

|                          |                             |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>each</i>              | cada                        |
| <i>ear</i>               | oido                        |
| <i>early</i>             | pronto                      |
| <i>earth</i>             | tierra                      |
| <i>easily</i>            | fácilmente                  |
| <i>East</i>              | Oriente                     |
| <i>easter</i>            | pascua                      |
| <i>educated</i>          | educado                     |
| <i>element</i>           | elemento                    |
| <i>elevated</i>          | elevado                     |
| <i>embroidered</i>       | bordado                     |
| <i>emperor</i>           | emperador                   |
| <i>employ</i>            | ocupar, emplear             |
| <i>empress</i>           | emperatriz                  |
| <i>enemy</i>             | enemigo                     |
| <i>engaged</i>           | contratado,<br>comprometido |
| <i>Englishman</i> , sus. | inglés                      |
| <i>English</i> , adj.    | inglés                      |
| <i>enough</i>            | bastante                    |
| <i>entrails</i>          | entrañas                    |
| <i>especially</i>        | especialmente               |
| <i>Europe</i>            | Europa                      |
| <i>event</i>             | acontecimiento              |
| <i>every day</i>         | todos los días              |
| <i>ever so</i>           | siquiera unas               |
| <i>everlasting</i>       | eterno                      |
| <i>evil</i>              | mal                         |
| <i>except</i>            | excepto                     |
| <i>exercise</i>          | ejercicio                   |
| <i>eye</i>               | ojo                         |

## F.

|                      |                 |
|----------------------|-----------------|
| <i>fair</i>          | lindo           |
| <i>fall</i>          | caer            |
| <i>family</i>        | familia         |
| <i>farther</i>       | más allá        |
| <i>fashion</i>       | tono, moda      |
| <i>fasten</i>        | atar            |
| <i>father</i>        | padre           |
| <i>favour</i>        | favor           |
| <i>fear</i>          | temer           |
| <i>feast-day</i>     | día de fiesta   |
| <i>February</i>      | Febrero         |
| <i>feed</i>          | dar de comer    |
| <i>fellow</i>        | sujeto, miembro |
| <i>female cousin</i> | primo           |
| <i>former</i>        | primero         |

|                   |                 |
|-------------------|-----------------|
| <i>formerly</i>   | en otro tiempo  |
| <i>ferocious</i>  | antiguamente    |
| <i>few</i>        | feroz           |
| <i>fin</i>        | pocos           |
| <i>fine</i>       | aleta           |
| <i>finish</i>     | fino, lindo     |
| <i>fish-hook</i>  | concluir        |
| <i>flail</i>      | anzuelo         |
| <i>flap</i>       | mayal, pala     |
| <i>flee</i>       | faldon          |
| <i>flour</i>      | huir            |
| <i>flower</i>     | harina          |
| <i>fly</i>        | flor            |
| <i>food</i>       | flor            |
| <i>follow</i>     | huir, mosca     |
| <i>fond</i>       | alimento        |
| <i>for</i>        | seguir          |
| <i>forbid</i>     | aficionado,     |
| <i>foreign</i>    | afectisimo      |
| <i>for ever</i>   | para, por       |
| <i>forgive</i>    | prohibir        |
| <i>fork</i>       | extranjero      |
| <i>foot</i>       | para siempre    |
| <i>fortnight</i>  | perdonar        |
| <i>fortunate</i>  | tener           |
| <i>fox</i>        | infantería, pié |
| <i>franc</i>      | quincena        |
| <i>freight</i>    | afortunado      |
| <i>friend</i>     | zorra           |
| <i>friendship</i> | franco          |
| <i>from</i>       | fletar          |
| <i>fruit</i>      | amigo           |
|                   | amistad         |
|                   | de, desde       |
|                   | fruto           |

## G.

|                   |               |
|-------------------|---------------|
| <i>garden</i>     | jardin        |
| <i>generous</i>   | generoso      |
| <i>generosity</i> | generosidad   |
| <i>generally</i>  | generalmente  |
| <i>gentleman</i>  | caballero     |
| <i>german</i>     | aleman        |
| <i>get into</i>   | meterse       |
| <i>get wet</i>    | coger humedad |
| <i>girl</i>       | niña          |
| <i>give</i>       | dar           |
| <i>glad</i>       | contento      |
| <i>glass</i>      | vaso          |
| <i>glove</i>      | guante        |
| <i>go</i>         | ir            |
| <i>go out</i>     | salir         |

|                         |                 |
|-------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>godfather</i>        | padrino         |
| <i>good</i>             | bueno           |
| <i>good man</i>         | hombre de bien  |
| <i>good for nothing</i> | inútil          |
| <i>gold</i>             | oro             |
| <i>gone</i>             | ido             |
| <i>goose</i>            | ganso           |
| <i>grammar</i>          | gramática       |
| <i>granary</i>          | granero         |
| <i>grape</i>            | uva             |
| <i>graven</i>           | grabado         |
| <i>grazier</i>          | ganadero        |
| <i>great</i>            | grande          |
| <i>grief</i>            | pesar           |
| <i>grinding</i>         | para afilar     |
| <i>ground</i>           | terreno, molido |
| <i>grow rich</i>        | enriquecerse    |
| <i>guitar</i>           | guitarra        |
| <i>gun</i>              | fusil           |

## H.

|                     |                         |
|---------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>hair</i>         | pelo                    |
| <i>hallow</i>       | santificar              |
| <i>ham</i>          | jamón                   |
| <i>handkerchief</i> | pañuelo                 |
| <i>handsome</i>     | hermoso                 |
| <i>happen</i>       | acontecer               |
| <i>happy</i>        | feliz                   |
| <i>happiness</i>    | felicidad               |
| <i>hat</i>          | sombrero                |
| <i>hath, bibl.</i>  | tiene                   |
| <i>hated</i>        | aborrecido              |
| <i>hay</i>          | heno                    |
| <i>he</i>           | él                      |
| <i>heap</i>         | cima                    |
| <i>head</i>         | cabeza                  |
| <i>hear</i>         | oir                     |
| <i>heart</i>        | corazón                 |
| <i>heathen</i>      | pagano                  |
| <i>hell-fire</i>    | fuego del in-<br>fierno |
| <i>hen</i>          | gallina                 |
| <i>Henry</i>        | Enrique                 |
| <i>hide</i>         | ocultar                 |
| <i>highly</i>       | altamente               |
| <i>high-priest</i>  | sumo sacerdote          |
| <i>his</i>          | su                      |
| <i>hissed</i>       | silbado                 |
| <i>hold back</i>    | detener                 |
| <i>holy</i>         | santo                   |
| <i>Holy Ghost</i>   | Espíritu Santo          |

|                  |                         |
|------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>home</i>      | en, á casa              |
| <i>honest</i>    | honrado                 |
| <i>horse</i>     | caballo,<br>caballería  |
| <i>hot</i>       | caliente                |
| <i>hour</i>      | hora                    |
| <i>household</i> | gobierno domés-<br>tico |
| <i>how long</i>  | cuanto tiempo           |
| <i>how many</i>  | cuantos-as              |
| <i>how much</i>  | cuanto                  |
| <i>humble</i>    | humillar                |
| <i>hungry</i>    | hambriento              |
| <i>hurry</i>     | prisa                   |
| <i>however</i>   | sin embargo             |
| <i>hypocrisy</i> | hipocresía              |

## I.

|                      |                      |
|----------------------|----------------------|
| <i>idle</i>          | ocioso               |
| <i>if</i>            | si                   |
| <i>ignorant</i>      | ignorante            |
| <i>ill</i>           | malo                 |
| <i>impose on</i>     | engañar              |
| <i>in</i>            | en                   |
| <i>incautiously</i>  | incautamente         |
| <i>incessantly</i>   | continuamente        |
| <i>incline</i>       | inclinarse           |
| <i>increase</i>      | aumento,<br>aumentar |
| <i>indicative</i>    | indicativo           |
| <i>indicate</i>      | indicar              |
| <i>indulgent</i>     | indulgente           |
| <i>industry</i>      | industria            |
| <i>infamy</i>        | infamia              |
| <i>infant</i>        | infante              |
| <i>infantry</i>      | infantería           |
| <i>infirmity</i>     | enfermedad           |
| <i>injure</i>        | dañar                |
| <i>injury</i>        | injuria, daño        |
| <i>ink</i>           | tinta                |
| <i>institution</i>   | institución          |
| <i>inter</i>         | enterrar             |
| <i>inwardly</i>      | interiormente        |
| <i>I</i>             | yo                   |
| <i>I cannot help</i> | no puedo menos<br>de |

## J.

|              |       |
|--------------|-------|
| <i>jew</i>   | judío |
| <i>jewel</i> | joya  |

|                 |            |
|-----------------|------------|
| <i>jeweller</i> | joyero     |
| <i>join</i>     | unirse     |
| <i>juice</i>    | jugo       |
| <i>just</i>     | justo      |
| <i>just by</i>  | al lado de |

## K.

|                       |                 |
|-----------------------|-----------------|
| <i>keep</i>           | guardar         |
| <i>kill</i>           | matar           |
| <i>kind</i>           | amable          |
| <i>kindly</i>         | con bondad      |
| <i>kindness</i>       | amabilidad      |
| <i>king</i>           | rey             |
| <i>kitchen</i>        | cocina          |
| <i>kitchen-garden</i> | huerta          |
| <i>kitten</i>         | gatito          |
| <i>knave</i>          | tunante, pícaro |
| <i>knife</i>          | cuchillo        |
| <i>knit</i>           | hacer media     |
| <i>knock at</i>       | llamar á        |
| <i>know</i>           | saber, conocer  |

## L.

|                      |                           |
|----------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>labour</i>        | trabajo                   |
| <i>lady</i>          | señora                    |
| <i>lamb</i>          | cordero                   |
| <i>large</i>         | ancho, grande             |
| <i>larum</i>         | despertador               |
| <i>last but one</i>  | penúltimo                 |
| <i>last night</i>    | anoche                    |
| <i>last time</i>     | últimamente               |
| <i>late</i>          | tarde                     |
| <i>late at night</i> | entrada la noche          |
| <i>latter</i>        | último                    |
| <i>laugh</i>         | reír                      |
| <i>laugh at</i>      | burlarse de               |
| <i>lawgiver</i>      | legislador                |
| <i>lay</i>           | colocar, echar            |
| <i>lazy</i>          | holgazan                  |
| <i>leap-year</i>     | año bisiesto              |
| <i>learn</i>         | aprender                  |
| <i>leather</i>       | cuero                     |
| <i>leave</i>         | salir de                  |
| <i>leave off</i>     | dejar, abandonar          |
| <i>lent</i>          | prestado                  |
| <i>letter</i>        | carta                     |
| <i>liable</i>        | expuesto                  |
| <i>lie</i>           | mentira                   |
| <i>like</i>          | } gustar, querer,<br>como |

|                        |                   |
|------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>lion</i>            | leon              |
| <i>lip</i>             | labio             |
| <i>listen</i>          | escuchar          |
| <i>little</i>          | poco              |
| <i>livelyhood</i>      | vida              |
| <i>lively</i>          | vivo              |
| <i>live</i>            | vivir             |
| <i>load</i>            | carga             |
| <i>load with</i>       | acusar de         |
| <i>loaf</i>            | pan               |
| <i>long</i>            | largo             |
| <i>look</i>            | tener cara, mirar |
| <i>look for</i>        | buscar            |
| <i>lost</i>            | perdido           |
| <i>loudly</i>          | alto, fuerte      |
| <i>louse, pl. lice</i> | piojo             |
| <i>love</i>            | amar, amor        |
| <i>low</i>             | bajo              |
| <i>loyalty</i>         | lealtad           |
| <i>lucky</i>           | dicha, feliz      |
| <i>lump</i>            | pedazo            |
| <i>lunch</i>           | merienda          |
| <i>lungs</i>           | pulmones          |

## M.

|                        |                       |
|------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>machine</i>         | máquina               |
| <i>mad</i>             | loco                  |
| <i>madam</i>           | señora                |
| <i>made</i>            | hecho                 |
| <i>magistrate</i>      | magistrado            |
| <i>mahogany</i>        | caoba                 |
| <i>maintain</i>        | mantener              |
| <i>make amends</i>     | indemnizar            |
| <i>Maker</i>           | Hacedor               |
| <i>many</i>            | muchos                |
| <i>mare</i>            | yegua                 |
| <i>mass-day</i>        | día de misa           |
| <i>matter</i>          | asunto, materia       |
| <i>(It doesn't...)</i> | no importa            |
| <i>mathematics</i>     | matemáticas           |
| <i>may</i>             | } poder,<br>ojalá que |
| <i>meadow</i>          | pradera               |
| <i>mean</i>            | significar            |
| <i>meat</i>            | carne                 |
| <i>Mediterranean</i>   | Mediterráneo          |
| <i>member</i>          | miembro               |
| <i>merchant</i>        | comerciante           |
| <i>metaphysics</i>     | metafísica            |
| <i>methinks</i>        | se me figura          |
| <i>mildness</i>        | dulzura               |

|                       |                  |
|-----------------------|------------------|
| <i>mile</i>           | milla            |
| <i>mind</i>           | intencion        |
| <i>mine</i>           | el nio           |
| <i>minister</i>       | ministro         |
| <i>mirror</i>         | espejo           |
| <i>misfortune</i>     | desgracia        |
| <i>mister</i>         | señor            |
| <i>miss</i>           | señorita         |
| <i>mistake</i>        | equivocarse      |
| <i>mood</i>           | modo             |
| <i>moon</i>           | luna             |
| <i>money</i>          | dinero           |
| <i>month</i>          | mes              |
| <i>more..... than</i> | más que          |
| <i>mother</i>         | madre            |
| <i>mountain</i>       | montaña          |
| <i>mouth</i>          | boca             |
| <i>much</i>           | mucho            |
| <i>muddy</i>          | turbio           |
| <i>murder</i>         | asesinato        |
| <i>must</i>           | deber, tener que |
| <i>my</i>             | mi               |

**N.**

|                         |                 |
|-------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>nail</i>             | uña             |
| <i>name</i>             | nombre          |
| <i>namely</i>           | á saber         |
| <i>naughty</i>          | malo            |
| <i>nature</i>           | naturaleza      |
| <i>necessary</i>        | necesario       |
| <i>neck</i>             | cuello          |
| <i>needle</i>           | aguja           |
| <i>neglect</i>          | descuidar       |
| <i>negro</i>            | negro           |
| <i>neighbour</i>        | vecino          |
| <i>neither..... nor</i> | ni... ni        |
| <i>never</i>            | nunca           |
| <i>never mind</i>       | no importa      |
| <i>new</i>              | nuevo           |
| <i>next</i>             | próximo         |
| <i>niece</i>            | sobrina         |
| <i>nightcap</i>         | gorro de dormir |
| <i>nobody</i>           | nadie           |
| <i>noise</i>            | ruido           |
| <i>no longer</i>        | no..... ya más  |
| <i>no more</i>          | ya no           |
| <i>none</i>             | ninguno         |
| <i>nonsense</i>         | insensatez (es) |
| <i>no..... other</i>    | no otro         |
| <i>nose</i>             | nariz           |
| <i>nostril</i>          | nariz           |

|                 |           |
|-----------------|-----------|
| <i>not</i>      | no        |
| <i>nothing</i>  | nada      |
| <i>novel</i>    | novela    |
| <i>November</i> | Noviembre |
| <i>now</i>      | ahora     |

**O.**

|                        |                 |
|------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>oak (ólk)</i>       | encina          |
| <i>oats</i>            | avena           |
| <i>obscured</i>        | oscurecido      |
| <i>obstinate</i>       | obstinado       |
| <i>occasioned</i>      | { producido,    |
| <i>occupation</i>      | { motivado      |
| <i>occupy</i>          | ocupacion       |
| <i>odd</i>             | ocupar          |
| <i>offense</i>         | raro            |
| <i>often</i>           | ofensa          |
| <i>oil</i>             | á menudo        |
| <i>old</i>             | aceite          |
| <i>omnipresent</i>     | viejo, de edad  |
| <i>on account of</i>   | omnipresente    |
| <i>once</i>            | á causa de      |
| <i>one</i>             | una vez         |
| <i>only</i>            | uno, un tal     |
| <i>on that account</i> | único, solo     |
| <i>open</i>            | por eso         |
| <i>open air</i>        | abrir           |
| <i>optics</i>          | aire libre      |
| <i>or</i>              | óptica          |
| <i>orchard</i>         | ó               |
| <i>ordain</i>          | huerto          |
| <i>other</i>           | ordenar, mandar |
| <i>our</i>             | otro            |
| <i>out of</i>          | nuestro, a      |
| <i>overhear</i>        | fuera de        |
| <i>owe</i>             | oir             |
| <i>owing</i>           | deber           |
| <i>ox</i>              | debido          |
|                        | buey            |

**P.**

|                   |            |
|-------------------|------------|
| <i>page</i>       | página     |
| <i>pains</i>      | penas      |
| <i>pair</i>       | par        |
| <i>pane</i>       | crystal    |
| <i>pantaloons</i> | pantalones |
| <i>paper</i>      | papel      |
| <i>parents</i>    | padres     |
| <i>park</i>       | parque     |
| <i>part</i>       | parte      |

|                      |                          |                      |                                  |
|----------------------|--------------------------|----------------------|----------------------------------|
| <i>particulars</i>   | pormenores               | <i>princess</i>      | princesa                         |
| <i>partnership</i>   | compañía                 | <i>probably</i>      | probablemente                    |
| <i>partridge</i>     | perdiz                   | <i>progress</i>      | progreso (s)                     |
| <i>party</i>         | partida                  | <i>promise</i>       | prometer                         |
| <i>passion</i>       | pasion                   | <i>protect</i>       | proteger                         |
| <i>potatoe</i>       | patata                   | <i>protestant</i>    | protestante                      |
| <i>patience</i>      | paciencia                | <i>prudence</i>      | prudencia                        |
| <i>patriote</i>      | patriota                 | <i>public-house</i>  | taberna                          |
| <i>pawns</i>         | peones                   | <i>pupil</i>         | discípulo                        |
| <i>pay</i>           | pagar, rendir            | <i>purse</i>         | bolsa                            |
| <i>pay a visit</i>   | hacer una visita         | <i>put</i>           | { poner,<br>puesto, etc.         |
| <i>payment</i>       | pago                     |                      |                                  |
| <i>pen</i>           | pluma                    |                      |                                  |
| <i>penny</i>         | penique                  |                      |                                  |
| <i>penknife</i>      | cortaplumas              |                      |                                  |
| <i>people</i>        | gente                    | <i>queen</i>         | reina                            |
| <i>pepper</i>        | pimienta                 | <i>question</i>      | pregunta                         |
| <i>perform</i>       | cumplir                  | <i>quickly</i>       | rápidamente                      |
| <i>pheasant</i>      | faisan                   | <i>quite</i>         | enteramente                      |
| <i>person</i>        | persona                  | <i>quite another</i> | muy otro                         |
| <i>physician</i>     | médico                   | <i>quite close</i>   | muy cerca                        |
| <i>physics</i>       | física                   |                      |                                  |
| <i>pick-pocket</i>   | tomador, ratero          |                      |                                  |
| <i>piece</i>         | pieza                    |                      |                                  |
| <i>pike</i>          | sollo                    | <i>raillery</i>      | burla                            |
| <i>pill</i>          | pildora                  | <i>rascal</i>        | pícaro                           |
| <i>pitch-fork</i>    | horca, gareo             | <i>rattle</i>        | hacer sonar                      |
| <i>pity</i>          | lástima                  | <i>rather</i>        | bastante                         |
| <i>play</i>          | jugar, teatro            | <i>reach</i>         | alcanzar                         |
| <i>play at</i>       | jugar á                  | <i>read</i>          | leer, leído                      |
| <i>please</i>        | { agradar,<br>perdone V. | <i>ready</i>         | { listo, dispuesto,<br>preparado |
| <i>pleased</i>       | satisfecho               | <i>reaper</i>        | segador                          |
| <i>pleasure</i>      | placer                   | <i>reason</i>        | razon                            |
| <i>plough (plau)</i> | arado                    | <i>receive</i>       | recibir                          |
| <i>pocket</i>        | bolsillo                 | <i>recompense</i>    | recompensa                       |
| <i>pocket-book</i>   | cartera                  | <i>red</i>           | rojo                             |
| <i>polite</i>        | fino                     | <i>regale</i>        | regalar                          |
| <i>politics</i>      | política                 | <i>reign</i>         | reinar, reinado                  |
| <i>poor</i>          | pobre                    | <i>relate</i>        | contar                           |
| <i>poplar</i>        | álamo                    | <i>relieve</i>       | socorrer                         |
| <i>post-office</i>   | correo                   | <i>reluctant</i>     | disgustado                       |
| <i>powerful</i>      | poteroso                 | <i>rely on</i>       | contar con                       |
| <i>praise</i>        | alabanza                 | <i>remain</i>        | { permanecer,<br>quedarse        |
| <i>pray</i>          | rogar                    | <i>remains</i>       | restos                           |
| <i>precaution</i>    | precaucion               | <i>repeat</i>        | repetir                          |
| <i>precious</i>      | precioso                 | <i>reproach with</i> | echar en cara                    |
| <i>present</i>       | regalo                   | <i>require</i>       | exigir                           |
| <i>pretty</i>        | bonito                   | <i>rest</i>          | descansar                        |
| <i>prevail upon</i>  | vencer                   | <i>rest</i>          | resto                            |
| <i>prevent</i>       | retener, impedir         | <i>return</i>        | { regresar,<br>devolver          |
| <i>prince</i>        | príncipe                 |                      |                                  |

## Q.

## R.

|                       |                 |
|-----------------------|-----------------|
| <i>revolution</i>     | revolucion      |
| <i>reward</i>         | recompensa      |
| <i>rial</i>           | real            |
| <i>ribbon</i>         | cinta           |
| <i>rich</i>           | rico            |
| <i>riches</i>         | riqueza (s)     |
| <i>rid ones' self</i> | desembarazarse  |
| <i>right</i>          | derecho, razon  |
| <i>rise</i>           | levantarse      |
| <i>rising</i>         | salida          |
| <i>road</i>           | camino          |
| <i>robber</i>         | ladron          |
| <i>rose</i>           | rosa            |
| <i>rule</i>           | gobernar, regla |

## S.

|                     |                      |
|---------------------|----------------------|
| <i>sack</i>         | saco                 |
| <i>safety</i>       | seguridad            |
| <i>same</i>         | mismo                |
| <i>say</i>          | decir                |
| <i>scarce</i>       | raro-s               |
| <i>scissors</i>     | tijeras              |
| <i>scholar</i>      | estudiante           |
| <i>schoolmaster</i> | } maestro de escuela |
| <i>scotchman</i>    |                      |
| <i>search</i>       | examinar             |
| <i>seat</i>         | asiento              |
| <i>second-hand</i>  | de lance             |
| <i>securely</i>     | con seguridad        |
| <i>see</i>          | ver                  |
| <i>seek</i>         | buscar               |
| <i>seldom</i>       | rara vez             |
| <i>seen</i>         | visto                |
| <i>send</i>         | enviar               |
| <i>send down</i>    | arrojarse            |
| <i>September</i>    | Setiembre            |
| <i>serious</i>      | serio                |
| <i>serve for</i>    | servir de            |
| <i>set-off</i>      | ponerse              |
| <i>shake-hands</i>  | darse la mano        |
| <i>shark</i>        | tiburón              |
| <i>sharp</i>        | afilado              |
| <i>shave</i>        | afeitarse            |
| <i>shawl</i>        | chal                 |
| <i>she</i>          | ella                 |
| <i>shear (shir)</i> | esquilar             |
| <i>shepherd</i>     | pastor               |
| <i>ship</i>         | buque                |
| <i>shirt</i>        | camisa               |
| <i>shoe</i>         | zapato               |

|                           |                         |
|---------------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>shore</i>              | orilla                  |
| <i>short</i>              | corto, bajito           |
| <i>shot</i>               | cañonazo                |
| <i>shoulder</i>           | espalda                 |
| <i>show</i>               | enseñar, mostrar        |
| <i>side</i>               | lado                    |
| <i>sight</i>              | vista                   |
| <i>silk</i>               | seda                    |
| <i>sin</i>                | pecado                  |
| <i>since</i>              | desde, hace             |
| <i>sing</i>               | cantar                  |
| <i>sinner</i>             | pecador                 |
| <i>sister</i>             | hermana                 |
| <i>skating ó skating</i>  | patinar                 |
| <i>skilful</i>            | hábil                   |
| <i>slave</i>              | esclavo                 |
| <i>sleep</i>              | dormir                  |
| <i>sliding</i>            | resbalar                |
| <i>sling</i>              | onda                    |
| <i>slowly</i>             | despacio                |
| <i>sly</i>                | sagaz                   |
| <i>small</i>              | pequeño                 |
| <i>smile</i>              | sonreír                 |
| <i>snatch</i>             | arrancar                |
| <i>snuff-box</i>          | } bofetón,<br>tabaquera |
| <i>snuffers</i>           |                         |
| <i>so as</i>              | de tal suerte que       |
| <i>solemn</i>             | solemne                 |
| <i>somewhat</i>           | algun tanto             |
| <i>so much the better</i> | tanto mejor             |
| <i>sold</i>               | vendido                 |
| <i>son</i>                | hijo                    |
| <i>soon</i>               | pronto                  |
| <i>so that</i>            | de modo que             |
| <i>Spaniard</i>           | español                 |
| <i>speak</i>              | hablar                  |
| <i>spend</i>              | gastar                  |
| <i>spoken</i>             | hablado                 |
| <i>square</i>             | casilla, plaza          |
| <i>stable</i>             | cuadro, establo         |
| <i>staff</i>              | palo, bastón            |
| <i>stage-coach</i>        | diligencia              |
| <i>stationer</i>          | almacenista             |
| <i>stay</i>               | permanecer              |
| <i>stays</i>              | corsé                   |
| <i>steal</i>              | robar                   |
| <i>steel</i>              | acero                   |
| <i>step</i>               | paso, pisada            |
| <i>stick</i>              | bastón                  |
| <i>still</i>              | todavía                 |
| <i>sting</i>              | remordimiento           |



|                     |                   |
|---------------------|-------------------|
| <i>stint</i>        | cercenar, acortar |
| <i>stocking</i>     | media             |
| <i>stone</i>        | piedra            |
| <i>stop</i>         | parar             |
| <i>street</i>       | calle             |
| <i>string</i>       | cordón            |
| <i>strong</i>       | fuerte            |
| <i>study</i>        | estudio, estudiar |
| <i>stuff (staf)</i> | tela              |
| <i>subject</i>      | asunto            |
| <i>success</i>      | éxito             |
| <i>succour</i>      | socorrer          |
| <i>suffer</i>       | sufrir            |
| <i>suckle</i>       | criar             |
| <i>summer</i>       | verano            |
| <i>sun</i>          | sol               |
| <i>supper</i>       | cena              |
| <i>suppose</i>      | suponer           |
| <i>suspect</i>      | sospechar         |

## T.

|                       |                             |
|-----------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>tailor</i>         | sastre                      |
| <i>take</i>           | tomar                       |
| <i>take a walk</i>    | dar un paseo                |
| <i>take hold</i>      | agarrar                     |
| <i>take long</i>      | emplear mucho tiempo        |
| <i>tackle-shop</i>    | tienda de objetos de pescar |
| <i>tale</i>           | novela                      |
| <i>task, theme</i>    | tema, tarea                 |
| <i>taste</i>          | gusto, sabor                |
| <i>teacher</i>        | profesor                    |
| <i>team</i>           | yunta                       |
| <i>teeth</i>          | dientes                     |
| <i>temptation</i>     | tentación                   |
| <i>that</i>           | para qué, ese               |
| <i>theatre</i>        | teatro                      |
| <i>their</i>          | su                          |
| <i>then</i>           | entonces                    |
| <i>there</i>          | allí                        |
| <i>there are</i>      | hay                         |
| <i>therefore</i>      | por eso                     |
| <i>there you have</i> | ahí tiene V.                |
| <i>these</i>          | estos-as                    |
| <i>thief</i>          | ladron                      |
| <i>thing</i>          | cosa                        |
| <i>thinking</i>       | pensando                    |
| <i>think of</i>       | pensar en                   |
| <i>this</i>           | este-a                      |
| <i>this long time</i> | por tanto tiempo            |

|                           |                          |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>thread</i>             | hilo                     |
| <i>through (zru)</i>      | por, á través de         |
| <i>throughout</i>         | por todo                 |
| <i>throw</i>              | echar, arrojar           |
| <i>timber</i>             | madera (de construcción) |
| <i>tire (tair)</i>        | fastidiar, cansar        |
| <i>tiresome</i>           | molesto                  |
| <i>to-day</i>             | hoy                      |
| <i>toll-house</i>         | portazgo                 |
| <i>to-morrow mor-ning</i> | mañana por la mañana     |
| <i>tongs</i>              | tenazas                  |
| <i>town</i>               | ciudad                   |
| <i>toy</i>                | juguete                  |
| <i>trade</i>              | comercio                 |
| <i>train</i>              | tren                     |
| <i>translation</i>        | traducción               |
| <i>travel</i>             | viajar                   |
| <i>treat</i>              | tratar, obsequiar        |
| <i>treaty</i>             | tratado                  |
| <i>tree</i>               | árbol                    |
| <i>trespass</i>           | faltar, ofender          |
| <i>trifle</i>             | engañar, chancear        |
| <i>trifling</i>           | insignificante           |
| <i>trousers</i>           | pantalones               |
| <i>true</i>               | fiel, verdadero          |
| <i>truth</i>              | verdad                   |
| <i>turk</i>               | turco                    |
| <i>tug</i>                | tiro                     |
| <i>turn</i>               | turno, vez               |
| <i>turn</i>               | volver, llegar á ser     |
| <i>two</i>                | dos                      |
| <i>tyran (t)</i>          | tirano                   |

## U.

|                       |                 |
|-----------------------|-----------------|
| <i>ugly</i>           | feo             |
| <i>unable</i>         | incapaz         |
| <i>uncivil</i>        | descortés       |
| <i>uncle</i>          | tío             |
| <i>under</i>          | bajo            |
| <i>understand</i>     | entender        |
| <i>unfortunate</i>    | desgraciado     |
| <i>ungrateful</i>     | ingrato         |
| <i>unjust</i>         | injusto         |
| <i>unhappy</i>        | desgraciado     |
| <i>unload</i>         | descargar       |
| <i>unreasonable</i>   | irrazonable     |
| <i>until now when</i> | hasta ahora que |

|                |                |
|----------------|----------------|
| <i>usage</i>   | tratamiento    |
| <i>use</i>     | uso, utilidad  |
| <i>useful</i>  | útil           |
| <i>useless</i> | inútil         |
| <i>usually</i> | por lo regular |

## V.

|                 |             |
|-----------------|-------------|
| <i>vain</i>     | vano        |
| <i>valuable</i> | precioso    |
| <i>valley</i>   | valle       |
| <i>verb</i>     | verbo       |
| <i>very</i>     | muy         |
| <i>vevation</i> | } molestia, |
|                 | } vejacion  |
| <i>village</i>  | aldea       |
| <i>virgin</i>   | vírgen      |
| <i>virtue</i>   | virtud      |
| <i>virtuous</i> | virtuoso    |
| <i>volume</i>   | volúmen     |

## W.

|                      |                   |
|----------------------|-------------------|
| <i>wagon</i>         | camion, carro     |
| <i>wagoner</i>       | carretero         |
| <i>waken</i>         | despertarse       |
| <i>want</i>          | necesitar         |
| <i>war</i>           | guerra            |
| <i>warm</i>          | calentar, calor   |
| <i>was</i>           | era               |
| <i>wash</i>          | lavar (se)        |
| <i>was living</i>    | vivia             |
| <i>water</i>         | regar             |
| <i>way</i>           | modo, camino      |
| <i>we</i>            | nosotros          |
| <i>wealth</i>        | riqueza (s)       |
| <i>week</i>          | semana            |
| <i>well</i>          | bien              |
| <i>went</i>          | fueron            |
| <i>West-Indies</i>   | } Indias Occiden- |
|                      | } tales           |
| <i>what?</i>         | qué? lo que       |
| <i>whatever</i>      | lo que quiera que |
| <i>whenever else</i> | } en otra ocasion |
|                      | } que             |
| <i>where</i>         | dónde             |

|                      |                   |
|----------------------|-------------------|
| <i>whereat</i>       | de lo que         |
| <i>wherever else</i> | } en cualquiera   |
|                      | } otra parte      |
| <i>whether</i>       | si (dub.)         |
| <i>whispered</i>     | cuchicheó         |
| <i>white</i>         | blanco            |
| <i>who?</i>          | quién?            |
| <i>why?</i>          | por qué?          |
| <i>wife</i>          | esposa            |
| <i>wilderness</i>    | desierto          |
| <i>will</i>          | testamento        |
| <i>William</i>       | Guillermo         |
| <i>win</i>           | ganar             |
| <i>window</i>        | ventana           |
| <i>wine</i>          | vino              |
| <i>winter</i>        | invierno          |
| <i>wise</i>          | sabio             |
| <i>wish (for)</i>    | desear            |
| <i>with</i>          | con               |
| <i>without</i>       | sin               |
| <i>woman</i>         | mujer             |
| <i>wolf</i>          | lobo              |
| <i>wood</i>          | leña, madera      |
| <i>word</i>          | palabra           |
| <i>work</i>          | trabajar          |
| <i>world</i>         | mundo             |
| <i>workman</i>       | trabajador        |
| <i>worse</i>         | peor              |
| <i>worth, worthy</i> | digno, apreciable |
| <i>would to God</i>  | ojalá             |
| <i>write</i>         | escribir          |
| <i>written</i>       | escrito           |
| <i>wrought</i>       | trabajado         |

## Y.

|                     |                 |
|---------------------|-----------------|
| <i>yard</i>         | vara            |
| <i>year</i>         | año             |
| <i>yellow</i>       | amarillo        |
| <i>yes</i>          | si              |
| <i>yesterday</i>    | ayer            |
| <i>yonder</i>       | allá            |
| <i>young man</i>    | jóven           |
| <i>young-people</i> | jóvenes         |
| <i>your</i>         | su de V.        |
| <i>youth</i>        | jóven, juventud |

## II.

## A.

|               |                     |
|---------------|---------------------|
| abstenerse de | <i>abstain from</i> |
| academia      | <i>academy</i>      |
| aceite        | <i>oil</i>          |
| acerca de     | <i>about</i>        |
| agradar       | <i>please</i>       |
| agradable     | <i>agreeable</i>    |
| aire libre    | <i>open air</i>     |
| alcanzar      | <i>reach</i>        |
| aldea         | <i>village</i>      |
| alfiler       | <i>pin</i>          |
| al lado de    | <i>just (by)</i>    |
| amable        | <i>amiable</i>      |
| amarillo      | <i>yellow</i>       |
| amar mucho    | <i>love dearly</i>  |
| aparecer      | <i>appear</i>       |
| aplaudido     | <i>applauded</i>    |
| apreciable    | <i>worthy</i>       |
| aprender      | <i>learn</i>        |
| aquí          | <i>here</i>         |
| atar          | <i>fasten</i>       |
| atormentar    | <i>torment</i>      |
| augmentar     | <i>increase</i>     |

## B.

|              |                  |
|--------------|------------------|
| bajo         | <i>low</i>       |
| bajo (prep.) | <i>under</i>     |
| blasfemia    | <i>blasphemy</i> |
| bollo        | <i>cake</i>      |
| bonito       | <i>beautiful</i> |
| bruja        | <i>fright</i>    |
| burlarse de  | <i>laugh at</i>  |
| buscar       | <i>look for</i>  |

## C.

|                |                   |
|----------------|-------------------|
| cadena         | <i>chain</i>      |
| calentar       | <i>warm</i>       |
| campo de trigo | <i>corn field</i> |
| cantar         | <i>sing</i>       |
| cañon          | <i>cannon</i>     |
| cañonazo       | <i>shot</i>       |

|               |                        |
|---------------|------------------------|
| católico      | <i>catholic</i>        |
| cocina        | <i>kitchen</i>         |
| comerciante   | <i>merchant</i>        |
| colegio       | <i>boarding school</i> |
| collar        | <i>collar</i>          |
| comprado      | <i>bought</i>          |
| con bondad    | <i>kindly</i>          |
| concluir      | <i>finish</i>          |
| con seguridad | <i>securely</i>        |
| con tal que   | <i>provided</i>        |
| contar con    | <i>rely on</i>         |
| continuar     | <i>continue</i>        |
| continuamente | <i>incessantly</i>     |
| contra        | <i>against</i>         |
| convenir      | <i>agree</i>           |
| conversacion  | <i>conversation</i>    |
| Córcega       | <i>Corsica</i>         |
| corbata       | <i>cravat</i>          |
| cordón        | <i>string</i>          |
| corona        | <i>crown</i>           |
| cosa          | <i>thing</i>           |
| cosecha       | <i>crop</i>            |
| costumbre     | <i>custom</i>          |
| creyendo      | <i>thinking</i>        |
| criar         | <i>suckle</i>          |
| cual          | <i>which</i>           |
| cuello        | <i>neck</i>            |

## Ch.

|        |                 |
|--------|-----------------|
| chelin | <i>shilling</i> |
|--------|-----------------|

## D.

|               |                    |
|---------------|--------------------|
| dar           | <i>give</i>        |
| dar de comer  | <i>feed</i>        |
| darse la mano | <i>shake hands</i> |
| deber         | <i>must</i>        |
| dedicado      | <i>addicted</i>    |
| de este modo  | <i>in this way</i> |
| dejar         | <i>leave off</i>   |
| de lo que     | <i>whereat</i>     |
| desde que     | <i>since</i>       |

|                |                       |
|----------------|-----------------------|
| desde entonces | <i>from that time</i> |
| desembarazarse | <i>rid one's self</i> |
| desinteresado  | <i>desinterested</i>  |
| despertador    | <i>larum</i>          |
| despues        | <i>after</i>          |
| devolver       | <i>return</i>         |
| direccion      | <i>direction</i>      |
| discipulo      | <i>pupil</i>          |
| discreto       | <i>discreet</i>       |
| divino         | <i>divine</i>         |
| donde          | <i>where</i>          |
| dos            | <i>two</i>            |

## E.

|                  |                            |
|------------------|----------------------------|
| elevado          | <i>elevated</i>            |
| enajenado        | <i>alienated</i>           |
| en casa          | <i>at home</i>             |
| en casa de       | <i>at</i>                  |
| encanto          | <i>charm</i>               |
| encina           | <i>oak</i>                 |
| enfermedad       | <i>infirmity, sickness</i> |
| engañar          | <i>deceive</i>             |
| enriquecerse     | <i>grow rich</i>           |
| enseñar          | <i>show</i>                |
| entonces         | <i>then</i>                |
| entrada la noche | <i>at night</i>            |
| entre            | <i>among, between</i>      |
| en cualquiera    | } <i>wherever else</i>     |
| otra ocasion que |                            |
| era conveniente  | <i>it was convenient</i>   |
| esclavo          | <i>slave</i>               |
| es necesario     | <i>it is necessary</i>     |
| espejo           | <i>mirror</i>              |
| esperar          | <i>wait for; expect</i>    |
| esposa           | <i>wife</i>                |
| es que           | <i>because</i>             |
| está mandado     | <i>it is ordained</i>      |
| estar triste     | <i>be sorry</i>            |
| estudio          | <i>study</i>               |
| estudiado        | <i>studied</i>             |
| extranjero       | <i>foreign</i>             |

## F.

|           |                       |
|-----------|-----------------------|
| fácil     | <i>easy</i>           |
| fastidiar | <i>tire</i>           |
| feroz     | <i>ferocious</i>      |
| fiar      | <i>credit</i>         |
| fiel      | <i>true, faithful</i> |
| fino      | <i>fine, polite</i>   |

|         |                  |
|---------|------------------|
| fortuna | <i>fortune</i>   |
| frances | <i>frenchman</i> |

## G.

|                         |                    |
|-------------------------|--------------------|
| ganado                  | <i>won, gained</i> |
| garbanzo                | <i>chick-pea</i>   |
| generoso                | <i>generous</i>    |
| generosidad             | <i>generosity</i>  |
| gobierno do-<br>méstico | } <i>household</i> |
| grave                   |                    |
| guante                  | <i>glove</i>       |
| guerra                  | <i>war</i>         |
| guitarra                | <i>guitar</i>      |

## H.

|                 |                       |
|-----------------|-----------------------|
| hacerse         | <i>be done</i>        |
| hallarse bien   | <i>be well</i>        |
| hasta ahora que | <i>until now when</i> |
| hecho           | <i>made</i>           |
| heno            | <i>hay</i>            |
| historia        | <i>history</i>        |
| holgazan        | <i>lazy</i>           |
| hombre de bien  | <i>good man</i>       |
| honrado         | <i>honest</i>         |

## I.

|            |                   |
|------------|-------------------|
| ido        | <i>gone away</i>  |
| inclinado  | <i>inclined</i>   |
| indicar    | <i>indicate</i>   |
| infamia    | <i>infamy</i>     |
| infantería | <i>foot</i>       |
| ingrato    | <i>ungrateful</i> |
| inútil     | <i>useless</i>    |
| isla       | <i>island</i>     |

## J.

|                        |                        |
|------------------------|------------------------|
| Jorge                  | <i>George</i>          |
| jóven (adj.)           | <i>young</i>           |
| jóvenes                | <i>young people</i>    |
| jugar á los<br>juguete | <i>play at<br/>toy</i> |

## L.

|      |             |
|------|-------------|
| lado | <i>side</i> |
| leña | <i>wood</i> |
| ley  | <i>law</i>  |

|              |                       |
|--------------|-----------------------|
| limpiar      | <i>clean</i>          |
| lo que es yo | <i>as for me</i>      |
| llamar á     | <i>knock at</i>       |
| llegar á     | <i>arrive at ó to</i> |
| llover       | <i>rain</i>           |

**M.**

|                 |                      |
|-----------------|----------------------|
| mandar          | <i>command</i>       |
| mantener        | <i>maintain</i>      |
| manzana         | <i>apple</i>         |
| máquina         | <i>machine</i>       |
| marchado        | <i>departed</i>      |
| mas.... que.... | <i>more.... than</i> |
| Mediterráneo    | <i>Mediterranean</i> |
| mirar           | <i>behold</i>        |
| momento         | <i>moment</i>        |
| muchacho        | <i>boy</i>           |
| muchos-as       | <i>many</i>          |
| mundo           | <i>world</i>         |
| muy             | <i>very</i>          |

**N.**

|                        |                                     |
|------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| nada                   | <i>anything, nothing</i>            |
| naturaleza             | <i>nature</i>                       |
| niño (niñez)           | <i>childhood; child</i>             |
| no es de supo-<br>ner  | <i>it is not to be<br/>supposed</i> |
| no estaria na-<br>die  | <i>probably nobody<br/>was</i>      |
| no otro                | <i>no other</i>                     |
| no podemos             | <i>we cannot</i>                    |
| no puedo mé-<br>nos de | <i>I cannot help</i>                |
| nuestro                | <i>our</i>                          |
| nuevo                  | <i>new</i>                          |

**O.**

|                |                     |
|----------------|---------------------|
| obedecer       | <i>obey</i>         |
| obra           | <i>work</i>         |
| ocupacion      | <i>occupation</i>   |
| ojalá          | <i>would to God</i> |
| ojo            | <i>eye</i>          |
| ordinario      | <i>carrier</i>      |
| orilla         | <i>shore</i>        |
| otoño          | <i>autumn</i>       |
| otro cualquier | <i>any other</i>    |

**P.**

|       |                |
|-------|----------------|
| agano | <i>heathen</i> |
|-------|----------------|

|                         |                                       |
|-------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| página                  | <i>page</i>                           |
| país                    | <i>country</i>                        |
| paja                    | <i>straw</i>                          |
| palabra                 | <i>word</i>                           |
| pan                     | <i>bread</i>                          |
| pan (entero)            | <i>loaf</i>                           |
| pañó                    | <i>cloth</i>                          |
| paquete                 | <i>bundle</i>                         |
| para, por               | <i>for</i>                            |
| para (con v.)           | <i>in order to</i>                    |
| para afilar             | <i>grinding</i>                       |
| para coser              | <i>sewing</i>                         |
| parte                   | <i>part</i>                           |
| pasar                   | <i>pass</i>                           |
| pasion                  | <i>passion</i>                        |
| patriota                | <i>patriote</i>                       |
| pecado                  | <i>sin</i>                            |
| pecador                 | <i>sinner</i>                         |
| pedir,<br>preguntar por | <i>ask for</i>                        |
| pegar                   | <i>beat</i>                           |
| penúltimo               | <i>last but one</i>                   |
| perdiz                  | <i>partridge</i>                      |
| picaro                  | <i>rascal</i>                         |
| pedra                   | <i>stone</i>                          |
| pieza                   | <i>piece</i>                          |
| pildora                 | <i>pill</i>                           |
| placer                  | <i>pleasure</i>                       |
| pluma                   | <i>pen</i>                            |
| politica                | <i>politics</i>                       |
| pollo                   | <i>chicken</i>                        |
| por consiguiente        | <i>consequently</i>                   |
| por eso                 | <i>therefore,<br/>on that account</i> |
| por mi parte            | <i>as for me</i>                      |
| portarse                | <i>behave</i>                         |
| por todo                | <i>throughout</i>                     |
| pradera                 | <i>meadow</i>                         |
| preparado               | <i>prepared</i>                       |
| presencia               | <i>presence</i>                       |
| primo                   | <i>cousin</i>                         |
| producido               | <i>occasioned</i>                     |
| profesor                | <i>professor</i>                      |
| prójimo                 | <i>neighbour</i>                      |
| prudencia               | <i>prudence</i>                       |
| pute, puesto            | <i>put</i>                            |

**Q.**

|          |                 |
|----------|-----------------|
| qué?     | <i>what?</i>    |
| quejarse | <i>complain</i> |
| quemar   | <i>burn</i>     |

|        |               |
|--------|---------------|
| querer | <i>like</i>   |
| queso  | <i>cheese</i> |
| quién? | <i>who?</i>   |

## R.

|               |                    |
|---------------|--------------------|
| raro          | <i>odd, scarce</i> |
| real          | <i>rial, real</i>  |
| recibir       | <i>receive</i>     |
| regresar      | <i>return</i>      |
| reinar        | <i>reign</i>       |
| remordimiento | <i>sting</i>       |
| resfriado     | <i>cold</i>        |
| responder de  | <i>answer for</i>  |
| resto         | <i>rest</i>        |
| rezar         | <i>pray</i>        |
| rojo          | <i>red</i>         |
| ruido         | <i>noise</i>       |

## S.

|              |                         |
|--------------|-------------------------|
| sacerdote    | <i>priest</i>           |
| sagaz        | <i>sly</i>              |
| salir        | <i>go out</i>           |
| salir de     | <i>leave</i>            |
| salido       | <i>gone out</i>         |
| salvar       | <i>save</i>             |
| santiguarse  | <i>cross one's self</i> |
| satisfecho   | <i>pleased</i>          |
| segador      | <i>reaper</i>           |
| se gobernaba | <i>was governed</i>     |
| se llama     | <i>is named</i>         |
| sentimiento  | <i>sentiment</i>        |
| servir de    | <i>serve for</i>        |
| siempre que  | <i>whenever</i>         |
| significar   | <i>mean</i>             |
| silbado      | <i>hissed</i>           |
| silla        | <i>chair</i>            |
| sin embargo  | <i>however</i>          |
| socorrer     | <i>relieve</i>          |
| sombrero     | <i>hat</i>              |
| su (de V.)   | <i>your</i>             |

|                 |                    |
|-----------------|--------------------|
| sufrir          | <i>suffer</i>      |
| sujeto (hombre) | <i>fellow</i>      |
| sujeto          | <i>subject</i>     |
| sumo sacerdote  | <i>high priest</i> |

## T.

|             |                           |
|-------------|---------------------------|
| tanto mejor | <i>so much the better</i> |
| tarde       | <i>late</i>               |
| tarea       | <i>duty</i>               |
| tema        | <i>task, theme</i>        |
| tentacion   | <i>temptation</i>         |
| tiene él?   | <i>has he?</i>            |
| tiene V.?   | <i>have you?</i>          |
| todavía     | <i>still</i>              |
| toros       | <i>bull-fights</i>        |
| trabajador  | <i>workman</i>            |
| trabajar    | <i>be at work, work</i>   |
| traducir de | <i>translate from</i>     |
| traduccion  | <i>translation</i>        |
| traer       | <i>bring</i>              |
| traido      | <i>brought</i>            |
| triste      | <i>sad</i>                |
| turco       | <i>turk</i>               |

## U.

|         |             |
|---------|-------------|
| una vez | <i>once</i> |
| un tal  | <i>one</i>  |

## V.

|           |                   |
|-----------|-------------------|
| veces     | <i>times</i>      |
| vela      | <i>candle</i>     |
| vituperar | <i>blame</i>      |
| volver    | <i>come again</i> |

## Z.

|          |                  |
|----------|------------------|
| zapatero | <i>shoemaker</i> |
| zapato   | <i>shoe</i>      |
| zorra    | <i>fox</i>       |



## COMPLETE LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS.

|             |                                                                   |              |                                                           |
|-------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| <b>A.</b>   | Afternoon; answer; active.                                        | Bt.          | Baronet.                                                  |
| A. B.       | Artium Baccalaureus                                               | Bucks.       | Buckinghamshire.                                          |
| Ab.         | About.                                                            | B. V.        | Blessed Virgin.                                           |
| Abp.        | Archbishop.                                                       | <b>Can't</b> | Cannot.                                                   |
| A. C.       | Ante Christum.                                                    | Cant.        | Canticle, or the Song of Salomon; Canterbury.             |
| Act., Acct. | Account.                                                          | Capt.        | Captain.                                                  |
| A. D.       | Anno Domini.                                                      | Cass.        | Cassandra.                                                |
| Adml.       | Admiral.                                                          | Cat.         | Catechism.                                                |
| Admsr.      | Administrators.                                                   | C. C. C.     | Corpus Christi College.                                   |
| Agt.        | Against.                                                          | Cent.        | Centum, a hundred.                                        |
| Altho.      | Although.                                                         | Ch.          | Church; Chapter.                                          |
| A. M.       | <i>Artium magister, ante meridiem</i> , noon; <i>anno mundi</i> . | Cham.        | Chancellor.                                               |
| Amt., Am.   | Amongst.                                                          | Chas.        | Charles.                                                  |
| A'most.     | Almost.                                                           | Chap.        | Chapter.                                                  |
| Ana.        | Of each a like quantity.                                          | Chron.       | Chronicles.                                               |
| Anab.       | Anabaptist.                                                       | Cit.         | Citizen.                                                  |
| An't.       | Am not.                                                           | Cl.          | Clerk; Clergyman.                                         |
| Ans.        | Answer.                                                           | Co.          | Company; County.                                          |
| Ap.         | Apostle; April.                                                   | Col.         | Colonel; Colossians.                                      |
| A. R.       | <i>Anno regni</i> .                                               | Com.         | Commissioner.                                             |
| Arn't.      | Are not; art not.                                                 | Con.         | Consols; Constance; Constantine.                          |
| A. S. S.    | <i>Antiquarianæ Societatis socius</i> .                           | Cor.         | Corinthians; Corolaly.                                    |
| A. U. C.    | <i>Anno urbis conditæ</i> . (Año de la fundacion de Roma.)        | Corn.        | Cornelius.                                                |
| <b>B.</b>   | Baron.                                                            | Cou'd.       | Could.                                                    |
| B. A.       | Bachelor of Arts.                                                 | Couldn't.    | Could not.                                                |
| Bar. Bart.  | Baronet.                                                          | C. P. S.     | <i>Custos privati Sigilli</i> , Keeper of the Privy Seal. |
| B. C.       | Before Christ.                                                    | C. R.        | <i>Carolus rex</i> , King Charles.                        |
| B. D.       | Bachelor of Divinity.                                             | Cr.          | Creditor.                                                 |
| Ben't.      | Be not.                                                           | Crim. con.   | Criminal conversation.                                    |
| Berks.      | Berkshire.                                                        | C. S.        | <i>Custos sigilli</i> , Keeper of the Seal.               |
| B. L.       | Bachelor of Laws.                                                 | Cts.         | Countess.                                                 |
| B. M.       | Bachelor of Medicine.                                             | Cust. Rot.   | <i>Custos Rolutorum</i> Keeper of the Rolls.              |
| 'Bove.      | Above.                                                            | Cur.         | Curate; Curius.                                           |
| Bp.         | Bishop.                                                           |              |                                                           |
| Br.         | Brother.                                                          |              |                                                           |
| Bro'        | Burgh.                                                            |              |                                                           |
| Bs.         | Baroness.                                                         |              |                                                           |



|                 |                                             |                 |                                    |
|-----------------|---------------------------------------------|-----------------|------------------------------------|
| Cwt.            | Hundredweight.                              | Feby.           | February.                          |
| <b>D.</b>       | Doctor; five hundred; Duke; Dean; Division. | F. L. S.        | Fellow of the Linnæan Society.     |
| d.              | <i>Denarius</i> ; penny.                    | Fol.            | Folio.                             |
| 'd.             | Would; had.                                 | 'fore.          | afore.                             |
| d'.             | do.                                         | F. P.           | Fire Plug.                         |
| Dan.            | Daniel.                                     | Fr.             | France; Francis.                   |
| D. C.           | Deacon of Christ church.                    | F. R. S.        | Fellow of the Royal Society.       |
| D. D.           | Doctor of Divinity.                         | F. S. A.        | Fellow of the Society of Arts.     |
| Dd.             | Delivered.                                  | <b>G.</b>       | God; George; Gospel.               |
| Deac.           | Deacon.                                     | 'gainst.        | against.                           |
| Dec. (10ber)    | December.                                   | Gal.            | Gala'ans.                          |
| Deut.           | Deuteronomy.                                | Gar.            | Garrison.                          |
| Dit.            | } Ditto, the same.                          | G. C. B.        | Knight Grand Cross of the Bath.    |
| Do.             |                                             |                 |                                    |
| Doesn't.        | Does not.                                   | Gen.            | General; Genesis.                  |
| Don't.          | Do not.                                     | Genmo.          | Generalissimo.                     |
| Do't.           | Do it.                                      | Gent.           | Gentleman.                         |
| Dow.            | Dowager.                                    | Geo.            | George.                            |
| Dr.             | Doctor; Debtor.                             | Gi'me.          | give me.                           |
| Ds.             | Duchess.                                    | Gos.            | Gospel.                            |
| D'ye.           | Do you.                                     | Gov.            | Governor.                          |
| <b>E.</b>       | Earl.                                       | Gr.             | Great.                             |
| 'e.             | ye; you.                                    | G. R.           | <i>Georgius Rex</i> , King George. |
| Earld.          | Earldom.                                    | Greg.           | Gregory.                           |
| Ed.             | Edition.                                    | Grs.            | Grains.                            |
| Edm.            | Edmund.                                     | Gt.             | Great.                             |
| Edw.            | Edward.                                     | <b>H</b> adn't. | Had not.                           |
| E'en. Evn.      | Even.                                       | Han't.          | Have not.                          |
| E'r.            | Ever.                                       | Hants.          | Hampshire.                         |
| E. g.           | <i>Exempli gratia</i> , for example.        | Hark'e.         | Hark ye (you).                     |
| Eliz.           | Elizabeth.                                  | Havn't.         | Have not.                          |
| 'em.            | Them.                                       | Hble.           | Honourable.                        |
| Eng.            | England.                                    | H. B. M.        | His (Her) British Majesty.         |
| Ens.            | Ensign.                                     | Hd.             | Honoured.                          |
| Ep.             | Epistle.                                    | h. e.           | <i>hoc est</i> , that is.          |
| Eph.            | Ephesians.                                  | Heb.            | Hebrew.                            |
| Esa.            | Esaias.                                     | He'd.           | He had, he would.                  |
| Esq. Esqr.      | Esquire.                                    | He'll.          | He will.                           |
| etc.            | <i>et cætera</i> , and so on.               | Hen.            | Henry.                             |
| Ex. Excy.       | Excellency.                                 | Here's.         | Here is.                           |
| Exp.            | Express; Explanation.                       | He's.           | He is.                             |
| Ev'ry.          | Every.                                      | Hhd.            | Hogshead.                          |
| <b>F. A. S.</b> | Fellow of the Antiquarian Society.          | Hier.           | Hieronimus.                        |
|                 |                                             | H. M's.         | His (Her) Majesty's.               |

|               |                                                   |            |                                                                    |
|---------------|---------------------------------------------------|------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------|
| H. M. S.      | His (Her) Majesty's Ship (Service).               | K. P.      | Knight of St. Patrick.                                             |
| Hon.          | Honourable.                                       | K. G.      | Knight of the Garter. King George.                                 |
| Howe'r.       | However.                                          | Kt. Knt.   | Knight.                                                            |
| H. P.         | Half pay.                                         | K. T.      | Knight of the Thistle.                                             |
| H. S.         | <i>Hic situs</i> , here lies.                     | <b>L.</b>  | Lord; <i>liber</i> , book; line; latitude.                         |
| Hum.          | Humphry.                                          | £.         | pound sterling.                                                    |
| Hund.         | Hundred.                                          | Ladp.      | Ladyship.                                                          |
| Hunts.        | Huntingdonshire.                                  | Lat.       | Latitude.                                                          |
| <b>I.</b>     | In.                                               | Ldp.       | Lordship.                                                          |
| Ib. ibid.     | <i>ibidem</i> , in the same place.                | lb.        | Pound weight.                                                      |
| I'd.          | I had, I would.                                   | Ld.        | Lord.                                                              |
| id.           | <i>idem</i> , the same.                           | L. D.      | Lady Day.                                                          |
| i. e.         | <i>id est</i> , that is.                          | Let'em.    | Let them.                                                          |
| I'll.         | I will.                                           | Let's.     | Let us.                                                            |
| Illus.        | Illustrious.                                      | Lev.       | Leviticus.                                                         |
| I'm.          | I am.                                             | Lieut.     | Lieutenant.                                                        |
| In.           | Inches.                                           | 'll.       | will.                                                              |
| Incog.        | Incognito.                                        | L. L. D.   | <i>Legum Doctor</i> , Doctor of Laws (of the Canon and Civil Law). |
| Iuo.          | John.                                             | L. M.      | Last month.                                                        |
| Iust.         | Instant (this month), Institution; Instrument.    | Lon.       | Longitude.                                                         |
| i. P.         | Irish Peer.                                       | Lond.      | London.                                                            |
| Isn't.        | is not.                                           | Lp.        | Lordship.                                                          |
| I'the.        | in the.                                           | Lr. Lt.    | Letter.                                                            |
| It's.         | it is.                                            | L. S.      | Locus Sigilli, Place of the Seal.                                  |
| I've.         | I have.                                           | <b>M.</b>  | Majesty; Marquis; Member; <i>mille</i> , a thousand.               |
| <b>Jac.</b>   | Jacob.                                            | 'm.        | am.                                                                |
| Jan.          | January.                                          | M. A.      | Master of Arts.                                                    |
| Jer.          | Jeremiah.                                         | Ma'am, Mm. | Madam.                                                             |
| Jest.         | Jesuit.                                           | Maj.       | Major.                                                             |
| J. H. S.      | Jesus hominum Salvator, Jesus the Saviour of men. | Mar.       | March, Martyr.                                                     |
| Jos.          | Joseph.                                           | Mart.      | Martin, Martial.                                                   |
| Josh.         | Joshua.                                           | Mat.       | Mathew.                                                            |
| J. R.         | Jacobus Rex, King James.                          | Math.      | Mathematics.                                                       |
| Jud.          | Judges.                                           | Mayn't.    | may not.                                                           |
| Jul.          | July.                                             | M. B.      | Bachelor of Medicine (Music).                                      |
| Jun.          | Junior; June.                                     | Mc. Mc'.   | Mac.                                                               |
| Just.         | Justice.                                          | M. D.      | <i>Medicina Doctor</i> ; Doctor of Medicine.                       |
| <b>K.</b> Kg. | King.                                             | Mem.       | <i>Memento</i> , remember, memoranda.                              |
| K. B.         | Knight of the Bath.                               |            |                                                                    |
| K. C. B.      | Knight Commander of the Bath.                     |            |                                                                    |
| K. M.         | Knight of Malta.                                  |            |                                                                    |

|           |                                                          |             |                                                                         |
|-----------|----------------------------------------------------------|-------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Messrs.   | Messieurs.                                               | P. C.       | Privy Counsellor.                                                       |
| Mich.     | Michael; Michael-<br>mas.                                | p. C.       | per cent.                                                               |
| Mightn't. | Might not.                                               | pd.         | paid.                                                                   |
| Min.      | Minister.                                                | Par.        | Parish.                                                                 |
| Mons.     | Monsieur.                                                | Parl.       | Parliament.                                                             |
| M. P.     | Member of Parlia-<br>ment.                               | Pat.        | Patriarch; Patriot.                                                     |
| Mr.       | Master, Mister.                                          | Pen.        | Penelope.                                                               |
| Mrs.      | Mistress.                                                | Pent.       | Pentecost.                                                              |
| Ms.       | Miss.                                                    | Pet.        | Peter; Petrarch.                                                        |
| Ms.       | Manuscript.                                              | Phil.       | Philip; Philipians;<br>Philosopher.                                     |
| Mss.      | Manuscripts.                                             | Philem.     | Philemon.                                                               |
| M. S.     | Memoriæ sacrum,<br>sacred to the Me-<br>mory.            | P. M.       | Post meridiem, in<br>the afternoon.                                     |
| <b>N.</b> | Note.                                                    | P. M. G.    | Professor of Music at<br>Gresham College.                               |
| Nat.      | Nathaniel; Nativity.                                     | P.          | Portion.                                                                |
| N. B.     | <i>Nota bene</i> , take no-<br>tice.                     | 'pothecary. | Apothecary.                                                             |
| Needn't.  | Need not.                                                | Pr.         | priest; primitive;<br>professor.                                        |
| Nem. Con. | <i>Nemine contradicente</i> ,<br>unanimously.            | 'pritheo.   | I pray thee.                                                            |
| Nic.      | Nicholas, Nicodemus                                      | Prof.       | Professor.                                                              |
| N. L.     | North Latitude.                                          | Pr. Th. Gr. | Professor of Theolo-<br>gy at Gresham Co-<br>llege.                     |
| Notts.    | Northamshire.                                            | P. S.       | Postscript.                                                             |
| No.       | Number.                                                  | Ps.         | Princess.                                                               |
| N. S.     | New Style.                                               | Pt.         | Present.                                                                |
| N't.      | Not.                                                     | Psal.       | Psalms; Psalmist.                                                       |
| N. T.     | New Testament.                                           | pwt.        | pennyweight.                                                            |
| Nov.      | November.                                                | <b>Q.</b>   | Queen; Question.                                                        |
| Num.      | Numbers.                                                 | q.          | <i>quadrans</i> ; farthing;<br>quasi.                                   |
| <b>O.</b> | Oliver; Old.                                             | Q. C.       | Queen's College.                                                        |
| o'.       | Of.                                                      | Q. d.       | quasi dicat, as much<br>as to say.                                      |
| Ob.       | Objection.                                               | Q. E. D.    | <i>quod erat demonst-<br/>randum</i> , which was to<br>be demonstrated. |
| Ob. Ob.   | <i>Obolus</i> , a half penny.                            | Q. l.       | <i>quantum libet</i> , as<br>much as you please.                        |
| Obj.      | Objection.                                               | Qr.         | Quarter.                                                                |
| O'er.     | Over.                                                    | Qs.         | <i>quantum sufficit</i> , a<br>sufficient quantity.                     |
| On't.     | On it.                                                   | Qy.         | Query.                                                                  |
| O. P.     | Out of Print; Old<br>Price.                              | <b>R.</b>   | Rex; Regina; <i>recipe</i> ,<br>take.                                   |
| O. S.     | Old Style.                                               | R. A.       | Royal Artillery.                                                        |
| O. T.     | Old Testament.                                           | 're.        | are.                                                                    |
| Oxon.     | Oxford.                                                  | Recd.       | Received.                                                               |
| Oz.       | Ounce.                                                   |             |                                                                         |
| <b>P.</b> | President; Parlia-<br>ment; Prince, pa-<br>ge; per; pro. |             |                                                                         |

|            |                                                                        |            |                                                                             |
|------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Red.       | Reduced.                                                               | Shan't.    | Shall not.                                                                  |
| Reg.       | Regius.                                                                | She'd.     | She had; She would.                                                         |
| Regimt.    | Regiment.                                                              | She'll.    | She will.                                                                   |
| Regst.     | Register.                                                              | She's.     | She is.                                                                     |
| Regt.      | Regent.                                                                | Shouldn't. | Should not.                                                                 |
| Reg. Prof. | Regius Professor.                                                      | 'size.     | assize.                                                                     |
| Rel.       | Relation; Religion;<br>Relative.                                       | S. N.      | Secundum naturam;<br>according to Na-<br>ture.                              |
| Ret.       | Return.                                                                | Sol.       | Solution.                                                                   |
| Rev.       | Revelation; Reve-<br>rend.                                             | S. P.      | Scotch Peer.                                                                |
| Revd.      | Reverend.                                                              | Sp.        | Spain; Spanish.                                                             |
| Rich.      | Richard.                                                               | Specially. | Especially.                                                                 |
| R. M.      | Royal Marines.                                                         | 'spy.      | espy.                                                                       |
| R. N.      | Royal Navy.                                                            | Squire.    | Esquire.                                                                    |
| Ro.        | Robert; Roger.                                                         | ss.        | <i>semmissis</i> , half a<br>pound.                                         |
| Robt.      | Robert.                                                                | 'st.       | hast.                                                                       |
| Rom.       | Romans.                                                                | S. T. P.   | <i>Sanctæ Theologiæ</i><br>Professor, Profes-<br>sor of Holy Divi-<br>nity. |
| R. P.      | <i>Respublica</i> , the repu-<br>blic.                                 | St.        | Saint; Street.                                                              |
| R. S. S.   | <i>Regiæ Societatis So-<br/>cius</i> , Fellow of the<br>Royal Society. | Steph.     | Stephen.                                                                    |
| 'rt.       | art.                                                                   | 'stead.    | Instead.                                                                    |
| Rt.        | Right.                                                                 | Sterl.     | Sterling.                                                                   |
| Rt. Hon.   | Right Honourable.                                                      | Swd.       | Sword.                                                                      |
| Rt. Revd.  | Right Reverend.                                                        | <b>T.</b>  | Thomas.                                                                     |
| Rt. wpful. | Right Worshipful.                                                      | 't.        | it.                                                                         |
| <b>S.</b>  | <i>Solidus</i> , shilling;<br>Shout; Saint.                            | t.         | to.                                                                         |
| 's.        | it; us.                                                                | Ta'en.     | taken.                                                                      |
| S. A.      | Secundum Artem, ac-<br>cording to the ru-<br>les of Art.               | Th.        | the.                                                                        |
| Shrop.     | Shropshire.                                                            | Th'art.    | thou art.                                                                   |
| Sam.       | Samuel.                                                                | That's.    | that is.                                                                    |
| S. C.      | <i>Senatus consultum</i> ,<br>decree of the se-<br>nate.               | The.       | Teophilus.                                                                  |
| Scan. Mag. | <i>Scandalum magna-<br/>tum</i> , Scandal of<br>the Peerage.           | There's.   | there is.                                                                   |
| 'scap't.   | escaped.                                                               | They'd.    | they had; they would.                                                       |
| Scil.      | <i>Scilicet</i> , to wit, na-<br>mely.                                 | They'll.   | they will.                                                                  |
| Sd.        | Said.                                                                  | They're.   | they are.                                                                   |
| S'ennight. | Seven nights, a week.                                                  | They've.   | they have.                                                                  |
| Sep.       | September.                                                             | Tho.       | Thomas.                                                                     |
| Serj.      | Serjeant.                                                              | Tho'.      | Though.                                                                     |
| Servt.     | Servant.                                                               | Thou'dst.  | thou hadst; thou<br>wouldst.                                                |
| Sh.        | Shire.                                                                 | Thou'lt.   | thou wilt.                                                                  |
|            |                                                                        | Thou'rt.   | thou art.                                                                   |
|            |                                                                        | Thou'st.   | thou hast.                                                                  |
|            |                                                                        | Thro'.     | Through.                                                                    |
|            |                                                                        | 'tis.      | it is.                                                                      |
|            |                                                                        | Tisn't.    | it is not.                                                                  |
|            |                                                                        | To; Tob.   | Tobias.                                                                     |

|              |                                             |            |                                  |
|--------------|---------------------------------------------|------------|----------------------------------|
| 'twant.      | it was not.                                 | Wp.        | Worship.                         |
| 'twas.       | it was.                                     | Wpful.     | Worshipful.                      |
| 'twas'n't.   | it was not.                                 |            |                                  |
| 'twere.      | it were.                                    | Xmas.      | Christmas.                       |
| 'twixt.      | betwixt.                                    | Xn. Xtian. | Christian.                       |
|              |                                             | Xt.        | Christ.                          |
| <b>Ult.</b>  | ultimo, last.                               | <b>Y'.</b> | ye.                              |
| <b>U. S.</b> | United States.                              | Ye.        | the.                             |
|              |                                             | Ym.        | them.                            |
| <b>V.</b>    | <i>Vide</i> , see; verse; virgin; viscount. | Yn.        | then.                            |
| <b>V. g.</b> | <i>verbi gratia</i> , for example.          | Ys.        | this.                            |
| <b>Viz.</b>  | <i>videlicet</i> , namely.                  | Yt.        | that.                            |
| <b>Vol.</b>  | Volume.                                     | You'd.     | you had; you would.              |
| <b>Vs.</b>   | Viscountess.                                | You'll.    | you will.                        |
|              |                                             | You're.    | you are.                         |
| <b>W.</b>    | West.                                       | You've.    | you have.                        |
| Wasn't.      | was not.                                    | Yu.        | thou.                            |
| We'd.        | we had; we would.                           | &.         | <i>et</i> , and.                 |
| We're.       | we are.                                     | &c.        | <i>et cætera</i> , and so on.    |
| Weren't.     | were not.                                   | 4to.       | Quarto, four leaves to a sheet.  |
| we've.       | we have.                                    | 8vo.       | Octavo, eight leaves to a sheet. |
| What's.      | what is.                                    | 12mo.      | Duodecimo, twelves.              |
| Where's.     | where is.                                   | 18mo.      | Octodecimo, eighteens.           |
| Who's.       | who is.                                     | 24mo.      | Vicesimo-quarto, twenty-fours.   |
| Will; Wm.    | William.                                    | 1st.       | first.                           |
| Wilts.       | Wiltshire.                                  | 2nd.       | second, &c.                      |
| Wi'me.       | with me.                                    |            |                                  |
| Won't.       | will not.                                   |            |                                  |
| Wou'dn't.    | would not.                                  |            |                                  |

# ÍNDICE ALFABÉTICO.

*Nota.* Las lecciones van señaladas con números romanos, y con árabes las reglas.

|                                        |                           |                                         |                     |
|----------------------------------------|---------------------------|-----------------------------------------|---------------------|
| A, art. ind. . . . .                   | 63-64-101-102-159-340     | Consonantes. . . . .                    | V                   |
| A, prep. . . . .                       | 310                       | Construccion latina. . . . .            | 202-516             |
| Abreviaciones. . . . .                 | 195                       | Could. . . . .                          | 215                 |
| Acento. . . . .                        | 49 á 59                   | Cuanto más. . . . .                     | 120                 |
| Acusativo. . . . .                     | 84-85-148-360 á 364       | Dativo. . . . .                         | 148-358-359 á 364   |
| Adjetivo. 92 á 96-65-369 á 371-386-387 |                           | De. . . . .                             | 86-303, obs. 23-279 |
| Adjetivo sustantivado. 124-125-374-    |                           | Deber. . . . .                          | 216-478             |
|                                        | [375]                     | Declinacion. . . . .                    | 62                  |
| Adverbios; lugar que ocupan, etcé-     |                           | Definido (artíc.). VIII-XIII-XV. 336    |                     |
|                                        | [ra 267 á 280, 528 á 547] |                                         | [á 340]             |
| Afirmacion. . . . .                    | 226-217                   | Deletreo. . . . .                       | 28-29               |
| Ago. . . . .                           | 274-538                   | Demostrativos. 161 á 165, 418 á 420     |                     |
| All (v. indefinidos).. . . . .         | 434                       | Demostrativos relativos. . . . .        | 431-432             |
| Any. . . . .                           | 97-183-435                | Did. . . . .                            | 246-217-108         |
| Artículos VIII XIII-XIV. 98 á 100,     |                           | Dias. . . . .                           | 137                 |
|                                        | [334 á 336]               | Dimension.. . . . .                     | 132                 |
| Aumentativos. . . . .                  | 110                       | Diminutivo. . . . .                     | 110                 |
| Auxiliares. XXV á XXVIII. 450-462      |                           | Distancia. . . . .                      | 132                 |
| Be. . . . .                            | XXVI-XXVIII. 132 á 134,   | Do.. . . . .                            | 217-245-480 á 482   |
|                                        | [457 á 460]               | E. . . . .                              | 3                   |
| Both. . . . .                          | obs. 44-438-439           | Each. . . . .                           | 181-440             |
| But. . . . .                           | 320                       | Edad.. . . . .                          | 134                 |
| By. . . . .                            | 295-226-380               | Either. . . . .                         | 442-443             |
| Cada. . . . .                          | 181-182                   | El. . . . .                             | 61                  |
| Cada vez más. . . . .                  | 121                       | Elipse. . . . .                         | 91-175-279-352      |
| Can. . . . .                           | 215-241-464-465           | Elipse (del artíc.). . . . .            | 337                 |
| Cardinales. . . . .                    | XVIII                     | Elipse (del relat.). . . . .            | 440                 |
| Casos. . . . .                         | 62, XII-XX                | En. . . . .                             | 289-301             |
| Clock. . . . .                         | 133                       | Enough. . . . .                         | 537                 |
| Colectivos. . . . .                    | 141-449-452               | Estilo bíblico. . . . .                 | 190                 |
| Como. . . . .                          | 104                       | Every. . . . .                          | 182-441             |
| Comparativos. XV-XVI-XVII. 274         |                           | Far. . . . .                            | 122-132-382         |
| Compuestos (nombres). . . . .          | 89                        | Femenino. . . . .                       | 76 á 83             |
| Compuestos (tiempos). . . . .          | 191-211                   | Former. . . . .                         | 163-417             |
| Compuestos (verbos). . . . .           | XLVI. 265                 | Futuro. . . . .                         | 188-189-213         |
| Complemento. . . . .                   | 142-147                   | Frasas. 141-203, 8.º 306-319 á 321-337, |                     |
| Concordancia. . . . .                  | 153-445 á 454             |                                         | [5.º 434-460]       |
| Condicional. . . . .                   | 224-288-189, obs. 47      | Género. . . . .                         | XI                  |
| Conjugacion. . . . .                   | XXV á XXX                 | Genitivo. . . . .                       | XII. 349 á 357      |
| Conjunciones.. . . . .                 | XLV. 175                  | Gerundio. 208-obs. 50-233 á 235-238-    |                     |
| Con mucho. . . . .                     | 118                       |                                         | [239-500 á 509]     |



**Haber.** . . . XXV-XXVII. 461-462  
**Hace, hacía, etc.** . . . . . 231  
**Hacer.** . . . . . 237-483 á 486  
**Have, v. haber.**  
**Here.** . . . . . 273-543  
**Hé aquí.** . . . . . 119  
**Horas.** . . . . . 133  
**If.** . . . . . obs. 51-321-219-223  
**Indefinidos.** 95-176-178 á 187-v. a-434  
 [á 444  
**Indicativo.** . . . . . 218  
**Infinitivo, obs.** 28-232-234 á 236-516  
 [á 520  
**Imperativo.** . . . . . 212-524-525  
**Imperfecto.** . . . . . obs. 40-221  
**Interjecciones.** . . . . . 325  
**Interposicion.** . . . . . 280  
**Interrogacion.** 69-108-109-191-210-211  
**Inversion, v. genitivo y obs.** 51-91  
**Irregulares (verbos).** XXXV á XLI.  
**Idem (plurales).** . . . . . X  
**It.** . . . . . 395  
**Know.** . . . . . 236-241  
**Latter.** . . . . . 163-417  
**Lenguas (nombres de).** . . . . . 166  
**Like.** . . . . . 386-387  
**Lista de verbos irregs.** . . . . . XL  
**Little.** . . . . . 110-444  
**Lo.** . . . . . 149-399-400-546  
**Make.** . . . . . 245-237-247  
**Mandar.** . . . . . 237-483 á 486  
**Más de.** . . . . . 119  
**Materia (adj. de).** . . . . . 88-372  
**May.** . . . . . 215-463  
**Medida.** . . . . . 132  
**Ménos.** . . . . . 115  
**Meses.** . . . . . 137  
**Modo (adv. de).** . . . . . 276 á 278  
**Modos (del v.).** . . . . . 515  
**Multiplicativos.** . . . . . 139  
**Múltiplos.** . . . . . 140  
**Must.** . . . . . 216-477  
**Near.** . . . . . 384  
**Negacion.** . . . . . 83-84-obs. 46-240  
**Neutros (verbos).** . . . . . 496  
**No.** . . . . . 184  
**Nombres adj. y sust.** . . . . . 379  
**Nom. de capacidad.** . . . . . 90  
**Numerales.** . . . . . XVIII. 135-388  
 [á 391  
**Objeto.** . . . . . 335  
**O'clock.** . . . . . obs. 33  
**Of.** . . . . . 86-303  
**Old.** . . . . . 134-385  
**One.** . . . . . 179-401 á 406  
**Oraciones.** . . . . . 334  
**Ordinales.** . . . . . 135-136-137-391  
**Ought.** . . . . . 216-479  
**Own.** . . . . . 154-410

**Participios.** 208-209-297-500 á 514  
**Part. pas.** . . . . . 510 á 514  
**Partitivo.** . . . . . 97  
**Pasiva.** . . . . . 226-494-495  
**Personales.** . . . . . XX-396-414-415  
**Perfecto (definido).** . . . . . 522-523  
**Patronímicos.** . . . . . 165-376 á 378  
**Plural.** . . . . . 66 á 68-X-366 á 368  
**Poder.** . . . . . 215  
**Poseedor.** . . . . . 86 á 88  
**Posesivos.** . . . . . XXI-407 á 410  
**Posposicion del sujeto.** . . . . . 145  
**Idem de la preposicion.** . . . . . 174  
**Potencial.** . . . . . 225  
**Precio.** . . . . . 131  
**Predicado.** . . . . . 331  
**Preposiciones.** . . . . . 174-XLIII-XLIV  
**Presente indic.** . . . . . 218-219-521  
**Pretérito.** . . . . . obs. 40  
**Pronombres.** . . . . . XX á XXIV  
**Pronominales (verbos).** . . . . . 227  
**Que.** . . . . . XXIII-324  
**Quebrados.** . . . . . 138  
**Quedar.** . . . . . obs. 58  
**Querer.** . . . . . 197-202-213  
**Recíprocos (verbos).** . . . . . 228  
**Reflexivos.** . . . . . 155-156-411 á 414  
**Reflexivos (verbos).** . . . . . 227-229  
**Régimen.** . . . . . 142-147  
**Régimen (de adjetivo).** . . . . . XLVII  
**Régimen (de verbos).** XLVIII-487  
 [á 493  
**Relativos.** . . . . . XXIII-421 á 429  
**Remain.** . . . . . 220  
**Repeticion de determinativos.** 100-162  
**Say.** . . . . . 242-243  
**Se (unipersonal).** . . . . . 179-406  
**Self.** . . . . . 155-411 á 413-416  
**Semana.** . . . . . 137  
**Semiauxiliares.** . . . . . XXX  
**Shall.** . . . . . 213-466 á 469  
**Should.** . . . . . 213-obs. 47  
**Sintáxis.** . . . . . 333  
**Solia.** . . . . . obs. 52  
**Some.** . . . . . 97  
**Some.** . . . . . 136-437  
**Soy yo, etc.** . . . . . 146  
**Speak.** . . . . . 244  
**Stay.** . . . . . 220  
**Subjuntivo.** 191-222-obs. 53-225-526-  
 [ 527  
**Such.** . . . . . 185-433  
**Sujeto.** 68-111-142-194-335-343 á 348-  
 [ 396 á 398  
**Superlativo.** . . . . . 116-117-119  
**Take.** . . . . . 251  
**Talk.** . . . . . 244  
**Tell.** . . . . . 242-243  
**Tener.** . . . . . 201



|                           |                   |                                  |                      |
|---------------------------|-------------------|----------------------------------|----------------------|
| Tener que. . . . .        | 192               | Tu. . . . .                      | 80-393               |
| That, v. demosts. .       | XXIII. 242 á 246  | Unipersonales. 230-231-497 á 499 |                      |
| The. . . . .              | VIII              | Vale más. . . . .                | 203, 7. <sup>o</sup> |
| There, they, etc. . . . . | XX                | Verbo regular. . . . .           | XXIX                 |
| Then. . . . .             | 547               | Will. . . . .                    | 213-470 á 476        |
| There. . . . .            | 203-273           | What, v. relativos. . . . .      | 426 á 429            |
| Thou. . . . .             | 393               | Where. . . . .                   | 273                  |
| Tiempos, empleo. . . . .  | XXXI              | Which, v. relativos.             |                      |
| Titulos. . . . .          | obs. 18-67-68-365 | Would. . . . .                   | 213 obs. 52          |
| Too. . . . .              | 545               | Ye. . . . .                      | 394                  |
| Todo. . . . .             | 186               | You. . . . .                     | 392                  |

FIN DEL ÍNDICE.

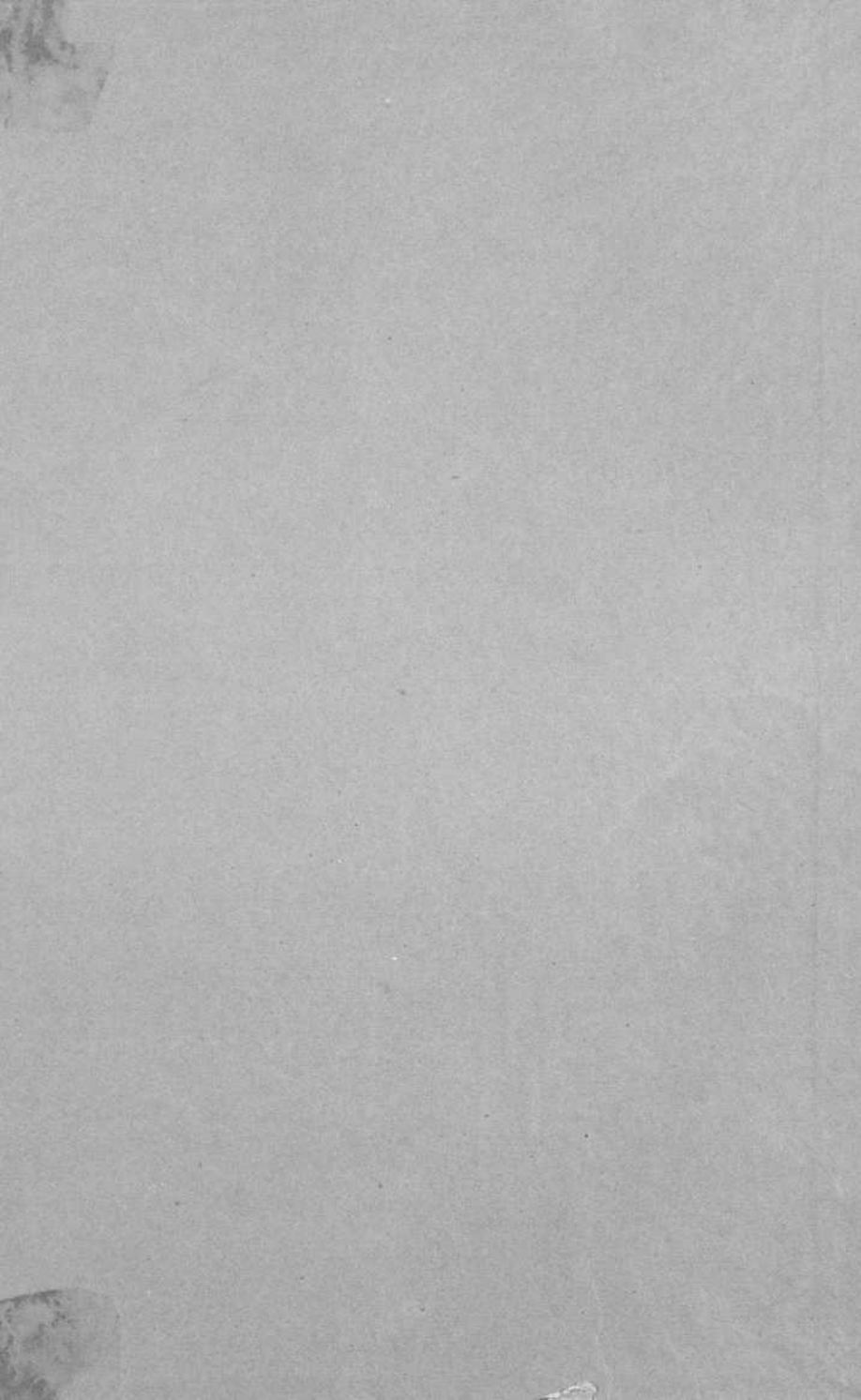
## ERRATAS.

| <u>Dice.</u> | <u>pág.</u> | <u>lin.</u> | <u>léase.</u> |
|--------------|-------------|-------------|---------------|
| too          | 17          | 9           | to            |
| vhat         | 25          | 30          | what          |
| conscience's | 45          | 16          | conscience'   |
| Ducht        | 92          | 12          | Dutch         |
| bysiest      | 101         | 6           | busiast       |











AYUSO  
GRAMATICA  
INGLESA

3.816